



GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 01

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1 - Reborn In Another World

Shi Yan woke up with a start. His head was throbbing in pain.

Once he had recovered slightly, he looked around and found himself in a dim stone cave which was as big as a basketball court. Piles of bones were scattered all over the place and a dozen corpses in strange clothes lay beside him. The clothes looked new and bright. These people had died recently.

“Where am I? Is this still the Bahamas?”

Shi Yan, 27 years old, was an extreme sports fanatic. His mother died early, while his father died of cancer in the prime of his life. This left him with such a large amount of wealth which he could never use in a lifetime.

He owned many things at an early age, which other people would pursue for their entire life.

Although young and rich, he had no future goals, which made him unhappy for a long time.

It wasn't until he was 17 that he had his first taste of extreme sports, which brought him unspeakable excitement. Given his large amount of wealth, he could undertake these sports as much as he liked, while ordinary people would not be able to afford this.

Those classic extreme sports, such as free-climbing, crocodile bungee, low-altitude parachuting, volcanic skateboarding, cliff diving and limbo skating, brought Shi Yan the greatest pleasure. He enjoyed the thrill of death that invigorated him and made his blood boil.

In ten years, he had tried all sorts of dangerous extreme sports which had built up Shi Yan's extraordinarily strong body. Hundreds of near-death experiences made his nerves as hard as steel. He once joked that he was the man who was the closest to the Grim Reaper.

The blue-hole exploration in the Bahamas was the most dangerous extreme sport he ever took part in. Some of these blue-holes were hundreds of meters deep, while some were complex like mazes. What's more, every little move could stir the sand up on the bottom of the cave. No matter how bright your light was, you wouldn't be able to see anything in front of you.

Even if you were an experienced diver, you had to wear a steel wire before you jumped into a blue-hole. The steel wire was the lifeline of explorers, the length of which decided the distance explorers could go. Moving beyond that distance was tantamount to suicide, because nobody could get out of that maze without a steel wire. According to the statistics from the Bahamas Maritime Institute, there was an average of 20 cave diving related deaths in the blue-hole, most of whom died from losing direction.

In this most dangerous extreme adventure, Shi Yan threw away his lifeline; the steel wire, entering into a suicidal adventure, and finally lost himself in the mysterious blue-hole.

And in the blue-hole, getting lost would mean certain death.

Shi Yan lay collapsed on the ice-cold rock ground, looking at his surroundings with the aid of a dim light coming from the cave walls. In his mind there appeared some memory fragments that didn't belong to him.

This was the memory of another Shi Yan...

That boy was 17 years old, and had the same name as himself. Attracted to antiques, that boy was obsessed with all kinds of historical remains; and because of an ancient map, he strived for half a year and eventually got here with his guards.

Feeling weak all over, Shi Yan frowned and slowly lifted himself up.

Just then, to his surprise, Shi Yan noticed that this body was not

his own, but that of the other Shi Yan who was only 17 years old.

He was dumbstruck for a moment.

"Did I die in the blue-hole? No! I am still alive, but in an unbelievable way!"

According to the other Shi Yan's memory, this place was called Grace Mainland, where there was no science or technology. No soldiers or wars.

Many dwellers here showed mysterious abilities not long after they were born. Some had the power of lightning, some could control plants, some could tunnel into the earth, some could use the chill of frost, and some were capable of communicating with demon beasts...

People with these various abilities would all become warriors, and their abilities were referred to as Martial Spirits.

Martial Spirits were something one was born with, and only very few could acquire a spirit through some stroke of luck. That is why this mainland was named Grace Mainland, as the warriors believed that Martial Spirits were a gift from God.

The majority of warriors weren't blessed with a Martial Spirit. Ordinary people could train hard to become a warrior, but there was no way to obtain a Martial Spirit through training. Martial Spirits were so powerful that they could benefit a warrior's training, increasing their combat potential significantly and granting them their own special abilities...

As a result, among warriors of same level, those who owned a Martial Spirit tended to be stronger, and achieved greater results. They did half the work with double the results.

There was a higher probability where one inherited the Martial Spirit.

In general, if one of the parents possessed a spirit, there was a high possibility that their kid would inherit the same spirit. If both

of the parents had a spirit, their child would have an even greater chance to inherit one of their spirits, either from the father or the mother.

There was only a one in a hundred chance that a couple, who both possessed a spirit, would give birth to an ordinary child.

Even rarer was the situation where the kid inherited both spirits from his parents. This inherent type of Martial Spirit was called Twin Spirits, and those type of lucky individuals which possessed them were also known as a 'Son of God'! It only happened to one in ten thousand couples who possessed different Spirits.

Shi Yan stood there and continued to put the foreign memories into order.

The original owner of this body came from the Shi Family. They possessed the Petrification Martial Spirit which could make the body as hard as a rock in battle, preventing damage to the body. As said fighter raised their cultivation, the Petrification Martial Spirit would become much stronger, to the point where they were almost indestructible.

Unfortunately, this guy didn't inherit the Petrification Martial Spirit, and was thus considered a poor successor for the martial arts that the Shi Family trained in. He also showed no interest in martial arts, and never learned anything about them either. All he had been devoted to was the exploration of historical remains.

Thanks to that ancient map, he had crawled through numerous heavy bushes and suffered a lot to arrive at this ancient cave.

"Wu wu wu.... hu hu hu.... "

Suddenly a devil-like cry came from the deep within the cave. Astonished, Shi Yan looked around to find a blood pool in the direction the voice came from.

The blood pool, about 10 square meters in size, was located in the middle of the cave, filled with a red fluid which look just like

blood. It was bubbling on the surface and was giving out horrifying shrieks and howls when the bubbles popped.

He realized that his escorts were driven insane by the howls, and they had started to kill each other. They all died in succession, while the 17 year old Shi Yan fainted.

It was all because of the blood pool!

Shi Yan stared at the blood pool with a rigid face. The howls slowly evoked the desire to kill within him, and made him want to kill anyone around him!

His head was still aching and the howls from the blood pool never stopped tormenting him, which made it hard for him to concentrate.

“....Must be the blood pool!”

His countless near-death experiences had steeled his mind and Shi Yan managed to calm down. Although his head still ached, he was able to stay focused, and walked towards the blood pool.

“Crack, crack, crack!”

Shi Yan looked dignified, while gray dry bones shattered under his feet. Judging by the pile of bones in the cave, he could only guess how many people had previously died in this place. The pool was the source of this evil. If he wanted to examine the secrets of the blood pool, he had to be prepared for death.

The howls were getting louder and louder as he got closer to the blood pool, which drilled into his head like sharp knives. The sound of slaughter contained in the howls almost destroyed his reasoning. He wouldn't have been able to bear this pain if it weren't for the extreme conditioning he faced for so many years that had slowly formed his spirit.

A heap of bones was situated beside the blood pool; some milky white bones also floated in the centre of the pool. This small blood pool was like the Shura blood sea, which had devoured an

uncountable number of lives.

Shi Yan had a feeling that his soul was summoned here because of this bizarre blood pool. He thought maybe this blood pool was his ticket back to the blue-hole in the Bahamas.

When he got closer to the blood pool, Shi Yan suddenly found something strange. The blood in the middle of the pool was scarlet and thick, but he couldn't detect the slightest whiff of blood.

On the contrary, the air around him was very fresh, even filled with an unexplainable fragrance. After careful inspection, he determined that the exotic fragrance actually came from the blood pool!

Shi Yan was full of curiosity, and thought that there must be something weird in the blood pool.

Again, he took a few steps forward. All of a sudden, an illusion of an endless sea, filled with scarlet red blood entered his mind. Countless corpses had accumulated to form islands. Some of the bones were like those of the cretaceous period dinosaurs and were as large as a small hill. There was a sound coming out from the blood sea, repeatedly screaming "Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Shi Yan tried to stay calm, but he couldn't. His heart started to beat faster and faster. A suffocating and terrifying pressure overwhelmed him. He felt a familiar touch knew that he had never been this close to death before.

He knew that the next step likely meant death!

However, those dreary adventures over the years hadn't terrified him, but instead had given him the utmost pleasure! Being face to face with death and surviving all perils was the true definition of extreme sports!

Step by step, one after the other!

Under the call of the blood pool, Shi Yan finally went up to the edge. He stared at the small blood pool; the insane side of his

character had been triggered. He roared, "Let's see what you have to offer, small blood pool!"

Then he jumped into the pool.

Chapter 2 - The Body Remodelled

As Shi Yan entered the blood pool, the blood was already up to his waist. Suddenly the blood in the pool started to move around as if it was alive, creeping up and down his body like vines. Seconds later, his whole body was covered with blood and tightly bound.

The crimson blood in the pool was like vicious snakes, untiringly wrapping around him until it formed a bloody cocoon.

A wave of intense pain spread throughout his body. Shi Yan felt as if his brain was being sliced into pieces. It felt even worse than death. It was as if tens of millions of tiny worms were drilling into his body and squirming around in his arms, legs, bones and viscera; eating away at his blood and flesh.

Shi Yan couldn't see anything. He wanted to scream, but couldn't make a sound, and neither could his body move.

A strange liquid started flowing slowly along his ribs like a small stream and tore open his veins wherever it passed. Then the liquid rapidly accelerated and divided into numerous strands, madly surging into the seven hundred and twenty meridians within his body.

The pain in his head grew stronger, Shi Yan felt some weird changes happening within his meridians[1]. He felt that his seven hundred and twenty meridians had enlarged significantly, as they interchanged between feeling scorching hot and biting cold. It felt extremely uncomfortable.

Soon after, his meridians turned into a little cyclones and were swirling madly.

A small amount of the liquid infused itself into every cyclone and was swiftly absorbed into them. After absorbing the liquid, the cyclones became enlarged and the process accelerated.

The intensity of the pain was almost unbearable. He felt that his

body was like a huge vessel, filled with the strange liquid. It was transforming him in ways he couldn't possibly comprehend.

"The liquid is transforming the meridians in my body..."

As this thought flashed through his mind, he fainted.

After a long time, Shi Yan awoke again.

The searing pain had disappeared and was replaced by a numb pain in his meridians. The liquid had returned to its origin and blood pool was tranquil.

Unexpectedly, he felt a warm sensation flowing through his body. After this sensation made a complete cycle, he felt extraordinary comfortable and his body had increased in strength.

"Profound Qi!"[2]

It dawned on him that it originated from the blood pool! This is the precious Qi which could only be obtained by warriors!

Within the memory of the other Shi Yan, he came to know that Profound Qi was the source of power for warriors. It was the foundation for warriors to support and release powerful martial arts.

Warriors were strictly ranked into ten grades, according to the strength of their Profound Qi. These were Elementary, Nascent, Human, Disaster, Earth, Nirvana, Sky, Spirit, True God and King God[3], with each grade containing three divisions.

Warriors were stronger than commoners. Profound Qi determines the status one would have. One could be called a warrior as long as he possessed the slightest amount of Profound Qi.

The vast majority of people couldn't obtain any Profound Qi throughout their entire life. Once obtained, they could strengthen it simply by training. Therefore, as long as a warrior possessed Qi,

they would always have a place to return to.

As the weak Profound Qi gently circulated throughout his body, Shi Yan came to his senses. Even if he couldn't go back to his world, he would survive here. Just then he noticed that the blood cocoon was still tightly wrapped around him.

Shi Yan spared no effort to struggle.

"HEYA!"

The blood cocoon cracked, and Shi Yan jumped out. Looking around, he found himself in that odd cave with the bones everywhere.

However, the blood pool had all dried up! Only a few pieces of broken bones were left!

A huge glittering blood cocoon, as thin as a wafer, towered in the centre of the empty pool. After Shi Yan glanced it, a small flame ignited at the bottom of the cocoon. The flame grew wildly and started to burn the bones. In a few minutes, the blood cocoon and the bones were all burnt to nothingness. A red light sparkled in the dry pool. There was a sparkling delicate ring quietly lying there.

Shi Yan stared at the strange ring for a while and assumed this ring must have some connection with the blood pool. After a few seconds of hesitation, he stepped in again, picked up the ring, and wore it on the ring finger of his left hand.

The ring conveyed a warmth that made Shi Yan feel strongly connected to it, as if the ring had become a part of his body. All at once, the weak Profound Qi in his body lost control and rushed towards the crimson ring. However, it was blocked by the skin of his finger and failed to enter the ring.

Shi Yan was shocked and tried to take off the ring immediately, only to find that the ring had been firmly placed onto his ring finger like an unmovable boulder. No matter how hard he tried, the ring wouldn't move an inch.

Now that the Profound Qi couldn't break the skin, it went back to normal after a while. The warmth and red gleam on the ring faded away as well.

The ring kept silent after that, thus Shi Yan started to analyze the situation.

“The blood in the pool must have purified my body”

The blood pool was ten square meters in size. Though not huge, the blood it contained would weigh at least a few tons. There was no way for an elephant to hold that much liquid inside its body!

Shi Yan turned pale. He subconsciously looked around and wanted to see how his body had changed. Had it swelled up?

He was incredibly anxious!

To his surprise, his body was only skin and bones! The clothes on him looked ridiculously large now. It was better to call him a withered mummy.

Shi Yan turned even paler. He never expected that this blood pool would not only fail to send him back to his previous world, but would make such inconceivable changes to him.

"Guru~ Guru~!!"

His stomach began rumbling and he suddenly felt extremely ravenous. He thought he could almost devour an elephant.

But there was nothing to eat in the cave. He glanced at the dry blood pool and was sad to find that he could no longer return to his world.

Shi Yan decided to find a weapon. He remembered those escorts had fought against each other with all kinds of weapons. However, after he examined them, he found that all of the weapons had rusted or been destroyed, none of which could be used anymore.

Crestfallen, Shi Yan could only leave empty-handed from the stone cave.

There was a heatwave in the moist air, with the sound of rippling water running in the distance. Ancient trees rose from the ground and blocked the sun like a giant umbrella. Only a few spots of sunlight could be seen on the wetland.

The Dark Forest! Shi Yan recalled this place with the help of the memory of his new body once he got out of the cave.

The Dark Forest covered a large area, where the trees were too thick to let the sunlight in. Thus the forest was damp and dark even in the daytime. That was the reason it was called the Dark Forest.

The Dark Forest was surrounded by the Merchant Union, the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire[4]. The Merchant Union was to the north of the forest, the God-blessed Empire in the south, and the Fire Empire in the west. Merchants from the three countries had to pass through the Dark Forest to trade.

Demon beasts always made their appearance in the Dark Forest, some of which even reached the 6th or 7th grade. As the trade caravans, soldiers, and warriors crossed the Dark Forest now and then, they knew that demon beasts of a high level only appear in special areas, and those of a low level were usually vagrants.

In general, trade caravans wouldn't come across high level demon beasts as long as they travelled along their usual routes. However, soldiers and warriors often adventured into the beast-infested areas looking for fights.

Great risk yields great benefits. Once a soldier killed a demon beast of the 6th or 7th level, he would immediately obtain a large amount of crystal coins. Each demon beast above level 6 had a monster core inside its body. This monster core was of great use to warriors, alchemists, and blacksmiths.

Apart from the monster core, its fur, fangs, bones, flesh, and

poison were all very valuable. The body of a high-grade demon beast was full of treasures.

This attracted bold soldiers and warriors to adventure into the Dark Forest. However, only a few people would achieve their goals and gain some benefits. The majority of them underestimated the wisdom and strength of a demon beast and thus, paid for it with their lives.

Shi Yan observed his surroundings for a while and heard the sound of water off in the distance, combined with the sound of women talking.

As Shi Yan was hesitating, he noticed a slight rustling sound from the bushes not far away, as if someone was fiddling with the leaves.

Shi Yan subconsciously looked towards that direction.

Through the thick bushes he saw a slim and graceful female body. The woman took off her white belt, squatted down, and showed her peach-shaped white bottom to him. Her snow-white hand was waving off annoying mosquitoes, as she was about to urinate...

The woman apparently didn't notice the eyes behind her, as she began to sing happily...

At first Shi Yan was stunned. However he was soon enchanted by that charming white butt and couldn't move his eyes.

"Pa!"

The woman suddenly clapped on her smooth, white left hip to kill a mosquito. The movement of her butt captivated Shi Yan.

Soon the woman finished urinating, re-buckled her belt, and muttered to herself, "Damn mosquitos..."

Unexpectedly, the woman turned around quickly. Her hands sent out a green arc of lightning which targeted all the surrounding

mosquitoes and killed them on the spot.

As she turned, Shi Yan finally saw her delicate appearance. She looked around 20 years old and five and half feet in height. Her face was glowing like a bright moon and she had a slim waist, full chest, and nice posture. She was wearing an exquisite lavender robe and silver soft armor which couldn't cover her fascinating figure as a legendary wild vixen.

Shi Yan focused on her hot body and thought to himself that she was more beautiful than the most popular superstars in his world.

Shi Yan couldn't stop his eyes from wandering. Suddenly, the woman looked directly into his eyes though the huge banana leaves.

The beauty's eyes flashed like lightning!

- [1] Meridan: the acupoints in one's body.
- [2] Profound Qi: important essence for a warrior.
- [3] Elementary, Nascent, Human, Disaster, Earth, Nirvana, Sky, Spirit, True God and King God: ten warriors ranks.
- [4] The Merchant Union, The Fire Empire and The God-blessed Empire: Three unions surrounding the Dark Forest.

Chapter 3 - First encounter

“Did you see me naked?” The beauty was apparently annoyed, but still dangerously charming.

“Yes, I never miss anything in front of my eyes.” Shi Yan nodded, not even bothering to deny it.

“Did you enjoy it?”

“Skin like porcelain, breasts like flowers. I’d say it was a feast for the eyes.” Shi Yan was strangely honest.

“You want to see some more?” Mo Yanyu was furious. She had never met such a shamelessness man.

“Well, if you wouldn’t mind taking your pants off, and don’t mind me staring at you, then yes, I would love to take a closer look.” Shi Yan smiled.

Apparently, Shi Yan didn’t want to pretend to be somebody he was not. Before he came to this world, every time he finished some extreme sport, he would have to find a woman for pleasure. Extreme sports was his biggest enthusiasm, while women were the most important spice in his life.

Mo Yanyu almost jumped up and down on her feet.

Who the hell is this guy?! What a bastard! Looks like a ghost and came out of nowhere. Every word he says is so shameless and he even seems to be proud of himself. If there is a competition for shameless bastards, he would be holding the crown.

Mo Yanyu had to take a deep breath before she began to talk again, while her beautiful breasts heaved up and down, a surge of rage bloomed in her chest. Surprisingly, she laughed, “Nice! Good! Very Good! ”

Hearing her say this, Shi Yan was even happier, and a horny smile appeared on his face. “Wow, it seems you don’t mind at all.

Well, please go ahead. I am really looking forward to it. I didn't pay much attention the last time, but this time I won't miss anything."

Mo Yanyu was completely shocked by Shi Yan's response. After she figured out he wasn't teasing, she couldn't control her rage anymore. "Won't miss anything my ass!"

Cursing, Mo Yanyu crossed her arms. Her hands were suddenly surrounded by shining green light. She spread her arms, shooting a green beam as sharp as lightning towards Shi Yan.

[Verdant Crescent Slash][1]

Within seconds, a green light flashed by. All things between the two were cut into pieces. With an unstoppable force, the green lightning struck Shi Yan's right in the chest.

"Boom!"

Shi Yan was lifted off the ground and tossed backwards. His skeleton-like body couldn't balance himself and fell hard into a thicket.

His chest was badly lacerated to the point where bones were visible. Feeling such a searing pain like that, he almost felt like dying.

Following the [Verdant Crescent Slash], the path between the two people was clear. Everything in between had been turned to dust.

Mo Yanyu made her move towards Shi Yan, her face as cold as ice.

Shi Yan finally came back to his senses. The intense pain in his chest made him realize that the girl in front of him wasn't easy to deal with.

In the world where he came from, even if he did the same thing, the worst case scenario the girl calling him an asshole or filing a

lawsuit against him; nothing like this.

He was still new to this place and was not used to the cruel way of life here.

Especially in the Dark Forest! Because this forest was not subject to any country's jurisdiction and also contained a large variety of demon beasts as well as precious and exotic herbs, warriors took the forest to be their training grounds, while mercenaries and merchants saw this place as a natural treasure trove.

There were no restriction and no rules in this forest. Due to the demon beasts and precious herbs here, robbery and murder were never strangers in this place. Betrayal and back-stabbing were also old friends within this forest. What an insane place!

The law of the jungle ruled the Dark Forest. The strong devour the weak.

This was exactly why he got hit so hard. He let his guard down, never expecting a girl like her would attempt to kill him for such a trivial reason.

Shi Yan's mind was suddenly crystal clear.

The weak remaining Profound Qi inside of him gradually gathered around his wounds on his chest and began to heal him. With his Profound Qi moving around his body, the searing pain lessened.

Footsteps on the wet ground indicated that Mo Yanyu was approaching. Shi Yan jumped up nervously, calmed his mind, and looked straight at the girl walking slowly towards him.

“You intended to kill me?”

“Still breathing?” Mo Yanyu frowned slightly, and stopped about 25 meters in front of Shi Yan. She took a curious but careful glance at him, and thought, “There is Profound Qi inside of him. A novice warrior. It seems I should have hit him harder...”

Shi Yan got serious this time, with no more teasing or joking. He focused his attention on the girl because he knew that she'd strike again soon.

He could feel his Qi was more concentrated than ever. This was a matter of life and death. He couldn't afford any mistakes. Shi Yan quickly adjusted himself and returned to the coolheaded state he always maintained during his extreme sports.

At that moment, he couldn't feel any pain in his chest. He could feel nothing but the weak Profound Qi flowing through his body and rushing through his veins, getting faster and faster. The next moment, a wild surge of energy erupted from the deepest corner of his body. The feeling was mind-blowing. He felt like his brain had exploded. After that, the whole world suddenly became silent.

“Badump! Badump!”

Shi Yan could hear his own heartbeat loud and clear. With his heartbeat racing, the cells throughout his whole body were activated. Every inch of his body became so sensitive and he could feel everything taking place around him. He could even feel the slightest tremor on his skin when a little light breeze brushed against his body.

The strangest energy started to spread from every pore of his body, pouring into his veins and bones. It felt like electricity speeding throughout his entire vascular system.

After an acute pain in Shi Yan's eyes, the world in front of him became incredibly colorful and vivid. He was able to see the tiniest details on every leaf. He looked at the woman who was a combination of extreme beauty and cruelty, feeling her Profound Qi flowing underneath her skin in a beautiful rhythm in her veins.

The forest was still the same. But to his eyes, it was like a completely different world out there.

Before Shi Yan could enjoy this wonderful feeling some more, he

suddenly sensed that the Profound Qi inside the woman's body was flowing at double the rate as before.

Shi Yan could even feel his nerves trembling.

Subconsciously, he pushed his left foot off the ground with all the force he had. With a strong power rushing out of his foot, Shi Yan quickly moved away from where he was standing.

Another green blaze in the shape of a dagger almost left a mark on him.

The green lightning cut everything by his side with a horrifying force. This time the attack was much more precise and stronger than the previous strike.

Shi Yan couldn't help sweating; maybe it was nervousness, maybe it was excitement.

This was the first time that Shi Yan had experienced the type of fight that could kill within seconds. How cool was that! This was truly a battle of life and death. He enjoyed this more than any kind of extreme sports.

In the old world where he came from, there were all kinds of extreme sports available. However, the law, moral codes, and rational thinking were like a huge cage, keeping him prisoner. He couldn't do things without boundaries, he couldn't indulge in his passions, couldn't touch the wires of law and moral codes.

But here, in this world where only the powerful ruled, nothing was prohibited. Nothing was impossible!

Shi Yan suddenly felt excitement growing inside of him. He felt this might be the right place for him. This might just be his paradise!

...

"Um..." Mo Yanyu couldn't hide her surprise. She didn't expect Shi Yan to evade this attack. She was so sure that he would be torn

into pieces in this strike and didn't prepare for Plan B.

Hearing her voice, Shi Yan who was still enjoying his survival had just now come back to his senses.

Without hesitation, Shi Yan jumped up like an agile monkey. He grabbed a vine on a tree and swung himself forward. He then grabbed another vine with lightning speed, flew forward, and reached for the next vine. In a series of smooth movements, he managed to approach Mo Yanyu within seconds.

When he was bouldering, the vines on the mountain were indeed a handy tool. For an extreme sports enthusiast like Shi Yan, swinging with the support of vines was a natural instinct.

Like a wild monkey, Shi Yan was moved quickly through all the vines and trees. He didn't follow a specific pattern, but managed to approach Mo Yanyu.

Mo Yanyu had scorn on her face, and shot more and more green light daggers into the sky, destroying every vine in the direction of Shi Yan. However, he was able to escape her attacks by a hair's breadth every time and quickly grasped onto another vine.

The truth was, Shi Yan could already sense the movement of Qi in Mo Yanyu's body. He everything was crystal clear to him now. When he saw a surge of Profound Qi underneath her skin, he would quickly move in another direction.

During his movements, Shi Yan started to feel that the blood in the pool had changed him somehow. He was not that strong before, but now, not only did the high-intensity movements not tear him apart, they also made him even more sensitive and agile than ever before. His senses became sharper and his body became stronger and more flexible.

“Shwish!”

With a loud noise, a sharp green lightning flew towards him, tearing apart dozens of vines behind him. Apparently, Mo Yanyu

almost exhausted her Profound Qi after such strong attack.

“This is my chance!”

Shi Yan suddenly jumped down from the trees, taking Mo Yanyu in his arms like a greedy eagle. Before she could gather enough Profound Qi to strike back, Shi Yan was already on top of her.

“Boom!” Mo Yanyu fell on the ground with Shi Yan on top of her, tightly bringing her body under his control.

Face to face, Shi Yan could feel her soft body more closely. Her plump breasts felt so delicious and fragrant, he squeezed the buns up close to his burning chest.

Shi Yan felt pleasure that was beyond any words, secretly appreciating the woman's body. What a piece of art! Unlike the ordinary women from his old world who looked sexy and plump on the outside, they were nothing without bras.

“Let go of me!” Mo Yanyu expressed her disgust but didn't really struggle. She cursed, “Fucking let go of me! If you ever want to see the sunlight again! ”

“Bitch!” Shi Yan sneered, “You almost killed me. Why should I let you go so easily?”

Mo Yanyu suddenly became nervous. Before she could do anything, she felt the kiss of this creep on her beautiful and sacred face. At the same time, the bastard's hands didn't rest either. Shi Yan was touching her ass and began to rub it in an insatiable way.

Mo Yanyu flew into a rage, the Martial Spirit inside of her exploded with a terrifying power.

Shi Yan who was still enjoying this wonderful feast suddenly felt a horrible electric current flowing through her. He was instantly electrocuted, as if he had been struck by a taser. Shi Yan couldn't feel his own body any more, nor could he gather any Qi inside his body.

Mo Yanyu pushed Shi Yan away, her eyes were cruel and icy. She glanced at Shi Yan who was lying on the ground for a while, and cursed again:

“I won’t let you die that easily you bastard!”

Mo Yanyu picked Shi Yan up like a feather, passing through the forest towards the crowd with a cold face.

[1]This is the name of the skill Mo Yanyu uses. She doesn’t say it aloud like some anime character.

Chapter 4 - Guinea Pig

Tall trees formed a huge umbrella above a small river, beside which was a dragon drinking water, carrying several bags.

Ten strong, tall warriors were dining and talking lewdly near the dragon. Behind the dragon, a group of malnourished men were crouching and having a coarse meal. They were all wearing chains, their eyes dim.

In a sedan chair on the dragon, a poker-faced thin old man was sitting motionlessly. He was wearing a black robe embroidered with five white cauldrons on his chest. He kept staring at the warriors and the chained men. Every warrior was frightened and turned silent once the old man looked upon them viciously.

“Are you done? Then move your ass and walk!” Mo Yanyu showed up from the bush with a rigid face, lifting Shi Yan up in her hand.

The warriors wrapped up their unfinished meal and were embarrassed, “Yeah, we’re done. We’re done.”

Mo Yanyu went up to the old man and showed an unwillingly smile, “Master Karu, have you finished your meal?”

The old man nodded coldly and murmured, “Miss Mo, it will still take 3 months to get to the Merchant Union. However, we have only 16 medicine slaves left. I’m afraid we won’t make it...”

“Do not worry, Master Karu. We will catch more medicine slaves for you.” Mo Yanyu threw Shi Yan onto the ground and laughed, “Look, a new slave!”

“Hmm.” Karu nodded as he examined Shi Yan with his evil eyes. “Too skinny! He won’t even survive a week!” He frowned.

“Yes I know. But, he has Profound Qi in him...” Mo Yanyu explained.

“He is a warrior?” Apparently Karu was now interested, and his eyes lit up.

“Definitely!” Mo Yanyu confirmed.

“That is good.” Master Karu smirked. He continued to focus his eyes on Shi Yan. After quite a while, he nodded slowly, “Very good. Miss Mo, feed him. I want him to be strong first. A severely injured warrior cannot bear what I am going to do. It would be a total waste if he died through the course of my medicine when he is still too weak.”

“Do not worry Master.” Mo Yanyu wore her rigid face and scolded, “Johnson! What are you doing there! Shackle this man as soon as possible!”

“Yes, ma'am!” This bald, fat man appeared to be six foot six. He took out a new set of shackles from the bags on the dragon and swiftly shackled Shi Yan’s hands and feet.

This giant wore heavy armor and his robust muscles looked extremely powerful. The heavy dark armor seemed as light like a feather and didn’t affect him whatsoever while he was moving.

“Johnson, take care of him! And always keep an eye on him!” Mo Yanyu glared at Shi Yan in hatred, and rushed to the head of their caravan, not bothering to waste one more second on him.

“I can handle it, Miss! I’m the best at it!” The bald man chuckled cunningly and reassured her, punching his chest.

Shi Yan observed silently despite his body hurting all over.

He knew it would be useless to say anything at the moment. In this dog-eat-dog world, morals was the last thing one should believe in. He will receive no pity and would only become a skeleton and if he didn’t adapt to this world soon.

As the Profound Qi flowed slowly within him for a while, Shi Yan felt less pain. However, the newly added shackles were like a mountain on his exposed and feeble body, making every step much

harder.

“Bang!”

Shi Yan suddenly got lashed by a whip, which was so fast and powerful that his back was cracked open and ached badly. He turned around to see the big man Johnson smirking with a whip in his hand.

“Damn medicine slave! Move faster! Or do you want one more lash, huh?” He laughed with an evil smirk on his face.

Shi Yan gazed at him for a few seconds and didn’t reply. He staggered towards the medicine slave in front of him, before Johnson could lift his whip again. Every step consumed a lot of energy.

After Shi Yan moved forward, Johnson’s smirk disappeared and was replaced by a weird expression...

Along the way, many stumbling slaves had been ‘taken care of’ by Big Johnson, who was famed for his brutality. Two slaves were even beaten to death by him before Master Karu could even test his medicine on them. All of the medicine slaves looked at him with either fear or hatred.

However, this man didn’t show the slightest hint of fear or hatred. There was only an incredible silence, cold and solemn.

This man didn’t seem to realize his status as a prisoner. Maybe he didn’t clearly understand the situation.

The solemn eyes gave Johnson the illusion that he was prey. This made him uncomfortable. However, since Shi Yan had begun obediently marching, Johnson couldn’t find a reason to make a fuss. He swore to himself that he would force Shi Yan to be frightened of him.

Big Johnson enjoyed the sight of others’ frightened eyes so much. He found an interesting pleasure in being in control of the life of another.

In the following days, Shi Yan stayed mute and obedient. He obeyed every order that was given by Johnson without any resistance. No change of temper, no interest in anything. Shi Yan was different from the other medicine slaves.

Even Johnson, who was always waiting for a chance to give him a lesson, couldn't find any excuse to trick him. Shi Yan was unbelievably cooperative. Johnson was confused.

Shi Yan only talked when he asked for food, which was under Master Karu's permission.

In no time, the warriors noticed that Shi Yan had a big appetite and he enjoyed the inferior food. He ate what seven medicine slaves ate as a first meal. And day by day, he ate more and more!

The warriors couldn't believe their eyes. How could that weak skinny body contain so much food! At the beginning they worried that he couldn't digest it but it soon turned out to be unnecessary.

It was clear that Shi Yan had not only digested the inferior food, but also grown much stronger.

The changes in Shi Yan's body pleased Master Karu significantly. This cunning old man allowed Shi Yan to eat as much as he wanted.

As Shi Yan grew stronger day by day, Johnson gradually became worried. Every time he looked into Shi Yan's solemn eyes, Johnson got the premonition that Shi Yan would be a calamity in the future. But still, he couldn't go against Master Karu's order and had to supply Shi Yan with enough food.

Nevertheless, Johnson knew who Master Karu was and what he could do. Thus he was relieved, and hoped Master Karu would take action soon.

After eating enough for 12 people, Shi Yan put down his bowl, licked the last grain of rice from the corner of his mouth, and closed his eyes, neglecting the dumbstruck medicine slaves beside

him.

That huge amount of food was soon digested in his body, which was like a bottomless pit. It was also like a precise machine that transformed the food into nutrition, supplying his blood, bones, tendons, muscles and inner organs, strengthening his weak body secretly.

The injury on his chest had long since recovered. It took only a day and a half and didn't leave a scar. He felt like was a different man.

Only Shi Yan knew precisely what had happened to his own body in such short time. He could sense the transformations in occurring within himself every second!

While the nutrition from the food strengthened his body, the weak Profound Qi inside him had also risen by a level during its continuous circulation.

Shi Yan could feel a great strength now and the heavy shackles didn't weigh him down anymore!

As he concentrated, he could tell the Qi was flowing from his Dantian, up to the Governor Vessel, down the Reception Vessel, and then balancing the water and fire in the heart and kidney. After it completed a Small Circulation, his Profound Qi grew stronger.

Thanks to a little knowledge of Qigong, Shi Yan knew the difference between a Small Circulation and a Big Circulation. A Small Circulation only included the Governor and the Reception Vessels, while a Big Circulation contained the twelve Channels and the other six vessels.

Since there were only two vessels; the Governor and the Reception Vessels, which were open among his twelve Channels and eight vessels, he could only complete a Small Circulation. From the other Shi Yan's memory, he concluded that only

warriors of the Elementary level could open all the channels and vessels to conduct a Big Circulation.

Shi Yan carried on, for he believed that as long as the Profound Qi residing in him was strong enough, he would open his Channels and Vessels sooner or later!

“One more death! Two slaves have died from the medicinal trials in just six days!”

“I saw that! That guy had already grown weak before he died. Terrible! Hideous!”

“It’s better to commit suicide than die that way! We will die that way too! There is no hope in sight!”

“No suicide, no! Our family won’t get a single blue crystal coin if we commit suicide! Alas! Endure it. We will be free if we survive half a year, and get some money. We must endure until we make it back to our wives and kids!”

Hearing this, all the medicine slaves went silent. They decided not to commit suicide and made up their minds to carry on.

Chapter 5 - Lightning Martial Spirit

Shi Yan opened his eyes, staring at the medicine slaves at a distance.

Those slaves mostly came from poor families. In order to survive, they had no choice but to sign the contract with Mo Yanyu, selling themselves as slaves. If they were lucky enough to survive the first six months, not only could they regain their freedom, but they would also get paid 200 Purple Crystal Coins[1]. If they were unlucky and died from medicinal trials, their family would receive the money instead.

In the Grace Mainland, one Black Crystal Coin was equal to 100 Purple Crystal Coins, which equaled 10 thousand Blue Crystal Coins. The annual income of an average citizen was merely 5-6 Purple Crystal Coins. 200 Purple Crystal Coins were almost the savings for 40 years of work in another job.

Upon signing the contract, their family would receive 50 Purple Crystal Coins on the spot, with the rest paid within the next six months. If something unfortunate happened, their family would be compensated regardless. It might take someone's entire life to make 200 Purple Crystal Coins. But for the medicine slaves, all it takes is six months of painful suffering. It was all worth it. At least that was what they thought...

However, when they signed the contract, it never occurred to them that the medicinal trials would be so cruel and tormenting. Every few days, some of them would drop dead in the most horrible way. This made them so terrified that they began to make their own secret plans.

But a contract was a contract. Once they signed their name on it, there was no way out. This meant, for the next six months, the Mo family[2] owned their lives. Any attempt to disobey the contract, or escape from the Mo family, would be a death sentenced.

There is no such thing as a free lunch. It was already too late for them to recognise the danger of these medicinal trials. They had no choice but to accept all the pain as well as their miserable fate.

Shi Yan knew that none of these slaves would make it. Sooner or later, they were going to die. Maybe tomorrow, or maybe later. He knew he was powerless to change all this. Therefore, he avoided contact with these slaves, thus avoiding any hurtful feelings when they died.

Shi Yan frowned as he took a quick glimpse at Master Karu sitting in the sedan atop the ground dragon, trying his best not to be discovered.

There were five White Medicine Bottles embroidered on Master Karu's chest, which meant that he was a Level-5 Mortality alchemist. In the Grace Mainland, an alchemist was even more distinguished and rare than a Warrior.

Every alchemist had to be a Warrior. The medicine they refined could help enhance a warrior's capability. There were special pills refined by a small number of extraordinary alchemists which could even enhance a warrior's Martial Spirit.

Compared to the 10 levels among warriors, the ranking of alchemists were based on their expertise in the field of medicine. There were five categories of alchemists in the Grace Mainland; Mortality, Mystery, Soul, Royalty, and Divinity[3]. Under each category, there were seven sub-ranks.

Every alchemist would carry a special token corresponding to his ranking. Alchemists of the Mortality Category would be embroidered with White Medicine Bottles on their chests. Mystery Category - Red Flames; Soul Category - Medicinal Herbs; Royalty Category - Wonder Pills; and Divinity Category - Medicinal Cauldron. There were five White Medicine Bottles on Master Karu's chest, so it was clear that he had the expertise of a Level-5 Mortality alchemist.

Since the medicine provided by alchemists could enhance the Profound Qi inside a Warrior, this small group of people held a prestigious status among all warriors. Due to the low number of alchemists, every group were desperate to hire a good alchemist, which made the alchemists even more revered and exceptional.

As a Level-5 Mortality alchemist, Master Karu was invited by Mo Yanyu from Medicine Valley within the God-blessed Empire. Like the Shi family, the Mo family were also one of the five distinguished families of the Merchant Union. The Mo family were famous for their own Martial Spirit which had the power of lightning. A lot of people from the Mo family were naturally born with the Lightning Martial Spirit, which would improve with the growth of their own skills.

Mo Yanyu was from the youngest generation of warriors born with the Lightning Martial Spirit from the Mo family.

The Mo family were working in the medicine business within the Merchant Union. They never stopped searching for great alchemists for their own use, no matter where these alchemists came from. However, most alchemists had quirky personalities and had weird demands. Above all, they were the haughtiest people on Earth and held very high opinions of themselves. Therefore, very few of them would accept the influence of powerful families like the Mo family, and thus the Mo family had tasted more failure than success when recruiting these alchemists.

Although Master Karu was merely a Level-5 Mortality alchemist, the Mo family had exhausted every means to convince him. Nobody knew what Mo Yanyu had offered this time in order to persuade Master Karu to leave Medicine Valley and come and work for them.

However, Master Karu was not the type of person who was fond of the orthodox. He was more interested in crooked ways of applying his skills to make poisons. However, the production of the finest poisons required a huge amount of medicinal trials, and

the subject must be a living, breathing human. This was why these medicine slaves existed.

“Let’s move!” With Mo Yanyu’s order from the distance, the resting warriors all stood up and got ready for the march ahead. The medicine slaves resting on the road side also quickly got up, for fear of the punishment they would face if they didn’t manage to keep up.

Shi Yan stood up, still and silent. He took a sniff at the woman who had the appearance of an angel but the heart of a scorpion. He had no choice but to follow the group before him obediently.

In the Merchant Union, the relationship between the Mo family and the Shi family was not that smooth. The fifth uncle of Mo Yanyu was killed by Shi Yang three years ago due to a dispute over the mining rights at a mountain. After that, the Mo family started a relentless vendetta against the Shi family, causing the death of dozens of Shi family members. With this kind of hatred rooted between these two families, there were endless conflicts and fights going on.

Shi Yan understood that death would be his fate if his true identity was ever discovered.

But luckily the original owner of his body kept a low profile. He was not endowed with a Martial Spirit, didn’t take much interest in the martial fights, and barely showed up to any martial activities organized by the Merchant Union. Therefore, there was no way that Mo Yanyu would ever recognize him. Otherwise, Shi Yan wouldn’t have been this lucky.

As night fell, the moon was like a silver plate floating in the dark sky, accompanied by several sparkling stars.

The Mo family troop was camping and resting by the river. The ground dragon was resting quietly with only the sound of its heavy breathing permeating the air. The Mo family warriors were gorging themselves on dried meat and laughing aloud in a

perverted way, exchanging gossip about some notorious whores in a Merchant Union's brothel.

When Mo Yanyu was not looking, a few audacious warriors would gaze at her sexy body in secret, lusting after her body. They knew that for people of their level, Mo Yanyu was way out of their league. All they could do was fantasize.

Shi Yan sat down in silence. When he was ready to circulate the Profound Qi inside his body, he noticed Mo Yanyu and Master Karu coming towards him from the front of the troops.

"Shit!" Shi Yan felt that something bad was going to happen. His face suddenly looked like hell.

"The Gut Cutting poison is way too strong for normal people. It has already killed six slaves within the past two days. I guess only Warriors can sustain its influence. That boy looks better than before, with much of his Profound Qi recovered, he can be our new lab rat." Master Karu said with a viperous smile on his face and a bowl of some black sticky liquid in his left hand.

"Well, Master Karu, please. Help yourself. He is all yours. Don't show any mercy. I want him to die as miserably as possible." Mo Yanyu also laughed.

"Haha, no problem. Miss Mo, your wish is my command. I promise you that there is no way he will die easy. As you have seen in the previous trials of the Gut Cutting poison, all the slaves died with their flesh and skin slowly decaying off their bones bit by bit. This boy looks tough. The stronger the subject is, the longer and more painful this decaying process will be. Just wait for the grand show and enjoy!" Master Karu burst into wild laughter, as if Shi Yan were not standing right in front of him.

"That is perfect!" Mo Yanyu smiled in consent. Her eyes were obviously shining with excitement, her hatred of Shi Yan churning in her gut.

It was only a matter of time before the two of them finally arrived in front of Shi Yan. Master Karu didn't even bother to explain. He handed the bowl of black sticky liquid to Shi Yan and ordered with a cold voice, "You, finish this!"

While Mo Yanyu took out her left hand, generating a snake of electric power circling around her fingers; her skin like porcelain and the electric power sparking like lightning. This was the perfect combination of the Lightning Martial Spirit and Profound Qi. The energy was like a catalyst in the air with sound of small explosions all around.

"Woo-hoo!" Johnson sneered from behind, "Boy! If you ever dare to resist, you know what's gonna happen to you, right?"

Master Karu couldn't contain his excitement. He clapped his hands, and shouted, "Hey boy, the Gut Cutting Medicine is lots of fun. You are going to decay from the inside, little by little..."

The whole time, Mo Yanyu was staring at Shi Yan with an icy expression on her face. She assumed that he would say no. Her plan was, as soon as Shi Yan showed any disobedience, she would kick his ass with the electric sparks on her fingers, showing him who was the boss here.

For days, every time she looked back on the humiliation she received from this man, she couldn't help but rage inside. Even her fiancée wouldn't dare to do that to her. Who the hell was this guy? How dare he?! She would never forgive this guy.

"Sure. I'll do it." Shi Yan said dismissively. He took the bowl of nasty medicine and drank up with no hesitation.

[1] Purple Crystal Coins: money in the Grace Mainland.

[2] The Mo Family: one of the biggest and most powerful families in the Grace Mainland, famous for their Lightning Martial Spirits.

[3] Mortality, Mystery, Soul, Royalty, and Divinity: 5 categories of alchemists.

Chapter 6 - Immortal Martial Spirit

As the Gut Cutting poison went down into his stomach, Shi Yan could feel a dull pain spreading inside. Then his gut and stomach was corroded little by little as if he drank sulphuric acid, and the pain inside his body gradually grew stronger.

“This Gut Cutting poison is potent. It doesn’t show its effects all at once, but releases its power gradually. A normal person will be corroded by it in two to three days and they will die with a decayed body.” Karu narrowed his eyes and added, “No hurry, let’s wait for a day and see.”

“Good. We will check on him at this time tomorrow night.” Mo Yanyu nodded. She glanced at Shi Yan in satisfaction, and left with Karu happily.

“Hehe. Fellow, your good days have come to an end!” Johnson laughed loudly, showing his teeth. He suddenly felt quite relaxed when he thought that Shi Yan would die in no time, and a heavy burden dropped from his heart.

Shi Yan lowered his head with an icy glint in his eyes.

The Gut Cutting poison began to take effect in his stomach and gut, which Shi Yan could sense clearly. It felt like tens of millions of ants were nibbling at his stomach and gut in order to compete for territory.

The Profound Qi in the lower part of his belly circulated quickly into the gut and stomach. It was like a gentle stream quietly washing away the drug under Shi Yan’s control. Wherever the Profound Qi went, it made the drug effects milder, thus Shi Yan became a little relieved.

As a moist breeze blew softly, Shi Yan took a large deep breath. He sat down where he was, not paying any attention to Johnson beside him, and concentrated his mind to guide the Profound Qi to

fight against the drug.

The Profound Qi, which had been growing much stronger recently, became Shi Yan's life-saver. It kept moving in his stomach and guts. Every time it made a circle, the effects of the drug was softened a little, and his body was not corroded any faster.

At that moment, Shi Yan realized what benefits Profound Qi could bring, and was determined to train hard to be a top warrior with strong Profound Qi.

If Profound Qi could bring such great benefits, how much more powerful would a god-blessed Martial Spirit be. If I could possess Martial Spirit I could definitely be much stronger and would feel less pain.

For a moment, Shi Yan regretted that the owner of his body didn't inherit the Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi Family, or he could have plucked up his courage and fought against Mo Yanyu. Maybe he could have won against her Lightning with Petrification and escaped without being made into a guinea pig.

Time passed by and soon it was late at night, the moonlight bathing the land in its silver light. The warriors became quiet since it was an exhausting day of marching. They found a comfortable place and sat down respectively, training their Profound Qi in order to break through the limits of their bodies and entering higher levels and gaining stronger power.

The medicine slaves looked up at the dark sky one by one. In the silent night, they tended to become homesick and scared. They would be filled with hopelessness whenever they thought about the fact that they could be a dead body the following day after the next medicinal trial.

Under the pale moonlight, Shi Yan sat cross-legged on the ground, a dignified expression appearing on his serene face.

After five hours of circulation, the Profound Qi had prevented the gut cutting medicine from rapidly diffusing. Nonetheless, unknowingly, he realized that his Profound Qi had been consumed by one third, and was continuously being depleted.

But the Gut Cutting poison didn't seem to fade, on the contrary, it was still quite potent.

The gut cutting medicine was waiting for the Profound Qi to run up and it could fight back.

Shi Yan suddenly felt a severe cold shiver all over his body.

Once his Profound Qi had dried up, he would have nothing to protect himself with. Then, like most commoners, his body would start decaying from the inside out. He couldn't do anything about it!

He could do nothing!

But in this situation, he couldn't gain more Profound Qi by training. Once he took away the Profound Qi in his stomach and gut, the Gut Cutting poison would gain strength and made him die faster.

Thus he could do nothing but wait for it to happen, even if it meant death.

Two more hours passed by.

The effects of the Gut Cutting poison didn't weaken, but increased continuously. He could clearly feel his Profound Qi was depleting faster and faster!

He felt that he was getting closer to death's door...

Once his Profound Qi ran out, his insides would corrode, but he wouldn't die quickly. The corrosion would spread throughout his body, and in five or six days, he would decay and die, just like every other medicine slave.

Shi Yan was unyielding. With a cold glare, he stared at Mo Yanyu

who was sitting on an old tree far away.

Under the bright moonlight, Mo Yanyu sat upright on a thick tree with a serene face. Her skin was like frost, while her long hair swayed with the wind. A spirit in the dark night! She didn't notice Shi Yan's cold eyes as she was whole-hearted training and nourishing the vessel which contained her Lightning Martial Spirit with Profound Qi.

Master Karu was at the end of the troops. He stood against another ancient tree and was carefully reading a book about poison in his right hand, his left hand in his cuff.

Now and then, he looked in the direction of Shi Yan with a slippery smirk in the corner of his mouth.

"I can't let it go like this." Shi Yan thought with knitted brows. He operated the Profound Qi and at the same time pondered on the ways to solve his dilemma.

If it went on like this, his Profound Qi would dry up before dawn and he would die without any doubt! He couldn't change anything even if he ran away, for the drug was in his body. The only solution was Master Karu!

He invented the Gut Cutting poison, thus he must have the cure for it. He could change his destiny of a decaying death only by getting that cure from Master Karu. Yet Master Karu was not only an alchemist, but also a Warrior of the Nascent realm. It was suicide if he tried to grab the cure from him.

Shi Yan observed him for a while. He found that although Master Karu was reading, he was also looking in his direction every now and then. Apparently, he was not against taking precautions. He might have even figured out what Shi Yan would do and was waiting for him to take action.

Several ideas flashed through his mind. Shi Yan knew that there was almost no possibility that he could succeed. Yet he had to turn

to Master Karu and take action soon. Because it would become impossible to survive if his Profound Qi ran out.

Shi Yan adjusted his breath secretly and despite the poison in the stomach, he drew the Profound Qi back and prepared to fight.

As expected, the Gut Cutting poison became stronger and spread faster after the Profound Qi was drawn back. He was attacked by a wave of agony throughout his body.

Just as Shi Yan was about to attack, he felt a sudden change in the corroded part of his gut!

The cells there came back to life! A weak power wove through the corroded areas as if an invisible hand was sewing up his gut and stomach.

Shi Yan was stunned.

Although he was fully prepared, he didn't rush out irrationally. He quickly calmed down and concentrated on observing the changes inside of his body.

His cells were full of life, while the rotten flesh twitched slightly and recovered gradually. After half an hour, the rotten parts had recovered and the pain had disappeared.

A bolt flashed through Shi Yan's body and he was ecstatic in his heart. However, his face still looked as calm as a lake, as if he was deep asleep.

Every ability that could operate without Profound Qi must be a special Martial Spirit!

The description of a Martial spirit dawned on Shi Yan at that time. Pondering on it for a while, Shi Yan was assured that it was a special Martial Spirit that brought about the changes to his body.

Self-recovery of the body is a special ability, which hadn't been discovered by people!

The Gut Cutting poison took effect again. Without Profound Qi as

his defence, Shi Yan's insides started to rot again.

But magically, it happened again! With his cells full of life, the rotten part recovered in a short period of time!

The effect of the drug broke out continuously and corroded his insides many times. But every time, the self-recovery Martial Spirit activated and cured it before next round of corrosion.

A Martial Spirit increased in strength as the level of the Warrior increased, and sometimes it might undergo a special change. The higher the level of a Warrior, the stronger the abilities their Martial Spirit showed.

Another definition of a Martial Spirit appeared in his mind. Shi Yan was overjoyed. According to the ability of the self-recovery Martial Spirit, his self-recovery ability would increase as his level increased. Maybe when he reaches the Sky and Spirit realm, he could even cure broken limbs with the self-recovery Martial Spirit.

If he could do that, maybe he could recover from a stab to the heart and survive?

If that happened, once he reached the True God realm, maybe he would be immortal?

A lot of ideas crossed his mind. After careful thinking, Shi Yan named this Martial Spirit the Immortal Martial Spirit.

After observing for a while, he was certain the Immortal Martial Spirit could block the Gut Cutting poison. Shi Yan set his mind at ease and paused his plan of getting the cure from Master Karu. He sat where he was and began to recover his Profound Qi, regardless of the battle in his gut and stomach.

Chapter 7 - The Second Sky

The next morning before the sun rose, with a layer of fog still around, the troops had already gotten ready for the path ahead.

Shi Yan was mingling among the medicine slaves, maintaining a calm expression and behaving as normal. As usual, he marched in silence with the troop. Johnson was very surprised to see Shi Yan so calm and peaceful. He was wondering when Shi Yan was going to go belly up like the other medicine slaves before him.

In the past few days, every single one of those medicine slaves who took the Gut Cutting poison would wake up with a pale face and a weak body the next morning, with no exception. For the weak ones, they could barely walk, for the strong ones, you could clearly see the pain and terror on their faces.

However, Shi Yan was still walking. His face looked healthy with a rosy color in his cheeks. He didn't look like he was in pain at all, which made Johnson very confused and curious.

Johnson stared at Shi Yan for a while. After he made sure that Shi Yan was indeed healthy, Johnson came to the front of the marching troops with a frown. He reported Shi Yan's strange status to Mo Yanyu and Master Karu.

"Don't panic." Master Karu was very confident of his medicine, "That boy is a Warrior. He is pretty tough and not that easy to break down. Just wait till the Profound Qi inside him is depleted. He will be no different from those slaves. I know my Gut Cutting poison very well."

"OK. You go back there and keep an eye on him." Mo Yanyu said with an expressionless face.

Since the two of them were so calm about this news, Johnson had no choice but to obey. He didn't insist any more. He went back to the back of the troop and continued to monitor every movement of

Shi Yan closely as he was told.

“Master Karu, how long should it take for that bastard to start suffering?” After Johnson left, Mo Yanyu started to look worried. The result she was expecting is for Shi Yan to start dying from hellish pain now. The more suffering Shi Yan felt, the more pleasure she would be able to enjoy.

“Don’t worry. It is about time.”

After the end of the day, the moon replaced the sun and rose in the sky.

After the troop had settled, Master Karu and Mo Yanyu over walked to Shi Yan together. They saw Shi Yan sitting on the ground, stuffing himself with some scraps of food.

“Master Karu, that guy doesn’t look quite...” Mo Yanyu said in hesitation. The way Shi Yan was engorging himself in his food was not that decent, but he didn’t look to be in pain at all.

Master Karu was apparently offended, “What? Are you questioning my skills as an alchemist?”

“No, no.” Mo Yanyu said, “The power of the Gut Cutting poison has already been proven on other medicine slaves. I was just wondering why this guy could survive. Did you forget any ingredients in his dose?”

“Miss Mo, although I am not a top alchemist, I couldn’t have made such a ridiculous mistake.” Master Karu was apparently offended. He said, “If you don’t believe in my ability, I can leave right now.”

“Master Karu, please don’t. That’s not what I meant. I was just wondering why the medicine did not work on him. I didn’t mean anything else.” Mo Yanyu looked panicked.

“Hmm!” Master Karu didn’t even bother to reply. He rose up from the ground, and flew right towards Shi Yan as fast as lightning.

Shi Yan kept his head down and pretended he wasn't paying attention. However, deep down he was surprised at the speed Master Karu was moving. He felt lucky that he didn't try to fight against him yesterday. Otherwise, he would have definitely suffered.

Apart from being an alchemist, Master Karu was also a Warrior of the Nascent Realm. However, Shi Yan was just a Warrior of the Elementary Realm, who only made it to the Second Sky and could barely operate the Profound Qi inside his body. There was a huge difference between the two of them and there was no chance Shi Yan would survive a fight with Master Karu. If he ever fought back, he would be asking for death.

“fwoosh!”

With a strange sound in the sky, it only took seconds before Master Karu arrived in front of Shi Yan.

Shi Yan put down the food in his hands and looked up at Master Karu.

Master Karu had a skinny, stone-cold face. He suddenly grabbed Shi Yan's left arm with lightning speed, put his fingers on Shi Yan's skin, and quickly inserted his electric-type Profound Qi into his veins. His Profound Qi flowed into Shi Yan's body, circled around his entire system, and returned to Master Karu's fingers.

The Profound Qi of Master Karu was so strong that Shi Yan felt a little overwhelmed with just the circulation of his Profound Qi, with all his veins aching and burning.

“Hmmm...” Master Karu frowned with doubt. He said in a low voice, “It cannot be. The Gut Cutting poison is apparently still inside his body. Why is there still Profound Qi remaining in his body? His gut is not corroded either. He is just a low-level Warrior. He cannot have such fine Profound Qi. He shouldn't be breathing right now.”

Shi Yan just let him grab his arm and didn't fight back.

"Master Karu, how does he look?" Mo Yanyu also arrived.

"Just wait for one more day." Master Karu said with a cold look. He couldn't figure out what was going on either because he had never considered a Martial Spirit. For an ordinary Warrior like him, there's no way he could possess a Martial Spirit. Moreover, Master Karu had never heard of any Martial Spirit that could heal one's body.

Although Mo Yanyu also had a million questions, she had no choice but to nod in agreement. She didn't say anything, but stared at Shi Yan for a while with a strange look. Shi Yan guessed that she was planning something awful for him again.

The next night, Master Karu and Mo Yanyu came over to check Shi Yan's body again. They found that Shi Yan was still fine, no decay, everything was healthy. Master Karu looked more embarrassed than yesterday and told Mo Yanyu to wait for one more day.

The next night, when the two of them checked again, still nothing.

On the fourth night, Master Karu came again. This time, he had two bowls of Gut Cutting poison in his hands. When he arrived, he ordered Johnson to bring another medicine slave called Kuro over to Shi Yan. He commanded the two of them to finish the two bowls of Gut Cutting poison that he had just made.

Again, Shi Yan drank it obediently.

"I made these two bowls of Gut Cutting poison with the same ingredients." Master Karu added after the two of them had finished their bowl of Gut Cutting poison.

Mo Yanyu said with agreement, "If that Kuro's body starts to corrode, it means there's something wrong with this guy's body. I understand you now."

“Yes exactly,” Master Karu nodded, “Just come over again tomorrow night at the same time, and then we will see.”

At night, Shi Yan sat on the ground, slowly operating the Profound Qi inside his body with a heavy look on his face.

The Profound Qi was slowing stretching in his body. It became longer and longer and gradually expanded throughout his veins. With a thought, the Profound Qi gradually became extremely flexible, flowing from one vein to another. As long as he was giving it a command in his mind, the Profound Qi would move all around his veins, just like a snake.

Gradually, the Profound Qi moved to the index finger of his right hand through the veins in his arm. Shi Yan concentrated and moved the Profound Qi back into his veins in the arm. Suddenly, his Profound Qi speed up and rushed towards his right index finger with an unstoppable force, faster and faster.

“Shoo!”

There was a strange sound on the tip of his right index finger. With an intense pain, the Profound Qi forced itself into his index finger. Shi Yan’s finger couldn’t help trembling just like the tail of a rattlesnake.

The Profound Qi was now concentrated in his index finger, expanding and pushing around, but couldn’t break through the skin on the outside. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn’t manage to make the Profound Qi break the skin and leave his body.

“Whoo!” Shi Yan breathed heavily, and gathered his Profound Qi back into his abdomen, looking pretty disappointed. “I failed again...” He said in a very low voice to himself.

There were three stages to the Elementary Realm[1]. If you could cultivate Profound Qi, you would have reached the First Sky. If you were able to operate your Profound Qi skillfully and make it circulate through your body with your mind, you would have

reached the Second Sky. If you managed to make your Profound Qi break out of your skin and into the air, that was the Third Sky.

Now that Shi Yan was able to operate his Profound Qi skillfully all over his body, he had reached the Second Sky. In past few days, he had been collecting and concentrating more and more Profound Qi, trying to force it out of his fingers, hoping to reach the Third Sky. He had tried many times. However, so far he failed to break the boundary of his skin.

“It seems that the training of a Warrior cannot be achieved overnight. My Profound Qi is still not strong enough. Maybe I should try again later after I collect and refine more Profound Qi.” After another failure, Shi Yan couldn’t help but sigh. Maybe it’s due to his dangerous situation, he seemed a little hasty.

He knew that by this time tomorrow, his body would still be the same, unaffected by the Gut Cutting poison. However, that slave called Kuro wouldn’t be this lucky. His gut would have already been decayed together with his other organs.

As soon as Master Karu saw this, he would instantly figure out that there’s nothing wrong with his poison, but the problem was lying inside Shi Yan’s body. He would know that Shi Yan’s body was different from the others, and this is exactly where the trouble would begin. There wouldn’t be easy life for him from then on. Probably Mo Yanyu would just kill him in case he created some new problems in the future.

He wouldn’t even wait until tomorrow morning. If Kuro started to show symptoms tomorrow morning, Shi Yan’s secret would have been discovered instantly. By that time, all the Warriors would have been up and would all be paying attention to him. He would have no chance to escape.

Looking at the night sky full of bright stars, Shi Yan’s face became more serious and determined. He knew that if he ever wanted to survive, he must escape tonight!

[1] Elementary Realm: the first level of warriors. Includes three stages: First Sky, Second Sky and Third Sky.

Chapter 8 - The Jade Blade Spider

The moon was like a silver plate hanging on the night sky.

The warriors were all training quietly. Mo Yanyu hid herself amongst the foliage of a huge ancient tree, taking long breaths. Master Karu stood against another tree, reading a volume of his poison encyclopedia joyfully. Medicine slaves were lying disorderly on the wet ground behind the Ground Dragon.

Shi Yan woke up from training and observed his surroundings quietly in a calculatingly manner.

Mo Yanyu was at the head of the troops while Master Karu at the rear. The two seemed to not care about Shi Yan, however their position gave them away. Apparently they were both on guard against Shi Yan who was in the centre of the troops.

Johnson seemed to know that Shi Yan would make his move tonight, so he didn't train, instead he focused on Shi Yan who was ten metres away. Once Shi Yan made a move, he would notice it and stop him.

"Too bad." Shi Yan thought to himself. He waited for them to let their guard down.

As time passed, the bright moon disappeared. Dawn was about to arrive. However, Shi Yan hadn't gotten a chance to escape yet, so he was a little anxious. After a moment's hesitation, he decided not to wait and was about to take action.

"Kaka! Kakaka!"

At that moment, a strange sound came from afar. Something was heading in this direction slowly.

As the Profound Qi flew forth and back in his arms, Shi Yan's eyes suddenly shone with excitement.

"Everyone on alert!" Mo Yanyu shouted, when she lifted herself

up from the ancient tree. Staying in a high position, she looked into the distance for a while, then screamed, “A Jade Blade Spider!”

All the warriors woke up from their training process.

The warriors were all wearing a rigid face. Before Mo Yanyu uttered anything, they took out their weapons and crowded around the Ground Dragon in a circle, five or six metres away from each other.

Master Karu packed the book away and frowned. He walked up to the Ground Dragon and ordered in a low voice, “Keep an eye on the medicine bottles on the dragon!”

“Yes Master Karu!” The warriors responded in unison.

The medicine slaves woke up one by one. Hearing a Jade Blade Spider was nearing, they were all frightened and ran to the ground dragon. Apparently, they all knew how cruel a Jade Blade Spider was.

“Jingle!”

A bunch of keys flew out from Mo Yanyu’s hand to land under Johnson’s foot. “Johnson, open the shackles on them! Or they will be killed by the spider! Hurry up!” Mo Yanyu urged.

Johnson picked up the keys and looked up at Mo Yanyu, then pointed to Shi Yan, “Including him?”

“Yeah. I don’t want him to die easily.” Mo Yanyu showed no patience on her face.

“Kid, be well-behaved. I will keep an eye on you!” Johnson snorted. He released the shackles on Shi Yan first, then walked over to the rest slaves and freed them one after another.

“Thank God!”

As the shackles were released, Shi Yan felt extremely relaxed and smirked in his mind.

The Shi family was an aristocratic family with a Martial Spirit. Although the owner of this body wasn't a Warrior, he loved adventures and searching for historic remains immensely. He was also familiar with all sorts of demon beasts. So when Mo Yanyu mentioned the Jade Blade Spider, Shi Yan was extremely happy as he knew his chance to escape was coming!

The Jade Blade Spider was a Level 2 demon beast whose eight legs were as sharp as knives. They liked to wander at night and always appeared in groups of five or six. The spiders were cruel and loved eating humans. Once they came across humans in the Dark Forest, they would never spare them.

Demon beasts were always much larger than humans. They had thick, coarse skin and could move faster than humans. Commoners would either die or be injured whenever they met one. Only skilled warriors could escape. Although the Jade Blade Spiders were a mere Level 2 demon beast, they made their appearance in groups of five or six, and normal warriors couldn't move faster than them, thus it was hard to compete with them.

To meet Jade Blade Spiders in the Dark Forest was a bad situation for anyone, as there was nothing valuable on its body and they were aggressive and moved like the wind. They would start attacking as soon as they saw a human and would never leave without getting something, even ignoring their injuries.

Shi Yan approached the Ground Dragon quietly and stood by the panicking medicine slaves and started to observe what was happening, not in a hurry to escape.

“Shit! Eight of them!”

Mo Yanyu cried from the tree, frowning with a rigid face. “It will be a nasty fight. Get ready! Remember, do not pursue and attack! The spiders will have the advantage if we retreat into the thickets! Do not fight in the there!”

“Kakaka! Kaka!”

The sound of a knife cutting the earth approached. Soon, they saw two Jade Blade Spiders who were 10 metres long and 1.5 metres tall. The whole body of the Spider was snow white and as large as a bus, with eight legs like daggers; bright and sharp.

The Spiders moved their dagger-like legs and advanced in extremely quickly and nimbly. They arrived in an instant. Their legs reflected an icy light while moving and easily scared everyone. It was not hard to imagine what tragedy would happen once one was cut by those legs.

Seeing the Spiders show up one by one, the warriors were all silent. Mo Yanyu had jumped down from the tree minutes ago. She was standing in the front of the troops, getting ready by intertwining her fingers with radiant lightning. Master Karu sat relaxed in the sedan atop the Ground Dragon with indifferent eyes, not showing any indication of fear.

Soon, all eight spiders appeared. They were not stupid, as they separated and surrounded the Ground Dragon, and then shooting forth like eight cars.

With a harsh whistling sound, the eight spiders started the battle at the same time. White legs were raised up into the vast sky, they flew forward at the same time, rushing towards the warriors who were around the Ground Dragon.

At that moment, the air was filled with silver and white knives. The warriors reacted quickly. They thrust their weapons, while deflecting the spiders' attack, towards the beasts' waist and eyes.

Everything descended into chaos.

The Jade Blade Spiders surrounded the Ground Dragon. White legs crashed down. Warriors dodged to the left and the right, and kept thrusting their weapons. Mo Yanyu broke out her Martial Spirit. Her hands were twined by lightning and kept radiating [Verdant Crescent Slashes], which fell upon the spiders and left them trembling.

“Shoooo!”

One of the warriors sustained a cut on his torso by a spider leg before he could react. His organs spilled out of him along with his desperate cry. He then fell heavily onto the ground.

The medicine slaves were so frightened that they couldn't help themselves and hid beneath the Ground Dragon. Some slaves lost their mind. They ran in between the spider legs in order to escape, but were nailed to the ground by the spiders' legs and died instantly.

Shi Yan contained himself, his eyes filled with a strange light. He almost didn't move behind the warriors, the shackles ringing with clear sounds.

“Crack!”

The warrior in front of Shi Yan, who was of the Second Sky of the Elementary Realm, bumped into another warrior while moving. Before he could evade, a spider leg cut through his neck and his head was sent flying. Shi Yan was showered with his blood.

Shi Yan's eyes were blurred by the blood. Suddenly, a desire of slaughter broke out in his body. The cyclones in his seven hundred and twenty meridians swirled madly while a potent strength welled out of the meridians.

The headless body of the warrior was spurting out blood. An air current, which could only be sensed by Shi Yan, which was filled with despair, anger and regret, seeped into every pore on Shi Yan. It flowed along his veins until it reached all of the seven hundred and twenty meridians.

In a trance, Shi Yan felt as if he was back at the blood pool again, where he had absorbed all that blood into his meridians as well. The blood had changed his meridians, produced cyclones, and enlarged their capacity, which accelerated the speed it could absorb the blood.

This time, the wisps of air, combined with the despair and hatred of the dead warrior, entered into his body the same way, from the veins to the meridians, in a very rapid speed. The cyclones in his meridians spun hard as if digesting the air currents. Too nefarious!

In ten or so seconds, the air current stopped entering his body. The dead body of the warrior had dried up, as if the blood and Profound Qi were all sucked out of it. Like a dry mummy!

The desire to slaughter emerged in Shi Yan's heart. When the seven hundred and twenty meridians spun in his body, the power of despair, fear and cruelty multiplied as well, which urged Shi Yan to begin a massacre.

“Shwish!”

A spider leg flew towards Shi Yan's head. Surprised, Shi Yan controlled his urge to kill and moved behind another warrior to escape the strike.

“Chee!”

That warrior was blocked by the spider, when he thrust his weapon into the spider's eye with all of his strength. The blind spider went insane and brandished its leg, cutting into the warrior's waist. The warrior was cut into two pieces and died quickly.

After moving near the warrior, when Shi Yan was just about to find a safe zone, things changed again!

The absorption power of his meridians erupted again! The air currents of rage and regret from the two pieces of the warrior's body insanely rushed into his vein and meridians.

In an instant, that warrior became mummified too.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck.

Without a second thought, he assumed that there was another Martial Spirit hidden in his body. This Martial Spirit was based on

his meridians and was able to absorb a dead body's power. Shi Yan was frightened by this evil Martial Spirit.

Just then!

A Jade Blade Spider let out a strange whistle, and the remaining six spiders flew back into the thick forest quickly.

Apparently they had noticed that it would be hard to fight with this troop. After two of them died, they finally withdrew.

Shi Yan's face turned cold. He stopped thinking about that weird Martial Spirit at once and moved all of his Profound Qi into his feet. He dashed out with those Jade Blade Spiders as fast as a whirlwind.

He could only run away among the spiders.

Suddenly a warm stream welled out of the meridians and into the Profound Qi inside Shi Yan. His thin Qi was twice strong as before!

Shi Yan thus gained more confidence and went into a state of ecstasy. He looked back to Mo Yanyu afar, running along with the spiders. He said coldly: "Mo Yanyu, wait and see, I will fuck you one day!"

"Catch him!" Mo Yanyu's slim body trembled, her eyes on fire, as she chased after Shi Yan.

Master Karu was even faster!

The vicious alchemist kept quiet on the Ground Dragon as if waiting for something. When Shi Yan ran away with the spiders, he jumped up and flew high after Shi Yan like an eagle.

"Kid, I've waited for so long." Master Karu smirked in an evil voice while he was still up in the sky.

Chapter 9 - The Escape

As soon as Master Karu touched the ground, he accelerated like a flash of lightning towards Shi Yan with terrifying speed. The power and strength of a Nascent Realm Warrior was far beyond that of an ordinary Elementary Realm Warrior.

Mo Yanyu also chased after him with a killing intent in her beautiful eyes, leaving her own troops behind. She swore to catch Shi Yan and kill him as soon as she got her hands on him.

Shi Yan's face turned serious. He concentrated all the Profound Qi inside his body into the veins in his legs. Every time he took a step on the hard ground, his skinny body would fly forward for seven or eight meters. Soon he was closing in on the giant Jade Blade Spiders.

“Ka! Ka! Ka!”

The Jade Blade Spiders were moving in the wetland with all their eight legs plugged into the mud. Soon they disappeared into the thicket.

Shi Yan followed them into the thick bushes which were 5-6 meters tall. His face was getting more and more nervous. He already forgot how terrifying the Jade Blade Spiders were and kept staring at one of the spiders at front.

Once they got into the bushes, the Jade Blade Spiders suddenly slowed down. Two Jade Blade Spiders suddenly turned around with a strange light in their eyes. They seemed to be annoyed at being chased all the way into the bushes.

The Jade Blade Spiders didn't know Shi Yan's intention. Being chased by three humans, they probably thought that they wanted to fight. One of the Jade Blade Spiders screamed with a strangely sharp sound. Suddenly, the four other Jade Blade Spiders all turned around and looked straight at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan still remained calm. He didn't slow down at all, but streaked towards the Jade Blade Spiders with a much higher speed.

Shi Yan was more focused than ever. His mind became as clear as a mirror. Suddenly, he had entered that marvellous stage again. Everything around him became so clear to him. He could even hear the low-frequency communication among the Jade Blade Spiders, as well as the fast movements of Master Karu behind him. He couldn't miss anything.

“Whoo!”

With Shi Yan's fast movements, the air around him was split in half and he soon generated a strong wind around him. He could hear the sound of air flow louder and louder next to his ears.

Just as Shi Yan had almost run into those Jade Blade Spiders, he suddenly changed direction in the air and flew past one of the Jade Blade Spiders by a millimeter. It was so close that he almost got nicked by the spider's blade-like legs. Shi Yan soon passed by the group of Jade Blade Spiders and continued running forward with no hesitation.

The Jade Blade Spiders were seriously provoked and irritated.

The six Jade Blade Spiders felt like they were fooled by this man in front of them. They had never felt so humiliated. With a sharp scream, the six spiders started racing towards Shi Yan.

Master Karu and Mo Yanyu ran into the bushes one after another, but they had lost track of Shi Yan and only saw the six raging Jade Blade Spiders.

Master Karu suddenly stopped chasing, and said with an icy light in his eyes, “That boy must have hidden somewhere in these bushes.”

“Maybe he has run through the flock of Jade Blade Spiders and is ahead of them right now?” Mo Yanyu asked with a frown and some uncertainty in her voice.

Master Karu sniffed, “Even if he is bold enough, he couldn’t have survived the Jade Blade Spiders. The eight spider legs are like meat grinders. This place is the proprietary land of the Jade Blade Spiders. If he did become the target of those spiders, he would have already been killed without a doubt.”

“Yeah, that makes sense.” Mo Yanyu agreed with Master Karu. The two of them then split up and started to search the bushes for traces of Shi Yan.

On the other side, Shi Yan was crazily looking for his way out of the bushes in this dark forest. He was running as fast as he could, but so were those six Jade Blade Spiders behind him. Soon the spiders were closing in on him.

In this part of the Dark Forest, there were no tall trees, nothing but low bushes which seemed to be continue on forever. Shi Yan couldn’t see the end of them. The bushes were not that strong, and were easily destroyed simply by a scratch of the spider’s legs.

Therefore, Shi Yan couldn’t find a tree to hide or rest. All he could do was to keep running like hell. He really hoped he could get rid of those Jade Blade Spiders behind him.

Luckily for him, there was a magical energy spilling out from his Meridians which flowed into his veins and mixed with his Profound Qi. His Profound Qi was therefore much stronger and more concentrated than ever. Otherwise, he couldn’t have possibly kept up this pace for so long, and probably would have been slaughtered by those fearsome Jade Blade Spiders and their sharp legs.

With the strong movements of the Profound Qi inside the veins in his legs, Shi Yan felt like they were full of power. Every time he stepped hard on the ground, he would fly up as light as a feather and flew several meters forward. Shi Yan couldn’t help admiring the amazing power of Profound Qi and was more and more determined to become a great Warrior.

Shi Yan couldn't remember how long he had been running for his life, but now he was really exhausted. After such long time running, he could feel the power of the Profound Qi inside his legs declining sharply, and he was not running as fast as before.

As he slowed down, the Jade Blade Spiders didn't. These demon beasts had one of the strongest physiques. They didn't need the support of any extra energy to rampage all over the place.

"Damn! Those eight legged bastards are really a pain in the ass in the dark forest."

The Jade Blade Spiders were drawing closer to Shi Yan and were almost upon him.

Shi Yan's heart was beating like a jungle drum and his back was sweating like a waterfall. According to the situation, he knew that sooner or later he would be captured by those Jade Blade Spiders. By that time, he would have already run out of Profound Qi and would have no way to defend himself against those giant spiders.

Water! Suddenly Shi Yan could feel a moist vapor coming from his left side with his sharpened senses. Shi Yan took a deep breath and smiled with joy. He suddenly changed direction and rushed towards his left.

There is water here!

Shi Yan concentrated his senses and listened closely to his surroundings. Not surprisingly, only a few minutes after he changed direction, Shi Yan could hear the most wonderful sound of water flowing in the distance.

Only a few minutes later, a new landscape spread out in front of Shi Yan's eyes. There was a large waterfall, with the water curtain disappearing into the deep pool like shooting stars in the galaxy. Some of the falling water sprayed onto the giant rocks on the shore, with water drops spilling and jumping all over the place like pearls and dense water vapor rising above the pool like a net.

“Splash!”

Shi Yan quickly jumped into the freezing pool like a swift arrow. He felt instantly relieved, and thought that he could finally ditch those Jade Blade Spiders.

“Splash! Splash! Splash!”

However, the six giant spiders also followed him into the deep pool, one by one. They were floating above the water like boats. With their eight giant legs moving around in the water, they swam quickly towards Shi Yan.

“Damn it!” There was no time for Shi Yan to take a break and he was absolutely desperate. Seeing those Jade Blade Spiders approaching, he had no choice but to dive into the water and swim towards the bottom of the pool.

Shi Yan kept holding his breath and dived deeper and deeper into the pool. He only dared to look up when he was already more than seven meters under the surface.

From beneath, he could clearly see the sharp legs of those six Jade Blade Spiders. The spiders were stabbing their legs, which were as sharp as knives, into the water and chopping around.

The Jade Blade Spiders were not afraid of the water and they had no difficulty floating above the surface. However, it seemed they didn't want to dive under the water. The six beasts were just blindly stabbing and chopping their legs into the surface, but only the surface.

Seeing this, Shi Yan was quite relieved. He held his breath and waited patiently in the water.

Holding his breath was one of Shi Yan's strengths. He had participated in a lot of extreme sports programs like this before and therefore had rich experience in this. With one breath, he could survive underwater for more than 10 minutes.

The Jade Blade Spiders didn't stay long on the water. After

chopping their legs for a while with no trace of Shi Yan, the six giant beasts soon left the pool one after another.

Only then could Shi Yan float to the surface. When he saw the six Jade Blade Spiders still by the shore, he instantly stopped floating up and started observing those demon beasts very carefully in secret.

The six demon beasts soon left.

Only then did Shi Yan rise to the surface. He took a deep breath of the surrounding damp air, and dive back to the bottom of the pool. After exhausting his breath, he would rise again to the surface near one of the giant rocks on the corner of the pool. He repeated this process over and over again, breathing, diving and rising, breathing, diving and rising.

He was a little worried that those Jade Blade Spiders would come back, but was more worried that Master Karu and Mo Yanyu would find him by following the tracks of those giant beasts. Therefore, he was extra cautious, not willing to come out of the water to soon.

At the bottom of the pool.

Shi Yan was still holding his breath and doing his own meditation. He started to think about the strange energy he had appeared from his Meridians. He remembered that when the two Warriors died, he happened to be nearby, and it seemed that he had stolen all their Profound Qi through his Meridians. Regardless, he definitely had gotten something valuable from those two Warriors.

When he was running from the Jade Blade Spiders, he could strongly feel a strange energy spilling over from his Meridians. This energy was so pure and when it mixed with his Profound Qi inside his body, the energy instantly made his Profound Qi increase much faster and it almost doubled in minutes. But Shi Yan couldn't figure out why.

Could it be that his Meridians had absorbed the energy from those two Warriors, refined this energy into a much more pure and concentrated force, and empowered Shi Yan's own body?

Chapter 10 - Drag Her Down

At the bottom of the pool.

Shi Yan had gradually recovered his Profound Qi that had been exhausted from running from those Jade Blade Spiders. He had been secretly watching the surroundings of the pool very carefully. He wasn't sure as to whether the giant spiders would come back or whether Mo Yanyu and Master Karu would come here. Just to be safe, he decided to stay in the pool for a little longer, and would only leave when he made sure he was no longer in danger.

With the Profound Qi flowing around his body, Shi Yan felt this short period of resting had already recovered the majority of his Profound Qi. His senses had become sharper and he could even hear the wind blowing through the grass and trees on the surface, despite the fact that he was still underwater.

Before long, he saw a beautiful figure show up on the shore. She was standing by a giant rock on the shore, probing her surroundings with a cold glint in her eyes.

Shi Yan suddenly became nervous and secretly dove three meters deeper. He would only swim around in secret when he had made sure that Mo Yanyu couldn't see him from the shore.

Shi Yan was moving very slowly, afraid to make any ripple on the surface of the pool. He was very focused, swimming like a fish at the bottom of the pool. He even swam to different parts of the pool, just to make sure there's no danger from different areas of the shore.

After making sure that Mo Yanyu was the only person on the shore, he secretly swam closer to the rock by which she was standing. He stayed there for a minute, looking up at the vague figure of the beautiful woman from the water. Shi Yan hesitated for a while, but still kept moving up in the water, very slowly.

“Fucking bastard! Don’t let me catch you, otherwise I will make you suffer so much pain that you will beg for death!” Mo Yanyu was cursing on the shore. Her face was twisted with anger.

“Splash!”

Suddenly something rose up from the water beneath her feet. Mo Yanyu was shocked. Before she could react, one of her beautiful legs was grabbed by something. She instantly felt stunned by a strong wave of energy and her body weakened and fell into the pool.

“Boom!”

She felt her soft abdomen heavily punched by something and a sharp pain was spreading to her whole body. Mo Yanyu started to sink with a higher speed. She could barely breathe and had already swallowed a lot of water from the pool, which almost choked her tears out.

When she finally came to her senses, Mo Yanyu found herself grabbed by someone and dragged to the bottom of the pool in a brutal manner. When she could finally take a closer look, she instantly realized that she had fallen into Shi Yan’s trap due to negligence.

“Oh crap!”

Mo Yanyu was shocked by this. She knew that she was not a good swimmer so she wouldn’t want to fight with Shi Yan here. She was grabbing the water with both hands, trying hard to float up to the surface to plan her next step.

“Huh, want to run? Try me!”

Shi Yan couldn’t help but snort. As soon as Mo Yanyu was dragged into the pool, he could tell that she was not good in the water. At that moment, Shi Yan realized that this was his best shot get revenge for himself and humiliate Mo Yanyu at the same time. How could he let such a great opportunity pass by?

With one hand firmly grabbing Mo Yanyu's beautiful leg, Shi Yan kept dragging her down with all his might. His other hand kept pounding hard into her abdomen with a strong fist, determined to make her swallow some more water.

“Boom!”

With another fist on Mo Yanyu's abdomen, Shi Yan felt her skin, which was previously soft, suddenly became as solid as a steel. After this hit, she was not frustrated at all, but still working very hard to reach the surface of the pool.

On the other side, after the hit, Shi Yan felt an intense pain on his fist.

She is using her Profound Qi for self-defense!

Shi Yan instantly realized that Mo Yanyu had started her own defense. Seeing her flailing in the water with both hands, getting closer and closer to the surface. Shi Yan suddenly came up with a thousand ideas.

In three seconds, Shi Yan had come up with a new plan.

Mo Yanyu was still trying her best to reach the surface of the pool. Noticing that Shi Yan had stopped punching her in the abdomen, she got a little too proud of herself, assuming that Shi Yan had exhausted his means.

However, not long after that smile appeared on her face, Mo Yanyu suddenly turned very pale in panic with a terrible look on her face.

With one hand still grabbing her leg like a clamp, Shi Yan started to shamelessly harass her ass and the part between her thighs. This is the most precious and sensitive part of her body, she had not allowed any man to touch or violate it. But now this man in front of her was insatiably groping her thighs as if she were his bitch. Mo Yanyu felt so ashamed she almost couldn't breathe.

Just when she was about to burst into rage and fight with Shi

Yan, Mo Yanyu found that the silk pants she had been wearing had been stripped down by Shi Yan. He had even torn down her little panties and left her entire lower body exposed in front of Shi Yan's eyes.

She had never shown any man this secret part of her body. However, this man had successfully humiliated her in such an outrageous way. Mo Yanyu's mind suddenly went blank.

Suddenly, she could feel a big finger forcing its way into her body and it felt like she was being struck by a bolt of lightning. With a thread of electricity flowing through her body, she instantly went numb in her lower body. There was a warm wave of energy making its way out of her body.

Shi Yan also felt shocked, but it didn't feel as good as he thought. He was actually hit by the lightning that came out of Mo Yanyu's body. It seemed that her body would defend herself by discharging a jolt of electricity shock when violated. This lightning had struck him pretty hard and he suddenly couldn't feel his hands. All of a sudden, Shi Yan had lost his power.

At the moment, Mo Yanyu suddenly felt herself much lighter in the water. She realized that Shi Yan had released her. She suddenly regained her senses. Forcing her way through the water with all her might, Mo Yanyu finally rose up to the surface of the pool, filled with grief and indignation.

On the other hand, Shi Yan was still floating in the water, feasting his eyes on the million dollar view above his head. He could clearly see the two sexy legs of Mo Yanyu moving around on the pool surface, her ass which had such a nice curve, as well as the delicious parts between her thighs which were apparently his favorite.

However, he was affected pretty heavily and couldn't feel any strength right now. He couldn't do anything but let Mo Yanyu keep swimming towards a big rock on the shore of the pool.

Before long, Mo Yanyu had arrived at the rock. She grabbed the rock with one hand, and screamed with a raging fire burning in her vicious eyes, “You fucking animal! Come out!”

Having lost her pants, Mo Yanyu couldn’t get out of the pool and still needed to hide her lower body in the water. She couldn’t do anything but scream like hell. Her hatred was burning and lightning was dancing around her fingers. She would pay any price to burn Shi Yan into a crisp.

After slowly operating his Profound Qi inside his body for a while, Shi Yan felt his discomfort had been mostly alleviated and he had recovered his strength. Still hiding in the water, Shi Yan stared at Mo Yanyu by the big rock on the shore for a while with a greedy look. He couldn’t help licking his lips and fantasizing about the woman’s body. Although she had a heart as dark as a scorpion, she had the most attractive look to any man, one in a million. He couldn’t get enough of her.

Now that Mo Yanyu had already set up her defense, Shi Yan knew that it was impossible for him to drag her down into the water again. This woman had achieved the Nascent Realm for Warriors and possessed the scary Lightning Martial Spirit. If she was already on alert, there’s no way that he could strike again.

If Mo Yanyu kept screaming and shouting like this, it wouldn’t be long before Master Karu and the other warriors from the Mo family found the two of them. If he didn’t get away now, he probably wouldn’t get another chance later.

Having thought about this, Shi Yan didn’t hesitate at all. He quickly swam from one side of the pool to the other, away from Mo Yanyu, and got up onto the shore.

He kept his little brother pretty aroused, teasing Mo Yanyu across the pool with a proud smile on his face and a big bulge in his pants, “Back then, just what the heck was that stuff coming out of your pussy? It was pretty warm and sweet. You must have enjoyed

me back there.”

With her lower body still naked in the water, Mo Yanyu didn't dare to come onto the shore. Hearing him saying this, Mo Yanyu's body felt like it was hit by a lightning bolt. She screamed like crazy, “I'm gonna kill you! You bastard! I am so killing you! I swear! I will cut you into pieces!”

Shi Yan replied with a snort on his face, “Bitch! I've already tasted your pussy. How are you gonna get married? Kill me? Huh! Next time, you won't be this lucky with only my finger inside of your body!”

After saying that, he shook his little brother in an exaggerated manner in front of Mo Yanyu's eyes, putting on a teasing smile and left before she could burst out with rage. Shi Yan quickly disappeared into the bushes.

Mo Yanyu was so angry that she could hardly breathe. She fired waves of lightning towards Shi Yan, but the lightning could barely cross the pool, degrading into little electric sparks and disappearing after a few hundred meters, to say nothing of hurting Shi Yan.

Gasping heavily, Mo Yanyu could feel her hatred burning in her eyes endlessly. As much as she would like to strike back, her lower body was still naked in the water, so she wouldn't dare to make a move. After a while, after making sure that Shi Yan wouldn't come back, she swam to the middle of the pool to retrieve her pants which were floating on the surface.

“Miss Mo, I remember you were chasing somebody. How come you jumped into the pool to take a nice bath?”

Mo Yanyu heard the creepy voice of Master Karu from behind her as she finished dressing on the shore. Startled, she quickly turned around, seeing Master Karu staring at her with two horny eyes. Master Karu was like a starving wolf, staring right at her wet body, which looked so delicious with its beautiful curves. Mo

Yanyu was offended but couldn't say anything to Master Karu. She held back her raging anger and replied mercilessly, "I was dragged down into the water by that motherfucking asshole!"

"Oh!" Master Karu nodded. His greedy eyes still didn't stop roaming over Mo Yanyu's sexy body. He said with a horny smile on his face, "Miss Mo, you... didn't let him do things to you, did you?"

"Hell no!" Mo Yanyu denied with a cold face, "It's just I'm not good with the water, so he took the chance to get away."

"Which direction?" Master Karu said with a weird frown, "That guy had the strangest body structure. Even my Gut Cutting poison couldn't break him. He was indeed a good trial subject. I won't let someone like him escape."

"Then let's not waste any time!" Mo Yanyu was already furious. She didn't want to waste too much time with Master Karu and started chasing Shi Yan right away, heading in the direction he disappeared.

Once she turned around, Master Karu started staring at her sexy curves with his creepy, cold snake-like eyes.

After staring at her wet plump ass for a while, the beautiful body of Mo Yanyu disappeared into the bushes. Master Karu laughed with a horny smile and followed her with lightning speed.

Chapter 11 - Strike Back

A crowd of people had started to gather in the Dark Forest, which was filled with all kinds of trees and plants. Warriors from the Mo family had separated into groups and were searching for Shi Yan in their designated areas. They all had a depressed look on their faces.

Mo Yanyu's face was as cold as ever. She gave her order in a sharp voice, "Go search for that bastard! Now! Once you have found any trace of him, set off the blue smoke bomb! Don't fight him individually!"

"It has been 3 days and we still cannot find that guy, but we keep finding traces of him. Is he that poor at covering his tracks, or has he been intentionally playing with us?" Master Karu said with a sour face, apparently irritated by Shi Yan's tricks.

For the past few days, the whole crowd had been looking for Shi Yan in the Dark Forest. They could occasionally see the footprints and broken tree branches he left behind on his way through. He must have been around this area for days, but no matter how hard they searched, they couldn't find anything, not even the smallest clue as to the whereabouts of Shi Yan.

"Search a bigger area!" Mo Yanyu was pissed off, and shouted her new order, "Start from here and search separately! Do your best! Once you see him, release the blue smoke bomb! I will be there in an instant!"

The warriors of the Mo family all complied obediently.

"Is it okay to leave the Ground Dragon alone?" Master Karu frowned, and said worriedly, "All my medicine bottles are with the dragon. If that boy goes over there to mess with my medicine, he would cause me more trouble than I could handle."

"Master Karu, don't you worry. The Ground Dragon is being guarded by Johnson and seven other warriors. Johnson has

already reached the Third Sky of the Elementary Realm. That asshole is no match for him.” Mo Yanyu said with a proud face.

Master Karu nodded in consent.

The warriors of the Mo family had moved further and further away, and the members had become more and more distanced from each other. With one hand on the blue smoke bomb, the warriors were not that stressed. As soon as they saw any trace of Shi Yan, all they had to do was to set off the blue smoke. Simple enough!

One of the warriors was walking in the shade, cursing Shi Yan at the same time with an angry face. He looked up at the tree branches above his head, and then checked the bushes around his ankles.

They had been searching this area for the past three days! All for a junior warrior who had barely reached the Elementary Realm! There was no trace of him at all. They didn't even believe that he was still in the area, they all thought that Shi Yan had already left. Therefore, all the warriors were not happy when they were ordered to search this area again, complaining in secret and thinking that they were wasting their time. There was no point for them to do this!

The warrior arrived under one of the aged trees, shaded by all the thick branches and leaves. This time, when he looked up, all he could feel was a chill, cold and evil, pouring down onto him. All of a sudden, Shi Yan jumped down from the tree like a fierce wolf, crushing the warrior's face with his knee.

“Boom!”

With a strong blow, the warrior's face was instantly covered in fresh blood. He fell on the ground, with his eyes filled with blood and tears. For a moment, he couldn't see anything.

All he could do was stab his dagger wildly, shouting in panic,

“Here! He’s over here!”

Before he could release the blue smoke bomb in his left hand, an intense pain spread from his left wrist. He couldn’t stand it and let the blue smoke bomb be taken away from him.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Shi Yan put on the cruelest face he had ever made. Before he could realize, his eyes had already turned dark red and there was a murderous look in his eyes. He moved swiftly around the warrior, hiding away from his random stabbings and continued stepping on his face, showing no mercy.

With his Profound Qi running wild through both of his legs, Shi Yan’s every hit was as powerful as an iron hammer. Under such strong attacks, it only took five strikes for the warrior to stop breathing.

Seeing this, Shi Yan stepped towards the dead warrior, grabbed the dagger from his lifeless hand and stabbed straight into the warrior’s neck with a precise and cruel cut. Shi Yan’s face remained calm and cold all this time.

All of a sudden, a strong wave of invisible energy spilled out of the warrior’s body, mixed with strings of emotions such as distress, anger and panic, all pouring out at once. The energy was quickly absorbed by Shi Yan and flowed into his Meridians. Within a few seconds, the warrior had lost all his Profound Qi and turned into a mummified body.

Shi Yan approached the dead body again. He searched through his pockets with a frown, and only found a packet of food and a few dozen Purple Crystal Coins. Shi Yan took away his possessions and quickly left the scene. He didn’t want to stop in one place for long, making his way swiftly through the dark forest swiftly like a fox, and soon disappearing into the trees.

This was the first time that he had ever taken a man’s life.

However, he was not at all nervous or panicky. He had remained calm and cool-headed the whole time. When he was stepping hard onto the warrior's face, he felt nothing but an overwhelming thrill, a great satisfaction that he couldn't describe with words. He was free. He felt like he was a warrior by nature, and that he was born to kill.

The killing had brought him a feeling of euphoria, it was the most wonderful moment that he had never experienced. All the unpleasant feelings that had been haunting him for days were instantly cast away the moment he cut that warrior's neck.

Deep down, Shi Yan knew this wasn't right, and that there must be something wrong with his body. No normal person would be this calm and steady when killing his first victim, not like him. Normal people wouldn't feel this kind of thrill or bliss either. However, he was like an obsessed drug addict when it came to murder and killing.

As the Profound Qi from the warrior's body rushed into Shi Yan's Meridians, there was again a strong urge of murder flaring up inside his body. Before long, a strange energy poured into his Profound Qi, making it even stronger and more concentrated than ever.

This felt so good!

For five days, Shi Yan was like a ghost in the Dark Forest. He was everywhere, always killing, and always precise and accurate. The murders all happened in sneak attacks before those poor warriors had chance to release their blue smoke bombs in their hand.

Within days, another three warriors became Shi Yan's victims. Every time, when their bodies were discovered, they had already become mummified, with all their blood and Profound Qi sucked away.

Mo Yanyu became more and more agitated. She searched and searched around the dark forest with Master Karu, desperate to dig

Shi Yan out. Both of them had started to smell a crisis on the horizon.

For the first victim, his face was terribly destroyed, with a cruel blow to his head, and there were still some traces of a struggle.

For the second and third victims, they were both secretly attacked from behind, with several brutal stabs in their hearts and abdomen, with only traces of a brief fight still there.

However, for the last warrior, he was killed instantly with a clear cut on the throat and there was no trace of a fight at all.

Judging from the four dead warriors, Shi Yan was becoming more and more skilled at killing. The Dark Forest had become a perfect arena for showing off his talent of murder. He skillfully used the landscape to cover his own tracks. Like an experienced hunter, he was secretly hiding in the forest, watching and waiting for his next prey.

The death of those four warriors had made the other warriors all very nervous. Mo Yanyu and Master Karu were also starting to take this seriously. As per their new orders, the warriors were not allowed to act individually. They were only allowed to move in groups of two. This way, if one of them was attacked, the other one could come right over it help, in order to avoid the tragedy that had happened before.

In the Dark Forest, on the top of an aged tree, wrapped and covered by layers of leaves, Shi Yan sat cross-legged in silence, looking at those little human figures in the distance through the leaves.

“Huh, not as stupid as before...” Shi Yan sniffed from the inside. He knew it wouldn’t be that easy for him to strike and kill now.

Shi Yan didn’t rush into attacks. He watched those warriors for a while, and noticed that after the death of the previous four warriors, the Mo family warriors had started to act in groups of

two, hence they couldn't cover a search area as large as before. Right now, they were not coming in his direction, but moving away from Shi Yan's location.

After making sure that the warriors were not coming his way, at least not in a short period of time, Shi Yan closed his eyes quietly, and started to circulate the Profound Qi inside his body. The Profound Qi of those killed by Shi Yan over the past few days had all been absorbed by Shi Yan's Meridians shortly after they died, and was purifying his Meridians and strengthening his Profound Qi in a powerful way.

Shi Yan started to circulate the Profound Qi inside his body faster and faster with his mind. He could clearly feel that his Profound Qi was much stronger than before, rushing through his Meridians like an intense lightning all over his body, from his abdomen and all the way to his right arm. Shi Yan held his breath, cleared his mind, and concentrated all his attention in pouring the Profound Qi into his right arm. Now! He released this burning energy all at once!

The Profound Qi inside his arm was flowing rapidly towards his right index finger like wild horses escaping from their reins.

“Shoot!”

Some silver colored light smoke suddenly shot out of his right index finger, making a strange sound the air. The light smoke didn't gather in the air and only lasted for a few minutes before it faded away.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, with bright stars shining in his black eyes and a surprised smile on his face.

He had successfully managed to push his Profound Qi outside of his body!

This marked him reaching the Third Sky of the Elementary Realm. After his rigorous practice over the past few days, he had

finally made it to a new level with the help of that strange power inside his Meridians.

Although the Profound Qi that was forced from his body was not in a concentrated shape, and couldn't make itself into a sharp beam, he would be able to infuse his Profound Qi into all kinds of killing weapons, and could directly rupture the enemy's organs with his Profound Qi shot; which meant that he had already reached a milestone in his control and operation of Profound Qi.

Chapter 12 - The Mysterious Martial Skill in the Blood Vein Ring

After Shi Yan withdrew the Profound Qi that had flown out of his body, he set his eyes upon the crimson ring on his left ring finger. This mysterious ring, which he had named the 'Blood Vein Ring', came from the blood pool, and had some connection with it.

As he was thinking, he recalled the time when he wore the ring for the first time. Back then, the Profound Qi in his body was very weak, but the moment he wore the ring, it rushed toward the ring in a wild manner. But since it was too weak then, his Qi couldn't flow into the ring across his skin.

Now he had already reached the Third Sky, meaning his Profound Qi had been strengthened and refined to the point that it could move out of his body.

What would happen if his Profound Qi went into the ring?

Shi Yan was curious and guessed that there was a secret inside this ancient ring. Maybe after studying this ring, he could find out the reason why his meridians changed.

Through the leaves, Shi Yan observed for a while. Three warriors from Mo family were moving away from him, and would not come back for a short time.

Shi Yan decided to give it a shot!

At first, the Profound Qi was flowing slowly in his dantian, then it suddenly accelerated and rushed into his left arm. His Qi moved rapidly and he felt a numb pain in the veins of his left arm. The Qi, rushed all the way into the ring finger on his left hand with a crushing force, and lashed against the skin under the ring.

Like smoke, the Profound Qi leaked out from between the ring and the skin, making the sound of steam coming out of a kettle, and the pure energy dived right inside the ring in an instant.

The Blood Vein Ring let out a crimson light, as if the protective layer of the ring had been ruptured. At this point, a strange energy jumped out of the Blood Vein Ring and flew back into Shi Yan's arm. It went straight up his neck and finally arrived in his mind.

Martial Skill: [Rampage]!

The energy coming out of the Blood Vein Ring was a series of memory fragments. This [Rampage], was a strange Martial Skill. The training procedure became deeply engraved in his mind.

Martial Skills taught warriors how to operate their Profound Qi, and contained a skill for attacking with Profound Qi. Just like the ranking for Alchemists, it was divided into five grades: Mortal, Profound, Spirit, Sacred and God. [1]

But there were some differences between the ranking of Martial Skills and that of Alchemists. Every grade of Alchemists consisted of seven sub-levels, while Martial Skills contained no sub-levels.

High grade Martial Skills brought the best out of the Profound Qi inside a Warrior and provided them with an enormous ability to attack. The higher the grade of the Martial Skill, the better it tapped their Profound Qi. If a warrior was to train with a high grade Martial Skill, he had to reach a high level first. The stronger the Martial Skill, the stricter the conditions it required.

Generally speaking, warriors of the Elementary and Nascent Realm were suitable for training Mortal and Human level Martial Skills, Disaster Realm for Profound and Earth level skills, Nirvana Realm for Spirit and Sky level skills, Spirit Realm for Sacred level skills and True God and King God Realm for God level skills.

It was a waste of time if a warrior of a lower grade tried to train with high grade Martial Skills.

If one's grade was too low and their Profound Qi was not intense enough, one would not succeed in learning a high grade Martial Skill. Even if they barely succeeded, he could not use the power of

a high grade Martial Skill proficiently, as their Realm and power would not be enough to sustain them. It was best for a warrior to train with Martial Skills which matched their Warrior Realm.

For example, even if a warrior of the Nascent Realm possessed God level Martial Skill, it would be a total waste of time, because he would never be able to train it with his low Realm.

Conversely, if a warrior of a high Realm trained with a low level Martial Skill, he couldn't put his power to good use either.

If a warrior of the True God Realm had only low grade Martial Skills of the Mortal and Profound grade, his ability would be restricted. For, if his Martial Skills were too low for his warrior Realm, he could only use 70%-80% of his ability.

On the Grace mainland, Martial Skills were more treasured than pills from alchemists; they were the most valuable treasure on this earth. Generally speaking, Martial Skills were controlled by those honorable families and all sorts of forces. It was one of the attractions for warriors, as such they often joined to those honorable families to have access to them.

The higher the grade, the more valuable the Martial Skill. Warriors of a high Realm would be severely restricted if they didn't possess a high grade Martial Skill. They would be at a disadvantage, sometimes resulting in them being killed in fights.

Thus, in order to acquire a suitable high grade Martial Skill, those high-levelled warriors would sacrifice anything.

Sitting straight up in the foliage, Shi Yan sorted out the memories of [Rampage] in his mind little by little. After he put those memory fragments in order, he found that the [Rampage] Martial Skill consisted of three levels as well. What got imprinted in his mind now was only the first level of the training process. He had no idea what Martial Skill grade [Rampage] was, or whether [Rampage] suited him or not.

This Martial Skill leaked out from the Blood Vein Ring and rushed into his mind in a direct yet weird way. To train in this Martial Skill one needed to reverse the flow of their Profound Qi, which was of the opposite most Martial Skills. Shi Yan hesitated, could he train this incomplete Martial Skill, whose story was still unknown.

As one of the five biggest families in the Merchant Union, the Shi family had its own Martial Skills, the highest of which reached the Spirit level. It was regarded as a family heirloom by the family head of Shi family, Shi Jian. This old man was the only person who had reached the Realm required to train with it.

Nonetheless, apart from this Spirit level Martial Skill, the Shi family also possessed Mortal and Profound level Martial Skills.

Shi Yan had decided to return to Shi family and train with their Mortal and Profound level Martial Skills with his new identity. But now, the Blood Vein Ring had produced this mysterious and unknown Martial Skill. He was totally confused, should he train with it or not?

With a rigid face, Shi Yan tried to refine his Profound Qi and pushed it into the Blood Vein Ring, only to find his Profound Qi blocked by a protective screen within the Ring. No matter how hard he tried, his Profound Qi couldn't break the screen. He came to the vague conclusion that there was something behind that protective screen, but he would never know until it was broken.

Behind that protective screen, there might be more information about [Rampage]. Most likely it would be the process of the other two levels of training. Sadly, his Profound Qi could not break that screen until it was strong enough.

Helplessly, Shi Yan withdrew his Profound Qi from the ring. He arranged the incomplete memory fragments of the Martial Skill again, but he was still hesitant.

To train with it or not?

Being wrapped in foliage with his eyes shining, Shi Yan's facial expressions kept on changing. After a very long time, he decided to see what would happen to his body if he trained in the first level of [Rampage].

His Profound Qi moved towards the Jugu Meridian slowly. After it arrived, according to the spinning process of first level of [Rampage], Shi Yan slowly injected his Profound Qi into the Jugu Meridian. Instantly, it started to spin rapidly. Negative moods buried in that meridian, such as hatred, despair and insanity, were all triggered in a burst, which turned into a certain force and began to change the veins, bones, blood and flesh around the Jugu Meridian.

All of a sudden, he felt a severe pain.

The blood and flesh around the Jugu Meridian suddenly contracted and his muscles became tight instantly.

After a quick thought, Shi Yan began to reverse the flow of his Profound Qi in no time. An unbearable pain suddenly raced through his whole body and felt that his veins were very nearly torn apart. After it travelled several inches, Shi Yan made up his mind and forced his Profound Qi up. His Profound Qi jumped across the Jugu Meridian and rushed to the Jianzhen Meridian like an angry beast.

After it accumulated in his Jianzhen Meridian, his Profound Qi spun just like before, which again brought out those negative moods of hatred, despair and anger hidden in the meridian all at once. The blood and flesh in that area began to contract again. To Shi Yan's surprise, there was even a vague grey fog rising up from each pore on his shoulder, which was mixed with despair and hatred. Haunting!

The Profound Qi reversed again. Shi Yan felt a splitting pain in his right arm and his forehead and back were both soaked in sweat.

Severe pain!

Biting his teeth, the insanity inside Shi Yan broke out abruptly. Despite the pain in his arm, Shi Yan continued to urge his Profound Qi in the direction of Wuli Meridian...

After an unknown passage of time, Shi Yan moved his Profound Qi all the way from his Jugu Meridian to his Yangchi Meridian near his wrist, all while suppressing the desire to vomit. All sorts of negative energy inside the meridians of his the right arm seemed to be brought out at once!

Examining carefully, Shi Yan found the muscles on his right arm had contracted, so much so that they were much thinner than before. The dim grey fog curled up his arm ceaselessly, conveying those negative moods.

Merely by looking at it, one would be easily affected by its power, feeling extremely terrified.

The Profound Qi was moving back and forth in his arm. A strong power which could burst a dam was surging in his arm, combined with all sorts of negative moods. Shi Yan felt enormous power in his right arm, as if it would burst out at any minute.

In the bottom of his heart, a series of whims containing killing and cruelty showed up.

Breathing heavily, Shi Yan's eyes showed a murderous look. Among the trees, he started searching for targets, viciously like a wolf. How he wished he could grind every person he saw into powder with his right arm. It wouldn't be content until he smashed those people into mud.

...

A short while later, two shadows, along with loud curses, were moving towards his direction slowly. They were both warriors of the Mo family. After searching other places but finding no trace of Shi Yan, they were sent by Mo Yanyu to search this area.

“Where is that bastard? I'm gonna cut off his head at sight of

him! Crap! My mistress is still waiting for me in the Merchant Union. I have wasted too much of my time here because of that bastard! Damn!” A stout warrior was viciously cursing, whose face was buried under a heavy moustache.

“Zhen Tie, Be careful! That bastard killed four of us! He must be a tough one to deal with. He ate twice what we eat for one meal, so strange! Don’t underestimate him!” The other warrior looked cautious, and he kept looking around, being more careful apparently.

“Don’t worry. We are both at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm. And we are two people. It’s asking for death if that bastard tries to attack us. Hmm! Let us kill him soon so that we can leave! I have enough with this crazy place. I want women! Women!” The warrior named Zhen Tie seemed too eager for a woman that he began to shout in the woods.

“Yeah well... Miss Mo is a woman too...” That cautious warrior mocked in a low voice.

“Well, Miss Mo is a woman. But she is out of our league. I noticed that Master Karu went to Miss Mo quite a lot these days. Maybe he has a good chance. Look at Miss Mo; that face, that ass, hmm, let’s see which lucky bastard could get her. Our level is too low. There is not even a slightest hope in this life!”

Zhen Tie lowered his voice, wearing sinister smile on his face. He seemed to be having some fantasy. When it came to a joyful part, he straightened his body and laughed loudly.

“Stop daydreaming! Miss Mo is already engaged. That Ling Shaofeng is a very tough guy. If he knew you are fantasizing about her, you would be dead!”

Upon hearing Ling Shaofeng’s name, Zhen Tie looked panicked. He whispered, “That kid is too strange! I have heard that he has almost reached the Human Realm. I have seen him kill! He is unimaginably cruel! Even Master Karu would not escape if he

annoyed Ling Shaofeng. Seriously, we have to be careful. If he heard what we said...”

Zhen Tie shivered. Apparently he was too scared of Mo Yanyu’s fiancée.

With rigid faces, the two discussed Ling Shaofeng as they walked toward where Shi Yan was, not knowing that in the thick leaves above them, there was a bloody beast.

[1] Mortal, Profound, Spirit, Sacred and God: five grades of Martial skills.

Chapter 13 - Surprise Kill

Shi Yan couldn't control his bloodlust any more. He panted, suddenly jumping up from the thicket. His Profound Qi was flowing in his right arm like waves with a fierce and violent killing energy which was about to explode from the inside.

“Crap!”

The warrior who had been on alert suddenly paled, and screamed loudly for help. Landing on top of his head, Shi Yan started his strike like a sharp sword as his Profound Qi formed into a thick smog around his arm. Ahead of him, Shi Yan cast his Profound Qi out like a net, which tightly wrapped up the warrior's head in an instant.

In that moment, an intense wave of negative feelings, blended with endless resentment and desperation, suddenly rushed into his nose and mouth. The Mo family warrior felt like he was standing in the middle of a bloody ocean with thousands of evil spirits flying towards him, grabbing him with full force and tearing him apart. He couldn't move even if he tried to.

“Thump!”

Shi Yan's iron-like fist struck the warrior's skull with a mighty force. With a clear sound, the warrior's skull exploded; he didn't even get to scream before he breathed his last breath. All his Profound Qi rushed out and was directly absorbed into Shi Yan's meridians.

The other warrior named Zheng Tie, looked absolutely horrified and instantly set off his blue smoke bomb. The blue smoke bomb flew up into the sky and exploded with a shining blue light even brighter than the sun.

“Look! Over there!”

Seeing that blue light, Mo Yanyu suddenly got excited. She

turned around, and quickly flew towards that direction with no hesitation. Master Karu didn't move at first. He sneered for a moment, and then followed Mo Yanyu.

“You bastard! Let's see how you get away this time?” After releasing the blue smoke bomb, Zheng Tie was not as panicky as before. He stared at Shi Yan with burning eyes and sneered, “We have been looking for you all this time. Finally, you came out. This time, where can you run to?”

Shi Yan was breathing heavily. With the bloodlust becoming more and more concentrated in his eyes, Shi Yan could feel an endless urge for blood within his chest. That warrior's Profound Qi which flew into Shi Yan's body after he died had further fuelled this killing impulse within his body. It was as if there was a voice whispering into his ears, continuously encouraging him to indulge in his desire for blood.

Seeing that Shi Yan was just standing there panting, instead of making a move towards him, Zheng Tie felt a bit relieved. He kept his distance from Shi Yan and sneered, “Hey you, Miss Mo and Master Karu will be here in a moment. You are gonna die for sure!”

With a roar rising out of his throat, Shi Yan suddenly flew towards Zheng Tie, like a caged beast running wild. There was a beam of white smoke surrounding his right arm which looked just like a giant snake. The snake suddenly jumped out and came right towards Zheng Tie's neck.

Zheng Tie was already prepared. He didn't directly counter Shi Yan. Instead, he moved away from by a couple of meters.

However, that snake of white smoke was not that easy to get rid of. It kept chasing Zheng Tie as if it was alive. Even though Zheng Tie stepped back, it didn't give up and still followed him, intending to wrap around him like a cocoon.

Zheng Tie was a little surprised. He sniffed a little and started to cut the smoke snake with the sharp blade in his hands.

The white smoke snake was cut into half instantly. However, it didn't stop. The two parts of snake rose up and started to wrap around both of his arms. At that moment, two waves of evil spirits rushed into Zheng Tie's head. His body froze, both eyes filled with bloody scenes and creepy skeletons. He felt like he was suddenly deprived of all his power.

“Boom!”

Shi Yan arrived right in front of Zheng Tie and hit him in the face with all the force in his right fist. In just one hit, an ocean of bloody and turbulent Profound Qi exploded out of Shi Yan's fist and drilled straight into Zheng Tie's head.

With blood all over his face, as well as a terrified and unbelievable look in his eyes, Zheng Tie felt a chill running down his body and he collapsed face down on the ground. His Profound Qi flew out just like those dead warriors before him.

The bodies of the two warriors gradually turned into mummies, without a trace of blood on their faces, drained of all their Profound Qi.

Despite all the fierce bloodlust roaring in his mind, Shi Yan retain his rationale and carefully checked the belongings of those two dead warriors. He collected all the valuable food and crystal coins and climbed into the ancient tree like an agile monkey. He hid himself among those thick leaves and branches, and told himself to calm down, over and over again.

However, the crazy desire for blood was still there in his mind. Shi Yan sat there and started to operate his Profound Qi. The Profound Qi that had been flowing within his right arm a moment ago was gradually maneuvered into his abdomen and his right arm had returned to normal.

Shi Yan tried his best to control his breath and withdrew the flying evil spirits back into his body. The killing light gradually disappeared from his eyes. Through the thick leaves, Shi Yan

looked at the movement on the ground in full concentration.

Before long, a crowd started to gather under the tree. The first two were also warriors from the Mo family. Like Zheng Tie, they were also Elementary Realm Warriors that had reached the Second Sky, and couldn't push their Profound Qi out of their body yet. They looked alert after they arrived, and they kept looking around for traces of Shi Yan, afraid he might strike again.

After a while, Mo Yanyu and Master Karu arrived one after another. Mo Yanyu arrived first. She took a quick look at the two dried bodies lying on the ground, and said in a firm voice, "Yes! It was him!" A cold killing light started to spread within her eyes. She moved around, trying to find some trace of him. She started to study the leaves and branches, trying to figure out whether he had left or not.

Before, if Shi Yan tried to escape, he would have broken some branches of the tree, or left behind some heavy and messy footprints. In that short time, there was no way for him to cover his tracks.

Mo Yanyu was right about that.

But what a shame! Shi Yan hadn't left at all. He had been hiding in that ancient tree all along. Mo Yanyu searched everywhere, but couldn't find a thing. Her beautiful face held an ugly frown, "Damn it! Fucking hell! There is no trace of him at all!"

After Master Karu arrived, he looked around with his shrewd eyes and suddenly looked up and shouted, "You little shit! Come out of the tree now! You think you can get away with this again?"

Shi Yan was surprised by Master Karu's reaction. He couldn't help but lose his control. A freezing light flew out of his dark eyes, the killing desire that he had been suppressed inside of his body was unleashed!

"There you are!" Master Karu sneered and instantly summoned a

creepy grey bomb in his hands. The bomb was suddenly thrown towards Shi Yan's hiding place in a flash.

"You fucking asshole! Where can you hide this time?" Mo Yanyu put on a scary face and also struck the place where Shi Yan was hiding with her powerful [Green Lightning Kill], mixed with beams of electricity.

"Whoo!"

Shi Yan jumped out of the leaves. He didn't lay eyes on Mo Yanyu or Master Karu at all. Once he was out, he instantly ran for the next tree with the thickest leaves.

However, both Mo Yanyu and Master Karu were Warriors of the Nascent Realm, which was superior to Shi Yan's Elementary Realm. Unless Shi Yan attacked them by surprise, there was no way that Shi Yan could confront them face to face, to say nothing of one versus the two of them.

"Don't lose him!" With a loud shout, Mo Yanyu flew after Shi Yan, while the two warriors of the Mo family followed behind.

Master Karu didn't chase Shi Yan instantly. He watched the grey bomb completely destroy the tree branches where Shi Yan had been hiding, waved his hand, and summoned that creepy grey bomb back into his palm. He sneered again and then followed Mo Yanyu at the speed of light.

The two warriors of the Mo family were soon left behind. Mo Yanyu and Master Karu were chasing Shi Yan one after another. They were soon closing in.

"Boom!"

A bright blue light ball suddenly exploded right in front of Mo Yanyu and Master Karu, with the shining blue light almost blinding the two of them. Mo Yanyu and Master Karu were too busy following Shi Yan to pay attention to their surroundings, and were instantly surprised and blinded by the shining flash of the

blue light. They collided into two giant trees. Before they could regain their eyesight, Shi Yan was already miles away.

“A blue smoke bomb! Damn it!” Mo Yanyu shouted and continued to chase Shi Yan with an angry face.

Master Karu was apparently irritated too. He swore something and suddenly flew ahead of Mo Yanyu. This time, he was not holding back his real power. “Fucking asshole! This time, I’m gonna make you beg for mercy!”

“Boom!”

Another blue smoke bomb exploded in front of him. But this time, Master Karu was prepared. He closed his eyes just in time and continued to chase Shi Yan after the bright flash of that blue smoke bomb faded away.

As a Warrior of the Nascent Realm, Master Karu’s power was way above that of Shi Yan’s. He flew just like a wind, as fast as lightning. After the second blue smoke bomb, he soon closed the gap between him and Shi Yan.

The grey bomb! Master Karu summoned another grey bomb inside his palm. He put on an evil face and lifted his hands when he was about 20 meters away from Shi Yan. Boom! That grey bomb was cast out just like a cannonball, heading straight at the back of Shi Yan.

“Boom!”

Shi Yan released another blue smoke bomb. The blue smoke bomb and that grey bomb crashed into each other and exploded, releasing bright green light which covered the whole sky. The green light fell onto the forest and started a wildfire.

Thanks to that blue smoke bomb, Shi Yan had won some time to escape. He kept running like hell. Once he sensed that Master Karu was closing in on him, he would release a blue smoke bomb that he had taken from the warriors before, and buy himself some time to

run away.

But finally, Shi Yan had run out of all the blue smoke bombs in his hands. At that moment, he suddenly felt a strange warm stream of energy flowing throughout his body from his meridians. The Profound Qi he had extracted from those two dead warriors had been purified by his body and become part of his own Profound Qi within his abdomen, enhancing his power to the next level.

Instantly, Shi Yan turned around, and started running towards Master Karu as if he were crazy!

Master Karu put a creepy sneer on his face again. He did not panic at all. He slowly operated the Profound Qi inside his body, preparing his plan. Within seconds, his whole body was covered with a layer of dark light, half a metre thick.

He was using Profound Qi to protect his body!

Shi Yan was a little shocked, but he didn't slow down because of this. Even with his Profound Qi concentrated within his left hand, Shi Yan didn't release it up front. He held his iron-like fist like a sharp knife, and stuck it right at Master Karu's stomach.

With the look of contempt in his eyes, Master Karu didn't move at all, as if he was waiting for Shi Yan's strike.

“Boom!”

With one hit on the layer of dark light covering Master Karu's body, Shi Yan felt like he was hitting a layer of cotton. He only hit the layer of dark light, he could not hurt Master Karu's body at all.

“Hmph! You low-grade Elementary Realm Warrior! Wanna break my [Dark Light Shield]? It's not that easy!” Master Karu sneered, and with a wave, a grey bomb sped out of his palms, right at Shi Yan's chest.

Shi Yan was struck instantly. With an intense wave of power storming into his chest, Shi Yan flew backwards, his mouth filled

with blood. He could even hear the sound of his bones crushing inside his chest.

Falling on the ground, Shi Yan felt like his whole body had shattered, and felt an unbearable pain all over. His mouth was filled with blood.

“You have no idea who you are dealing with,” Master Karu shook his head, and slowly walked towards Shi Yan with a dark face, “You boy, come back to be my medicine slave. Don’t ever attempt to run away again. You should know that I didn’t strike you with my full power. Otherwise, you would have been dead already.”

“Again!”

Shi Yan stood up. He wiped the blood from his lips, and rushed towards Master Karu again with a terrifying look in his eyes.

“Hmm! You wanna die? Sure!” Master Karu laughed like crazy. This time, he didn’t hide either, and activated his [Dark Light Shield] again. His entire body was instantly covered by a shining dark light.

Shi Yan held up his right fist and rushed towards Master Karu, as if he wanted to try the same attack as last time. Master Karu sneered, “Come on boy, you are certainly looking for death this time!”

As Shi Yan was rushing forward, something strange suddenly happened to his right hand. Before he hit Master Karu’s [Dark Light Shield], a layer of white light appeared around his right fist. A strong wave of negative energy, combined with desperation, fear and a killing lust, rushed out together instantly.

Master Karu became anxious. However, it was already too late for him to make any contingency plans.

The next moment, a terrifying storm of horrifying negative desires, filled with craziness and desperation, struck Master Karu’s [Dark Light Shield]. The [Dark Light Shield], that was more than

capable of defending from a full strength strike from an Elementary Realm Warrior, shattered into pieces within seconds. The evil spirits entangled around Shi Yan's right fist smashed right through Master Karu's body, storming through into his body like a wild wave.

Under the influence of that overwhelming killing power, Master Karu's mind, as well as his body, was completely frozen. He had absolutely no time to react or prepare his defense.

Shi Yan took out the dagger that he had been hiding in his left sleeve and swiped right across Master Karu's neck. A hot wave of blood streamed out of Karu's neck, splashing all over Shi Yan's body.

A head flew up into the air and fell onto the ground three meters away.

The Profound Qi inside Master Karu's body was now running wild. Mixed with all those terrifying thoughts inside Master Karu's mind right before his last breath, his Profound Qi was now flowing into Shi Yan's meridians with an unstoppable force.

Shi Yan could clearly feel the strong energy within this unique wave of Profound Qi. His whole body trembled slightly with excitement.

Different from previous warriors like Zheng Tie, Master Karu was a Nascent Realm Warrior. The Profound Qi inside his body was much thicker and more concentrated. The Profound Qi that Shi Yan got from him after his death was way more powerful than what he got from the previous warriors. Shi Yan was standing still. He couldn't move at all. It took him almost a minute to absorb all the Profound Qi inside Master Karu's body.

After taking off the only bag that Master Karu had on him, Shi Yan felt like his whole body was aching, as if he had lost all the power in his arms and legs, especially his right arm, which he had used for his previous attacks. He couldn't use any strength in his

right arm, as if this was the consequence he had to face after such an intense attack which had caused some backlash in his body.

“Don’t let him get away!”

Not far behind, he could hear the shouting and screaming of Mo Yanyu. Although the several blue smoke bombs Shi Yan had set off had successfully slowed her down, she had managed to catch up after a couple of minutes.

It seemed that she wasn’t alone. Chasing along with her, were a few warriors from the Mo family.

At the moment, Shi Yan could feel that some energy within his body was caged for the moment, so he didn’t want to fight against Mo Yanyu or those warriors directly. Shi Yan took Master Karu’s backpack, jumped into the thick bushes, and started running like hell once again.

Chapter 14 - Music from the Heaven

Mo Yanyu suddenly stopped.

The four warriors from the Mo family, who followed her out of the thick forest, were filled with a heavy look on their face.

On the ground, lied Master Karu's corpse which was still warm. However, the corpse had already been deprived of all its Profound Qi, and lay there dry as a mummy.

Looking at the scene, all four warriors stood by Mo Yanyu's side with terror in their eyes. One of them came up to Mo Yanyu after some hesitation, and said "Miss Mo..."

Mo Yanyu was trembling. After a while, she replied with a frown, "Stop the chase."

"But Miss..." The warrior wanted to add something.

"Master Karu had already achieved the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm, the same level as me. Moreover, he had far more fighting experience than me." Mo Yanyu shook her head with a hopeless look, "I don't know how he killed Master Karu. But this means that he is capable of killing any of us right now. If we keep chasing him, we probably won't even be able to make it back to the Merchant Union."

"So we just let him go like this? Miss Mo, we have spent a lot of money in order to get Master Karu to work for us!" That warrior said in a low voice.

"So Li Tian, if we don't give up, can you come up with a better idea?"

That warrior suddenly went silent.

Mo Yanyu kneeled down beside the cold corpse of Master Karu. She searched through his body and cursed in a low voice, "Shit! That bastard has taken everything from Master Karu, all the

medicine and medical books. This time we are literally here for nothing.”

All the other four warriors went silent together; they didn't dare to say anything.

“Go back to Johnson! From now on, we must act in groups. No individual movement is allowed!” Mo Yanyu took a deep breath. Then, she stood up and turned back to the way they came. From that moment, she hated Shi Yan's guts.

...

On the other side, Shi Yan was still running for his life in the Dark Forest.

The bloodthirst was still running wild inside his body. It was devouring his consciousness bit by bit. The negative energy of madness, brutality and bloodthirst was invading his mind uncontrollably. Gradually, his sight blacked out and his body felt on the verge of a breakdown from the wild energy.

At that moment, he was extremely weak and tired. He couldn't gather any strength in his arms or legs. He must avoid a fight with anyone. Otherwise, he would be dead for sure.

Shi Yan wasn't sure how long he could hold on. He never expected his body to react in such a strange way, so he had made no contingency plans.

“Boom!”

The wild bloodthirst inside his mind finally exploded. Shi Yan was panting heavily as he totally lost his sight. There was only one voice in his head, whispering, repeating the same word, “Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!”

Shi Yan knew that before long, he will have lost all his sanity, and become a mindless bloodthirsty beast. He would be filled with the intent to kill.

A beautiful music suddenly flew into Shi Yan's ears from a distance. The music was like water drops falling onto a jade plate, like the wind shuttling through a silk curtain. It was as soft as a bird flapping its wings, as light as a gentle stream flowing through a quiet forest. The music was so beautiful, so peaceful, as if it flew down from Heaven.

The beautiful music was like a soft hand soothing his heart. It had taken away all his bloody and crazy desire. Slowly, it also helped Shi Yan regain his sanity, which was on the brink of breakdown.

Thanks to that soft and soothing music, Shi Yan gradually regained his sanity before he lost his mind. He slowly walked in the direction of that music with an intoxicated look on his face. He felt like his whole body was soaking in that beautiful music, and all the bloodlust inside his body had totally disappeared.

In a small valley full of unique flowers and special plants, Shi Yan saw a beautiful figure playing the zither. She was just sitting cross-legged in the middle of the flowers. She slightly lowered her head and was completely putting herself into the music, unaware of Shi Yan's presence.

Shi Yan moved closer and closer and stopped around 100 meters away from her back. He stood there and was flabbergasted with the beautiful figure in front of him. He stood there with closed eyes, trying to immerse himself in the beautiful sound of zither.

After a while, the sound of zither gradually slowed down, and finally stopped.

Shi Yan felt awakened from a pleasant dream. He found that his anger and bloodlust were completely gone, as if they had never existed!

However, his body still felt heavy. The intense pain in his chest was especially intense. It seemed that he was still suffering from that blow from Master Karu. Shi Yan concentrated his attention

and could feel the flowing Profound Qi within his meridians. He could sense that his body was still processing the Profound Qi that he had absorbed from Master Karu.

The beautiful figure at distance slowly turned around with an ancient zither in her hands. She slightly frowned and looked straight at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan couldn't help but tremble. His eyes were staring at the beautiful girl in front of him unceasingly. "So beautiful!" He unconsciously blurted out.

That girl was around 18 or 19 years old, dressed in a white overskirt. Her eyes were sparkling, her teeth were gleaming, her skin was soft and smooth, and her figure was delicate and slim. She could be described as a beautiful goddess from Heaven, but at the same time, also as the cute girl that lived next door. She was so perfect. Shi Yan couldn't tell who was more beautiful, Mo Yanyu, or the girl in front of him.

The lovely girl gave Shi Yan a single glance. She then turned around in silence and walked slowly towards the little creek hundreds of meters away with the zither in her hands.

Shi Yan couldn't help admiring the beautiful women in this world. Overall, he had only met two women in this world, but they were both so breathtaking, like one in a million.

"Miss! Thanks a lot for your beautiful music. Can I..." Seeing the girl was walking away from him, Shi Yan couldn't help but shout.

"Hey, stop it! Enough is enough."

Suddenly, a strong figure jumped from the giant ancient tree in front of Shi Yan. It was a middle-aged man with a hairy yellow face. He was wearing a grey-brown warrior's outfit. He looked very tall and strong with a huge sword on his shoulder. But he didn't look very serious, just standing in front of Shi Yan, looking at him with a weird smile on his face.

No doubt, Shi Yan was caught off guard. He instantly put on alert. Just by looking at him, he could clearly sense a terrifying energy from this yellow-faced man in front of him.

It didn't take him long to understand that this yellow-faced man was definitely a warrior way above his level. The yellow-faced man was just looking at him, not intentionally releasing any energy to pressure him at all, but Shi Yan already felt like he was as untouchable as a steady mountain.

Shi Yan took a step back, showing that he didn't come with any evil thoughts. Then he faked a smile and said, "The music that the beautiful miss played was so enchanting. I just can't get enough. I stayed just to listen to more of her music, nothing else. Don't worry."

To Shi Yan, this girl had the most magical music skills. Her beautiful music could apparently help him control the bloody desire within his mind. Shi Yan was not sure when this craving for blood inside of him would come back again. Therefore, he was desperate to find something to help him control this ugly desire inside him body.

"I can tell that you are just a lustful guy, nothing else. Otherwise, I wouldn't have let you live until now." The yellow-faced man laughed, and said in a relaxed mood, "But here is not the place for you to be lustful. I suggest you get the hell away from us. Otherwise you will be in a lot of trouble."

"OK, as you wish." Shi Yan lifted both hands to show cooperation. He didn't stay any longer. However, he took a glance at that beautiful figure in distance before turning around and leaving.

...

"Uncle Luo, I sensed a strong evil spirit in that man. Back then, his whole body was filled with a killing desire and he almost went berserk. However, after his bloodlust faded away, he dared to take

such a lustful look at me. I guess he shouldn't belong to the Dark World." Mu Yu Die said with mild discomfort when she recalled Shi Yan's lustful look at her.

That man... it seemed that he could never hide his desire from within.

Although there were other men who also wanted her, they would at least do it in secret or cover up their desires when they laid eyes on her. They wouldn't expose their dirty thoughts to the world. However, that guy... he didn't even try to cover up his lust for her in his eyes. What she saw in his eyes was a simple and straightforward desire.

"He can't be from the Dark World. The assassins sent by the Dark World were all Warriors of the Nascent Realm, but that guy was still an Elementary Realm Warrior." Luo Hao laughed and said, "But interesting though, that guy was not even a Nascent Realm Warrior, but dare to dream about our beautiful princess who has already achieved the Third Sky. This guy has some balls. Haha!"

"Ah, I am still not sure when I can recover. Currently, I am powerless." Mu Yu Die slightly sighed with her heart filled with sorrow, "Uncle Luo, if the assassins did come and you couldn't defeat them, please just leave me behind. I... can rely on myself."

"What is this nonsense?!" Hearing this, Luo Hao was apparently not very happy. He said with a firm voice, "We are not far away from the Merchant Union right now. If we can survive the next few weeks, one month at most, we can definitely get out of this Dark Forest. Once we reach the Merchant Union, the Dark World can't do anything to hurt us."

"Gu! Gu!"

With a strange whistle from the distance. Before long, two men and a woman who dressed like a mercenary came out of the forest with a heavy look. The leader came up to Luo Hao and said, "Sorry Uncle Luo, we couldn't keep up with the trackers from the Dark

World.”

Luo Hao nodded, and said with a frown, “We must set out right now and choose a new location to rest. Otherwise, the assassins from the Dark World will soon find and surround us.”

The five of them did not stay for long. They quickly packed their stuff and left in a hurry.

...

Right after Shi Yan left the girl, the craving for blood slowly rose up again in his mind.

This unstoppable desire for blood may have something to do with the Profound Qi that Shi Yan got from Master Karu. Because Master Karu had the power of a Nascent Realm Warrior, his Profound Qi was mixed with too much negative energy. Therefore, it would take Shi Yan much more time and effort to purify his Profound Qi. While his meridians were processing Master Karu’s Profound Qi, these annoying negative energies would spill over from time to time and ignite his crazy desire for blood from inside his body.

But that girl’s music could help him control those wild desires, so he didn’t lose his sanity and fall into an abyss of craziness and chaos back then. However, his meridians were still working on purifying Master Karu’s Profound Qi. Until this process was completed, there was a pretty good chance that Shi Yan would fall into that bloody, crazy state again.

Before his body finished the purification of Master Karu’s Profound Qi, that beautiful girl could definitely be his cure to stay sane.

Knowing that another bloody urge was slowly creeping up on him, Shi Yan was overwhelmed by a bad feeling. After some hesitation, he still started walking towards that girl’s direction.

Only the beautiful music of that girl could help him to calm

down. And only by following her steps, could Shi Yan get the chance to hear that Heaven-like sound again.

Chapter 15 - Promoting to Nascent-Level Warrior

“Uncle Luo, there’s someone following us!” One among the group of mercenaries said to their leader with a low voice, “It must be that scout sent by the Dark World.”

That mercenary had a young handsome face. He looked like 25-26 years old, and was already 1.85 meters tall, with a strong and slim figure. He was a Nascent realm Warrior who had already reached the Third Sky. His eyes were shining with energy and was always on alert. Just from a simple glance, Shi Yan knew that he was an excellent warrior.

“No, he is not from the Dark World. He is just a horny little stalker; so shameless. No need to pay attention to him.” Luo Hao shook his head, and said with a frown, “Let’s hurry. Just leave him alone.”

Zhao Xin didn’t look happy about this, and said with a cold voice, “Is he after Miss Mu? How dare he! Shall I wait here to teach him a lesson?” While he was talking, he gave a caring look at the delicate girl named Mu Yu Die, who was leaning on Luo Hao.

“No, don’t make any trouble if it’s not necessary.” Luo Hao shook his head again, and asked the girl in a soft voice, “Die, are you ok with this? Shall we speed up a little bit?”

Mu Yu Die was looking very pale, and was perspiring heavily. She smiled politely, “Yes, I can hold on. We could go faster. Maybe it would be better if we leave that man behind. Otherwise, he will also be killed by those assassins sent by the Dark World.”

Luo Hao couldn’t help but sigh, feeling pity for this kind-hearted girl. He nodded to her and said, “Die, don’t use any more of your Profound Qi. I am here for you to lean on.”

After saying that, Luo Hao held the shoulders of Mu Yu Die as if

she were a delicate flower, and ran between the trees in the forest with ease. When he was about to land on the ground, he would control his mighty body to just slightly touch the ground before jumping up again. There were no footprints left behind him. Obviously, he was a first-class master at manoeuvring his Profound Qi.

...

On the other side, Shi Yan was struggling very hard with such a march. It was becoming more and more difficult for him to breathe.

The desire for blood had been killing him all the way. His body was also aching from the intense blow from Master Karu. Due to the intense fight he just had, Shi Yan suffered a severe loss of Profound Qi, which couldn't be restored within a short period of time.

Under these circumstances, if he ever encountered Mo Yanyu again, there was no doubt that he would be dead. Therefore, he had no choice but to recover as soon as possible and control his own body which had gone wild.

The beautiful music of that girl was indeed his only hope.

He didn't care whether that girl liked him or not. Shi Yan felt like he didn't have a choice. Even if she thought that he was a shameless bastard, let it be! He would always follow her steps, as long as she would play that enchanting music again.

Shi Yan tried to control his growing urge for murder and had an evil look on his face, Shi Yan moved most of his Profound Qi, which was not much, to his legs, and tried his best to keep up with the five people ahead of him.

Shi Yan completely cleared his mind and became more focused than ever. The only goal that he had in his mind was to keep up with those people. Once he cleared his thoughts, he felt this march

not as hard as before.

...

“Uncle Luo, I cannot believe that guy was just an Elementary Realm Warrior!” In midst of their rapid movement, Zhao Xin suddenly said with surprise.

Luo Hao was also wondering. According to his knowledge, a warrior of the Elementary Realm shouldn't be able to keep up with their speed. Although they had successfully distanced themselves from the man behind, they never managed to ditch him. That man must have some endurance to keep him chasing all the way. This made Luo Hao a little curious, making him wonder whether he had underestimated this warrior the previous time they met.

“Uncle Luo, I can keep up. You could speed up a little.” Mu Yu Die said with pain and a layer of sweat on her face.

“No, if we go any faster, you would get hurt.” Luo Hao stubbornly refused. He said in a low voice with a frown, “Don't pay too much attention to the man behind. He is looking for death. If he dies, it is not our fault.”

“Awwoo!”

As they spoke, a loud roaring as horrifying as that of a wild beast came from behind, which was apparently from Shi Yan. However, that roaring didn't sound human at all. It was filled with craziness and an evil craving for blood and killing, making anybody who had heard it tremble inside.

“Is this guy human or not?!” The hot female mercenary named Di Yalan couldn't help but tremble, and said with a scared look in her eyes, “How could any human make such a terrifying sound? This is even more terrifying than the roaring of a demon beast that had gone crazy.”

“The crazy craving inside his body is eating him up again.” Luo Hao started to look nervous, and said quickly, “Stay away from

him! Otherwise, he might attack us. He has already gone crazy. It's not very difficult to kill him, but it might waste our precious time to escape. The unnecessary fight will certainly draw the attention of those Dark World's assassins, and we would be in a lot of trouble..."

"Just let me help him. Otherwise he will become a crazy monster that only knows to kill, and would start a bloody war in this dark forest." Mu Yu Die said after a little hesitation, and unwrapped the zither that she had been carrying. Despite the dissuasion of Luo Hao and the other warriors, she sat down with her legs crossed and started to play a song.

Luo Hao stepped hard on the ground with anger, "He is such a bastard! He is not at all worthy of your help!"

The mesmerising sound of the zither flowed through the Dark Forest like a gentle stream, right towards Shi Yan, as if it was specifically meant for him.

With both of his eyes turning crimson, Shi Yan was on the brink of going crazy, almost losing to that murderous rage. Hearing the familiar music, he was suddenly awakened. With a light flashing through his eyes, he just stood there like completely lost in that beautiful music.

A trace of the negative energy combined with desperation and fear slowly drifted out of his body and started to surround him like a light mist. It felt like millions of tornados in each of his seven hundred and twenty meridians and he could feel the unique energy that he got from Master Karu being purified and concentrated over and over again.

After a while, Shi Yan's eyes gradually returned to normal, and he began to regain the look of a sane man. At that moment, he realized that this was all due to the generous help of that beautiful girl. She had saved him again!

With deep gratitude in his heart, Shi Yan sat down right where

he was. He put his heart and soul into this beautiful music and started to operate his Profound Qi inside his body without a second thoughts. Immersing in this soothing music, he started to relax.

Right in the middle of this dark forest, filled with all kinds of unexpected danger, Shi Yan managed to enter the world of the Selfless State.

He didn't remember how long it took before he awoke. The mist wrapping around him had already been absorbed into his own body, and under his guidance, flew through the different meridians inside his body.

Suddenly, thousands of warm but strange streams of energy spilled over from all the meridians in his body and started to propel his Profound Qi through his veins.

Shi Yan couldn't help but tremble. He could clearly feel his Profound Qi compressing and strengthening with an amazing speed!

Within seconds, he could feel his Profound Qi became five or six times stronger, and it was more concentrated than before!

His strengthened Profound Qi suddenly started to gather in his abdomen, and filled his entire body with power. Realizing that he must have finally purified all the Profound Qi that he got from Master Karu, Shi Yan was overwhelmed.

Shi Yan slowed his breathing and concentrated all his energy in operating all his Profound Qi towards his twelve Major Veins and eight Special Veins.

The Profound Qi stormed through his entire body like a raging flood. Shi Yan was able to unblock all his congested veins, albeit suffering from intense pain. He felt as if his shoulders were finally able to relax.

Now that his Profound Qi had become stronger than ever, he felt like he had unlimited potential.

The sun had already set, and the moon was shining brightly in the starry sky.

With the last of his veins cleared, Shi Yan was very excited. He was trying very hard to contain his exuberance, while operating the Profound Qi in a cycle throughout the body.

When his cycle was finally over, Shi Yan felt like he was waking up from a very long dream. He looked up at all the shining stars in the sky, feeling nothing but unparalleled happiness.

Now that he had broken through all the veins in his body, he could be said to have promoted to the Nascent Realm.

From the Profound Qi that he got from Master Karu, and through the incidents when he almost lost his mind and went crazy with bloodlust, he had finally purified all the power he got from Master Karu and broke through all his veins with the newly purified and concentrated Profound Qi. Now he had finally entered into a whole new level!

After purification of all the energy he got from Master Karu, the bloodlust that had once tangled his mind had suddenly vanished.

Now that he thought about it, Shi Yan realized that every time after absorbing the Profound Qi from the dead, and until the Profound Qi was completely purified by his meridians, there would always be some negative energy spilling over from his meridians, which would trigger the darker side of himself and drive him into a state of insanity.

Because the first few victims of him were just Elementary Realm Warriors with moderate energy, he could still control the negative desires.

But Master Karu was a Nascent Realm Warrior, with the power far beyond Shi Yan's league. There was too much negative energy within Master Karu's Profound Qi. Therefore, that time Shi Yan couldn't control the negative energy, and almost lost his sanity.

Right now, since he had fully purified the Profound Qi that he got from Master Karu and entered a completely new level, Shi Yan didn't need to worry about the eruption of the evil power anymore.

“Kaka!”

Shi Yan stretched his body a little and stood up slowly. He was feeling completely refreshed. The broken bones in his chest also seemed to have recovered.

Shi Yan checked his body for wounds, but found them all healed. This made him extremely happy.

He knew that his speedy recovery was not only due to his promotion, but also had something to do with his Immortal Martial Spirit.

Right before losing himself to the music, he had felt the cells near his chest wounds repairing and beginning to heal.

Looking around, Shi Yan realized that the location he was in was completely exposed, with no tree cover or shade. Realizing that he had been operating his Profound Qi here, forgetting everything around him, Shi Yan felt lucky that nothing unexpected had happened to him.

By practicing his Profound Qi in such an exposed location, had Mo Yanyu still been looking for him, he would have definitely been captured by her.

At present, that mesmerising music was long gone. He remembered the sky was still bright when he fell under the effects of music, however, now it was already midnight. He must have been practicing for a long time without realizing. He felt immense gratitude towards that beautiful girl. She had saved him more than once. The first time she might have saved him unintentionally, but the second time, it was specifically for him.

Based on the discussion he overheard from the five people, Shi

Yan realized that they were being chased by someone. However, he didn't think too much and decided to continue following them.

He didn't like owing favors, and so he decided to pay back the girl's kindness in his own way.

Chapter 16 - Treasure

Beside the small gentle stream, the Ground Dragon was drinking water quietly, its robust body covered with scales.

Mo Yanyu was sitting upright in a sedan high on the dragon and playing with a blue smoke bomb in her hand, lost in thought.

Recently, she was haunted by Shi Yan. Every time she remembered the cold decisiveness in Shi Yan's eyes, she became restless. How she wished she could catch him and ruin his veins and bones.

Given Master Karu's death, she had already released the medicine slaves who were of no use now.

With her were eleven warriors from the Mo family who were only of the Elementary Realm. Their power was insufficient to help Mo Yanyu search for Shi Yan. As such, she could only wait for the relief troops from the family.

All of a sudden, a pale blue light shot up across the sky some five miles ahead.

"They have arrived!" Mo Yanyu's spirit rose. She immediately threw the blue smoke bomb up into the sky, and thus the same pale blue light was seen above her.

The warriors around the Ground Dragon rejoiced with a lively outburst of happiness as if they were getting ready for a fight.

In less than a quarter of an hour, three dark shadows showed up from afar and flew in their direction. The first of them had a graceful beard and wore an indifferent smile. He approached near Mo Yanyu and laughed loudly. "Yanyu, where is Master Karu?"

"Third uncle, Master Karu is dead." Mo Yanyu explained in a very unwilling manner, "We met a thief mid-way. He was only Elementary ranked, but he still was able to kill Master Karu. I just can't figure it out."

Mo Chaoge's smile disappeared at once and his face turned pale: "Have you got the thing that was on Karu?"

Mo Yan Yu shook her head, "It was taken by that thief."

"Stupid!"

Mo Chaoge cursed in a low voice. With a cold face, he observed: "We received information that Karu had stolen an incomplete picture of the 'Gate of Heaven' from his teacher. His teacher, Mu Xun, is looking for him everywhere for that incomplete picture. It is said, in the God Area where the Gate of Heaven leads to, are Martial Skills of the Spirit and even Sacred level! I came here in a hurry with two escorts just for that incomplete picture! But you let him die! How stupid!"

"What!" Mo Yan Yu was shocked, "How could that be!"

"Why would Karu leave Medicine Valley with you if he hadn't stolen that valuable map from his teacher? You think he was attracted by the wealth of Mo family? Humph. He was attempting to get shelter in the Merchant Union, so that his teacher Mu Xun couldn't kill him. "

Mo Chaoge thought for a second seriously and reproached, "Tell me the details. That man must be still in the Dark Forest. We have to find him! The picture means a lot. We, the Mo family, have to get it! "

Mo Yanyu started to realize how bad the situation was. She told him all the details, except that she was violated by Shi Yan twice.

"Dumbass!" Mo Chaoge scolded again. He flew into a rage, "You didn't keep tracking him? That bastard is only of the Elementary Realm! No matter how he killed Karu, he must have paid a significant price. He might have been hurt too. If you had chased him you could have killed him easily! Too dumb!"

"I was afraid that we would lose more, so..." Mo Yanyu lowered her head in shame.

“An Elementary Realm guy, and you were afraid of him?” Mo Chaoge was annoyed, “You wasted so many resources of our Mo family! What are you doing now? Show me the way! You! You! You! Bring the Ground Dragon back to the Merchant Union through the secure route. Others! Follow me and search!”

They looked for Shi Yan for two days but still found nothing.

Under the moonlight, Shi Yan was leaning against an ancient tree and deep in thought. He had decided to stop the chase for the time being.

He took off Karu’s bag from his back and opened it to look into the contents.

Inside the bag was a volume on poisons, several bottles of poison refined by Karu, and two Mortal level Martial Skill books: [Dark Light Shield] and [Black Formula].

Apart from those things, there a dark yellow, incomplete picture, on which were painted two hills. Shi Yan studied it for two days but found nothing, so he didn’t take it seriously.

Of the two Martial Skills, to train [Black Formula], required a collection of Black Qi first. Thinking hard for two days, Shi Yan didn’t come up with any idea of where he could find Black Qi, and so he soon forgot about it.

Fortunately, the other Martial Skill, [Dark Light Shield], didn’t require anything special. One simply needed to operate his Profound Qi according to the meridian map.

Shi Yan took out the book on [Dark Light Shield] from the bag and started to train in it. He was determined to learn that skill and thus made every effort in remembering the mnemonics of the skill.

[Dark Light Shield] was a defensive Martial Skill. It used Profound Qi to form a layer of dark light around one’s body in order to defend from an enemy’s assault. It was just a Mortal level

Martial Skill and needed no requirements but one; the flow of Profound Qi.

Shi Yan packed the bag and observed the surroundings for a while. Assured that it was safe, he quietly climbed up a tree behind him, hid himself in the thickets, and started to train the [Dark Light Shield].

After reaching the Nascent Realm, his veins were as smooth as silk. Once he thought of moving his Profound Qi, it would immediately flow into the veins.

Sitting in meditation, Shi Yan operated his Profound Qi quietly and trained according to the meridian map for [Dark Light Shield].

The Profound Qi flew around his body like a gentle stream in a controlled manner. At once, Shi Yan sped up the circulation of his Profound Qi.

“Pump!”

Suddenly a hazy black light started emitting from Shi Yan. It gradually started forming a layer over his whole body. Shi Yan was quite sure that he was training in the correct way, so he once again accelerated the Profound Qi.

The black light emitting his body began to grow in intensity. At first it was only half a metre, then it formed a one metre thick layer, exactly the same as Karu’s.

A long time passed. Shi Yan exhaled a mixed breath and opened his eyes leisurely. The Profound Qi in him had already finished six big circulations.

Success!

Shi Yan smiled. He found that it was very easy to train in the [Dark Light Shield].

In merely one night, he had grasped the essential part of this Martial Skill. With his Profound Qi growing, he only needed to

accelerate its circulation and his defense would increase greatly.

Up in the sky. The moon had disappeared. Dawn was coming near.

Shi Yan was not in a hurry to leave. He calmed his mind and tried to operate the Profound Qi for a second time. The Profound Qi flew toward his left arm. Once it arrived at the first meridian, Shi Yan had another thought and his Profound Qi promptly started rotating in that meridian.

After three breaths, Shi Yan changed his mind again. Immediately, the Profound Qi flew backwards and he felt a splitting pain in that vein!

It's was the phenomenon that occurred while training [Rampage].

Enduring the pain in his arm, Shi Yan continued to circulate his Profound Qi. He tried again as he according the process he previously followed in his right arm.

The muscles in the left arm began to contract, and slowly became dry and thin. Thin white fog was coming out of his left arm...

In the white fog was a mix of negative feelings such as fear, cruelty and despair, which had the weird power of bewildering people's minds. The negative feelings sourced from the meridians in the left arm and were temporarily bound by the fog. Once he fought with others, they would leak out of his arm directly.

The sun was hanging high in the sky.

Shi Yan was sweating all over while fully concentrating on his left arm. His left arm was covered with a heavy fog which was sending out a putrid smell. Shi Yan was then filled with a desire for murder.

“Hooo, hooo...”

Shi Yan was trying very hard to control his desire. He withdrew

the Profound Qi in his arm little by little, back into his abdomen. Therefore, his arm gradually went back to normal, and the white fog around it began to drift back into his meridians through his veins, till none of it remained around his arm.

Shi Yan leaned against the tree trunk with a deathly pale face. Exhausted, he was drowned in mixed feelings.

This Martial Skill [Rampage] was able to induce all the negative energy in his meridians, though the negative energy would also disturb his mind. This Martial Skill was a double-edged sword in battle, which would make him lose his mind. It did bring a warrior enormous power, but it was at the same time very dangerous.

Nevertheless, Shi Yan remembered when [Rampage] broke Karu's [Dark Light Shield], and the odd state of Karu when his brain was invaded by the negative energy. Shi Yan thus made up his mind to train this vicious Martial Skill with his whole body. He wanted to know what would happen to his body when all the negative power within his all meridians was induced.

He had this vague thought that as long as he finished training the first sky of [Rampage], his body would have a major shift and that his strength would surge by two times.

“Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!” There came a sound of someone approaching from afar.

Shi Yan frowned, and slowed his breathing. He then started observing his surroundings.

Not before long, seven shadows, each of whom were wearing a grey gown and a pale mask, stopped under the ancient tree, seeming to be waiting for something.

On the shoulders of six of those seven men, were signs of silver stars, while on the last one's shoulder, was a sign of silver crescent.

“Woon! Woon!” A weird sound came from the grove ahead, sounding like a communication signal.

Under the ancient tree, the tall, thin man with the crescent on his shoulder had a cold look in his eyes. He listened to the surroundings for five seconds and remarked, “According to the secret message, they have been spotted in a valley twenty miles away. Now chase after them!”

The troop of seven people passed rapidly.

Ten seconds after they left, Shi Yan stuck his head out of the leaves. After thinking for a while, he jumped down the tree and followed after them secretly.

Chapter 17 - Ten Times of Gravity

The serene valley was now filled with broken weapons. Luo Hao, Zhao Xin and other men were encircling Mu Yu Die, defending against the fierce attacks of those from the Dark World.

The tall, thin man in a grey gown, on whose shoulder was an embroidered silver crescent, was directing his eight subordinates to encircle the four of them. The eyes were cold and ghastly under their pale masks.

“Miss Mu, you’d better come back with us to the Lord of the Dark World, or we don’t know what we will do to you.” The tall, thin man in grey gown, seemingly the leader, remarked coldly as he was directing his people.

Disgusted, Mu Yu Die shook her head and said firmly, “I would rather die than go back with you guys!”

“So you have decided not to cooperate, Miss Mu. Then I’m very sorry if my people catch you.” Pausing for a second, the man grinned, “Luo Hao! You should know how powerful our Dark World is! If you go against us, you are bringing about your own destruction!”

“Haha!” Luo Hao burst into laughter. His voice was resonant. “I’m always alone. To kill me, you Dark World would have to pay a lot. You are a Dark Moon emissary of the Dark World, with the power of the Second Sky of the Disaster Realm. It’s enough to bring you with me when I die!”

“Do you think you even deserve that type of death?!” That emissary shook his head, and vanished into thin air.

The next moment, he was standing three metres in front of Luo Hao. He stretched out his left hand, his five fingers shaped like a claw; between them glowed a ghost-like green light, which suddenly flew toward Luo Hao, and started to twine about him like

a ribbon.

“The [Green Claw]!” Luo Hao’s facial expression changed a bit. He uttered calmly, “Zhao Xin, you three! Protect Die!”

“Boom boom boom!”

Luo Hao’s heart was beating several times faster than before! Around him, the power of gravity surged ten times!

All of a sudden, the eight men surrounding Luo Hao’s group felt an immense pressure, as if they were being pressed down by a huge mountain. The pressure almost made them kneel on the ground. Even the Crescent emissary was affected. However, he grunted and said, “Luo Hao, what a surprise! Your [Gravity Art] is truly at an advanced level!! Ten times gravity! No wonder you are so arrogant.”

“Hahaha! If I can’t even do that, how could I claim that I will bury you with me?” Luo Hao replied calmly, with an indifferent smile on his face. Meanwhile, the broadsword on his shoulder gave out a dazzling blue light, increasing that monstrous pressure.

Luo Hao laughed loudly as he wielded the sword in his hand, and walked right in front of Mu Yu Die, obstructing the Crescent emissary.

After the Crescent emissary displayed the [Green Claw], a gloomy green light had pervaded the air. But it seemed to be influenced by the increased gravity, for the Crescent emissary had difficulty controlling it. He curved his fingers and pushed forward, as he encircled Luo Hao with other three Star emissaries.

“Zhao Xin, take Miss Mu away!” Luo Hao shouted. The broadsword in his hand gave out a bright blue light, and looked like a shooting star when slashed. It was able to obstruct the enemy and bar their way.

Shi Yan was hiding behind an ancient tree, some fifty metres away from the fight. He gazed at the fight with a rigid face, with

his eyes shining in the dark.

All the people from the Dark World were at the Nascent Realm. And that Crescent emissary had reached the Second Sky of the Disaster Realm. It was too much for him. If he hastily took action, he would be easily killed before he could move near Mu Yu Die.

Shi Yan was envisioning various scenarios for the best possible approach.

A few seconds later, his eyes radiated. He grabbed his bag cautiously and took out the Bone Cutting powder, which was wrapped in a soft cloth. Lowering his body, he then quietly climbed out onto the tree branch.

Through the long branches of the tree, Shi Yan was moving cautiously toward the battling crowd.

Bone Cutting powder was a drug invented by Karu, the alchemist who was unmindful of his work. It made one's veins and bones become numb, decreased their power. Its effect could last for 3 hours; enough time to change the result of a battle.

"Zhao Xin! Leave!" Luo Hao roared, as his sword radiated with blue light. He, by himself, was fighting against the Dark World's assassins.

"Miss Mu!" Zhao Xin was anxious; he stamped on the ground and said, "Hurry please!"

Mu Yu Die looked tranquil, but her eyes showed stubbornness. She spoke softly, "I won't leave. If you three stay, we might win. But once we leave, Uncle Luo will definitely die. Without Uncle Luo, we can't win against the Dark World anyway. We would still be caught."

"Good! Let's fight till death!" Zhao Xin was a smart person. Upon hearing Mu Yu Die's words, he made up his mind and shouted, "Di Yalan! Hu Long! Fight!"

They encircled Mu Yu Die, took out their sharp weapons, and

charged with all their strength toward those Dark World emissaries.

“Four of you, go and take care of those three kids.” The Crescent emissary frowned and ordered coldly, “Don’t hurt Miss Mu. The Lord has given the order. Miss Mu should be taken back alive and unhurt.”

“Yes Sir!” the four Star emissaries replied, and in no time rushed toward those three.

Just then!

Abruptly, a slight sound came from above. The Crescent emissary aroused vigilance. As soon as he looked up, he shouted, “Dammit! Run!”

It was too late!

Grey dust fell from the sky like drizzle and spread over the area. Everybody, including those from the Dark World, were covered by the dust. No one was spared.

The Crescent emissary quickly realized the situation as he held his breath. Though he drew back, there was still a lot of dust on his gown. However, the dust had a strong penetrating power as it entered into his body through his skin. As his hands and feet became numb, he had a quick thought, and operated his Profound Qi to defend against it.

But those Star emissaries were not as cautious as he was. Many of them inhaled the Bone Cutting powder, which went into their hearts and lungs, which then quickly affected their bodies. In a few seconds, they were numb all over, their bones softened and their strength weakened.

Luo Hao’s face turned dark all of a sudden. He was a victim too. Exhausted from the fight, he circulated his meagre Profound Qi thorough out his body in order to counter the poison. He looked up into the sky with cold eyes.

A thin figure showed up from the branches above them. With an indifferent face, that person flew down from the tree lightly and stood by Mu Yu Die calmly, with the latter shocked. He took out a medicine bag and said lightly, "Smell the fragrance, you will be detoxified."

"It's you?!" Astonishment took over Mu Yu Die's moon-like face. She couldn't believe it was Shi Yan who flew down from the above.

Gazing at Shi Yan carefully, Mu Yu Die was even more surprised. Shi Yan had reached the Nascent Realm in the past few days. How on earth?!

"Miss, you have saved me twice. Once unintentionally, and another intentionally. I will remember that forever." Shi Yan smiled. Seeing that, Mu Yu Die grabbed the medicine bag. He added, "The effect of the Bone Cutting powder shall last for three hours, which is not too long, but not too short either. You should know how to deal with it, Miss." His dark eyes suddenly went cold.

"Got it." Mu Yu Die got what Shi Yan said. She took a deep breath of the fragrance, and then passed the bag to Zhao Xin near her, "Quick!"

The Crescent emissary was still operating his Profound Qi to defend against the effects of Bone Cutting powder. Seeing that situation, he shouted with a rigid face, "Move! Grab that medicine bag! If they are cured by that powder, none of you will survive!"

After saying that, he forced his Profound Qi and dashed toward Luo Hao.

As soon as those Star emissaries comprehended the situation, they began to besiege Zhao Xin again, despite the poison in their bodies.

Before Zhao Xin could get the medicine bag from Mu Yu Die, he was surrounded by numerous attacks.

His face turned pale, and he had to give up on the medicine bag.

Instead, he concentrated and began to confront those emissaries' attacks.

So were Hu Long and Di Yanlan. Under the fierce attacks of those Star emissaries, they couldn't even breathe from the medicine bag.

Mu Yu Die held onto that medicine bag, but couldn't get a chance to pass it to others, so she became very anxious.

Helplessly, Mu Yu Die turned to Shi Yan. Her beautiful eyes were asking for his help.

Everybody else was poisoned by Bone Cutting powder, and she couldn't operate her profound Qi wildly. Although Shi Yan was low-ranked, he was quite important now.

Seeing Mu Yu Die's pleading eyes, Shi Yan smiled and asked naturally, "Miss, may I know your name?"

"Mu Yu Die."

"A nice name."

Shi Yan nodded, and imprinted that name in his mind. Under Mu Yu Die's gaze, he darted out instantly!

With a dagger in his hand, Shi Yan broke into those emissaries and wielded his dagger with a serious face. The dagger made cold streaks in the air.

In no time, the Star emissary who was most affected by the Bone Cutting powder had a deep wound in his neck and fell to the ground on his back.

Shi Yan made swift moves amongst those emissaries and left scars on them, his body flashing like a sharp weapon.

"Uh..." Mu Yu Die combed her short hair to the side of her ear with her hand. Astonishment flashed through her eyes, and there was a weird look on her face: "I just... I just wanted him to pass them the bag..."

Chapter 18 - Being pursued

A Star emissary fell on the ground, and his Profound Qi was siphoned off.

Shi Yan circled thrice around him, and his meridians were charged with foreign Profound Qi.

Waving his dagger, Shi Yan was covered in dark light. He moved among those Star emissaries swiftly, avoiding their attacks while leaving wounds on their bodies.

Three Star emissaries were completely poisoned by the Bone Cutting powder. Their hands and feet were losing strength slowly, and their movements were becoming very slow.

Assaulted by Shi Yan, the three stood in a triangle, supporting themselves arduously.

Shi Yan looked indifferent as he moved about like a ghost. Between the waves of that dagger, icy light exploded.

“Ahhhh!”

One of the Star emissaries was hit in the back, so he couldn't help but shout “Kill this bastard first!”

The other two Star emissaries nodded in hatred. Letting go of Zhao Xin, Di Yalan and Hu Long, the three emissaries spared no effort to operate their Profound Qi. Three streaks of rainbow light sprang from their hands.

The rainbow light flew toward Shi Yan like a sentient arrow, reflecting the thoughts of its masters.

“Be careful! That is the [Dark King Spear] from the Dark World!” Mu Yu Die cried, “Don't keep the image of that in your mind, or it will chase you forever!”

Shi Yan decisively moved out of the entanglement, dropping any ideas of fighting against the enemy and cleared his mind.

In an instant, the three [Dark King Spears] lost their direction and shot toward the grass in the distance. Bits of grass burst out in the explosion.

“Damn it!” One Star emissary cursed, and prepared to use some other tricks.

Just then, Zhao Xin smelled the medicine bag and gradually recovered from the Bone Cutting powder. Realizing this, the Star emissary who was ready for trouble, dashed toward him.

Zhao Xin swung his arms. His arms started to stretch out and draw back like a snake. Like a snake, Zhao Xin clasped the emissary, binding him from all angles.

“Hu Long!” Mu Yu Die shouted, and threw the bag to Hu Long, who smelled the bag and quickly dashed out.

As Zhao Xin and Hu Long had both re-joined the fight, Shi Yan felt less stressed. After sniffing the bag, the two got their energy back. But those three Dark Star emissaries got weaker and weaker after they poisoned by the Bone Cutting powder. Soon they would be killed by Zhao Xin and Hu Long.

“Di Yalan, out of the battle! Give this medicine bag to Uncle Luo.” Mu Yu Die called to Di Yalan as she saw her ready to join the fight.

Di Yalan understood what Mu Yu Die meant, and rapidly ran to Luo Hao.

Shi Yan stopped and walked to Mu Yu Die. Standing by her, he looked indifferent, but his eyes kept wandering to Di Yalan.

Bordeaux long hair, bronze skin; Di Yalan was wearing crimson armour, which only covered her big breasts, the triangle area, and her cute hips. Her flat belly and shiny long legs were all exposed.

Though Di Yalan’s face was not that pretty, her figure was really hot, and her dress was wild enough to arouse any man.

Even while standing beside Mu Yu Die, Shi Yan didn't look at her at all. On the contrary, he couldn't move his goo-goo eyes away from Di Yalan, and didn't even bother to hide his male instinct.

"Is she pretty?" Mu Yu Die frowned and sniffed. Apparently she was a little unhappy.

Shi Yan came to his senses and smiled to her, "Every man will be attracted by this hot girl."

Mu Yu Die had a gleam in her eyes as she gazed at him for a while, and then she giggled. "You are really funny! How old are you? Are you a mature man?"

Shi Yan was surprised. She reminded him that his body was only seventeen years old. And since he was getting skinnier these days, he looked like a fourteen year old boy now.

Being in such an immature body and calling himself a man, talking about such erotic thing. Everything he did was really weird.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan didn't explain. He pretended to walk away from Mu Yu Die naturally and approached Zhao Xin and Hu Long.

With a shrill cry, a Star emissary spurted blood out of his mouth. His heart was ruptured by Zhao Xin's [Sky Snake]. He shook for a moment and then died.

Shi Yan came forward. The Profound Qi from the dead body was slowly absorbed into Shi Yan's body in a way only he knew. At the same time, Shi Yan's eyes began to show a fierce glint, and a killing desire took over his mind.

He knew that before the Profound Qi was purified, that desire would not disappear easily.

Having seen what happened with Master Karu, Shi Yan had some experience now.

After sensing it carefully for a while, he found that since he had reached the Nascent Realm, he could suppress the crazy desire in his mind and kept rational after he absorbed the Profound Qi from the two persons who were of the same level.

Shi Yan guessed it was because his level was upgraded. He was merely an Elementary Realm Warrior before, while Karu was of the Nascent Realm, he crossed a Realm to purify Karu's Profound Qi, thus he went that crazy.

“Go after them!”

While Shi Yan was pondering, Zhao Xin yelled, and ran with Hu Long in the direction of those escaping emissaries.

“Stop chasing! Let's leave right now!” Seeing that the leader, the Crescent emissary, was running away too, Luo Hao shouted at Zhao Xin and Hu Long.

“Why, Uncle Luo?!” Zhao Xin couldn't understand.

Luo Hao breathed the fragrance from the medicine bag deeply, and urged, “Someone's coming! Must be another troop sent out from the Dark World. It will be too late for us to leave if the two troops meet. Remember! What is important is not killing those emissaries, but to protect Die!”

Hearing that another troop was coming, Zhao Xin was astonished, and thus nodded in agreement.

Luo Hao said no more. Though he had not entirely recovered, he came holding Mu Yu Die's arm and said to Shi Yan, “Boy, thank you very much. However, it's none of your business, so don't get involved and suffer. Goodbye.”

“I own Miss Mu a life.”

Shi Yan did not seem to know how ferocious the Dark World was. He looked nonchalant and said, “One needs to return in form of a lake for the favor of one drop, and Miss Mu did save my life. I discriminate between love and hate. If someone treats me badly, I

would pay him back ten times the hatred. If someone does me a favor, I would also return ten times the gratitude. I will travel with you for a while. Hope I can help.”

“You sure are a man!” Hu Long praised.

Di Yalan showed radiance in her eyes, and giggled, “Kid, you are not only horny, but also righteous and bold! You peeped me for quite a long time. I was going to teach you a lesson, now you are forgiven!”

“You...” Mu Yu Die was stunned. She didn’t expect Shi Yan to be so fair-minded. She was a little bit moved.

“Well, if you insist, I would not stop you.” Luo Hao replied and nodded. He held Mu Yu Die and began to run.

The other three followed them rapidly. Shi Yan inhaled, and followed instantly.

With a troop of warriors from Mo family, Mo Chaoge was moving fast through the woods. Suddenly he stopped halfway, rigidly staring at some emissaries from the Dark World who had showed up unexpectedly.

The Crescent emissary was astounded too. He observed Mo Chaoge and his warriors with questioning eyes. Not knowing where they came from, the emissary was a little worried. Maybe they came to aid Luo Hao.

“Second Uncle...” Mo Yanyu murmured. Her intuition was telling her that those people were not here with good intentions, so she wanted to remind Mo Chaoge.

Mo Chaoge stared into the Crescent emissary’s eyes for a while, and remarked, “Our target is a skinny boy around fifteen years of age, who was last seen carrying a bag. We have no intention of offending you.”

The Crescent emissary was secretly relieved secretly. The Bone Cutting powder was taking effect in his body now, so he could only utilize 30% of his ability. If he were to fight against Mo Chaoge, the outcome won't be good.

Hearing what Mo Chaoge said, he had an idea. He said cunningly, "Oh, we have seen that boy. He was with our target."

"May I know where that boy is now?" Mo Chaoge asked politely.

He didn't notice that Crescent emissary was poisoned by the Bone Cutting powder. But according to the gloomy air of that person, he guessed that the emissary was a tricky one, so he held his arrogance.

"Over there." the Crescent Emissary directed and answered coldly, "You'd better be careful. That bastard is at a low level, but he is accompanied by a warrior at the First Sky of the Disaster Realm, who had the Martial art [Ten Times Gravity]. Too tough."

"First Sky of the Disaster Realm!" Hearing that, Mo Chaoge frowned slightly, and then nodded, "Thanks for the information!"

"Let's go!" Mo Chaoge waved his hand and left hurriedly with the warriors of the Mo Family.

"This guy was at the Disaster Realm as well." After they left, The Crescent emissary's eyes turned dim. He smirked, "Little bastard, you ruined my plan. I will kill you when I recover."

Chapter 19 - The Martial Spirit of Petrification

A huge ancient tree appeared in front of Luo Hao. Dozens metres high, it was so thick that ten people couldn't circle it hand in hand. The leaves almost covered the sky.

Luo Hao stopped walking suddenly and released Mu Yu Die, then gazed at the ancient tree. He looked dignified and seemed to be making a crucial decision.

As Zhao Xin, Di Yalan, and Hu Long came near the ancient tree, they turned serious as well, seemingly knowing there was something unusual about this tree.

Shi Yan frowned, and he began to stare at this huge tree too, not saying a word.

Luo Hao took a deep breath and turned to them, speaking in a low voice: "To the right side of this Sky Tree, there are hardly any demon beasts, so most warriors and trade caravans choose this way when they cross the Dark Forest. This route is quite safe. Even if we encounter some demon beasts, they would be of low level - Level One or Level Two. And this route is closer to the Merchant Union, merely taking ten days to get there."

Zhao Xin and the other two nodded. Apparently they all knew it.

After pausing for a while, Luo Hao added in a serious manner, "But to the left of the Sky Tree, the situation is totally different! It's a longer way to the Merchant Union, and is haunted with demon beasts and many audacious warriors and soldiers. Those who dare to go this way are mostly tough guys. Being in danger all the time, they follow no restrictions of any kind. If we choose this way, we need to look out for not only demon beasts, but also for those irrational warriors and soldiers, especially when we have two pretty girls here among us..."

“Humph! Anyone who would want to take advantage of me, I will chop his head off!” Di Yalan made a cutting motion in the air, with coldness in her beautiful eyes.

“Uncle Luo, what do you think?” Zhao Xin asked.

“If we advance to the right, those from the Dark World will catch up in approximately one day and there will be a nasty fight.” Having no choice and depressed, Luo Hao said, “No one knows if we would be lucky enough in these upcoming days. And if their reinforcements came, it doesn’t bode well for us...”

“What about going to the left?” Hu Long asked.

“If we go to the left, we would come across demon beasts, and more likely, we will be killed by those insane warriors. But it will be the same for those from the Dark World. They have bad reputation, and hardly anyone will go against them in the Fire Empire. Yet in this situation, they are the targets of the demon beasts and warriors. If they meet high-grade demon beasts accidentally, it’s possible that they all will be killed...”

Luo Hao made his speech slowly, and after explaining them the situation, he remarked, “To go via the right side, we won’t be confronting any demon beasts or warriors, but the Dark World will be a huge threat. To the left, we may be attacked by demon beasts and warriors, but the Dark World shall also be threatened. Therefore, to go via the left, we have a greater possibility to escape.”

“Go to the left then!” Mu Yu Die said decisively.

“Ok.” Luo Hao nodded, and took a glance at Shi Yan, and said, “Hey kid, there is still time if you want to leave. Otherwise... you will have no chance.”

“I will go with you guys.” Shi Yan had made up his mind. There was a very irrational side in his personality. That’s why he had drowned in extreme sports, which were like games of death, for

the past ten years.

When Luo Hao was depicting the danger of the left side, Shi Yan couldn't help but get excited.

Luo Hao nodded and waved his arm, "Well, let's set off. From now on, everyone must be on alert!"

One hour later.

Mo Chaoge and the warriors from the Mo family also stopped at the Sky Tree.

"Second Uncle, which way would they have chosen?" Mo Yanyu asked.

"I will chase by the right side. If I don't come back in two hours, you guys catch up this way. However, if I don't find them in two hours, they should have taken the left way." Mo Chaoge thought for a while and ordered them to wait at the intersection. Then he flew away to the right side.

After one and a half hours, Mo Chaoge came back with a pale face, "Not even a slightest sign of these people. How dare they take the left side! Everybody watch out! There are many demon beasts and warriors on the left side. Never be negligent! Remember, don't make a fuss with those warriors and soldiers. These people are all lunatics. Don't provoke these people who don't know what death is."

"Yes sir!"

"Let's go!"

Three Saber-toothed Rhinos were strolling along a brook leisurely. They were Level-3 demon beasts. A silver glow shone on the back, their teeth were as sharp as sabers, while their fist-like brown eyes glittered with a murderous look. The three rhinos were

all covered by hard mud, which formed a natural armour, through which any normal weapon would find hard to cut.

The three Saber-toothed Rhinos were sipping water now and then, while looking around discreetly, seemingly to be looking for game.

In the bushes not far from them, Luo Hao made a gesture to imply everybody to be quiet.

Until the three Saber-toothed Rhinos walked away slowly, Luo Hao uttered a sigh of relief. He said, "Saber-toothed Rhinos are Level-3 demon beasts, equaling Human Realm Warriors. They move fast and have sharp tusks. Low leveled warriors would either be injured or be killed once they met Saber-toothed Rhinos."

Shi Yan kept wandering his eyes over those slowly disappearing rhinos, showing an interest in having a fight with them.

"Rather than killing the demon beasts here, our goal is to protect Die. Everybody remember this! Don't bring up any unnecessary ramifications." Luo Hao seemed to have noticed Shi Yan's thoughts, and thus reminded them casually.

Shi Yan grinned, and nodded to show he understood.

"Let's keep going. We need to be watchful here. To keep an eye on the surroundings is more important than moving forward fast. Try to get away from demon beasts and warriors. Don't get ourselves in trouble." Luo Hao added. Then he advanced with the troop.

It was getting dark.

Beside a lush tree at the brook, Zhao Xin and the other two separated and examined the surroundings with a cautious eye, in case any demon beast showed up.

Shi Yan sat upright on the wet ground with a serious look.

Bloodlust was lingering in Shi Yan's mind like smoke. He had an urge to release it. It was high time he purify the Profound Qi he absorbed from the two Star emissaries, thus he was becoming a little impatient.

Luo Hao stood beside Mu Yu Die all the times. Frowning, he focused his eyes on Shi Yan, lest this boy took any abnormal action.

Mu Yu Die looked indifferent, and she stared at Shi Yan for a while. When she saw the aggressive look on his face, she sat down gently and crossed her legs. Setting the ancient zither on her legs, she began to play.

Hearing the zither, the concentrated bloodthirst in Shi Yan's mind seemed to be resolved by a certain power and gradually faded away.

Holding his breath and focusing his mind, Shi Yan operated his Profound Qi peacefully.

One hour later, a warm flow gushed out of his meridians all over his body.

Shi Yan's body trembled.

Suddenly, Shi Yan got a severe thirst in his body. The weird power gushing out from his meridians was absorbed by his muscles and bones, before it could mix with the Profound Qi in his abdomen. The warm stream went into his muscles and bones, and set root in his blood and flesh.

Within several breaths, the weird warm stream from his meridians pervaded into his blood, flesh and bones all over the body, which astonished him a lot.

Thus, Shi Yan began to feel the warm stream flowing in his blood, flesh and bones.

“Bang!”

There was a heavy strike in his head, and the next moment, he felt a strange change in his body.

Turning pale with fear, he opened his eyes promptly to find his bare arms turning grey, bit by bit.

Petrifaction!

Shi Yan was frightened. He began to withdraw his attention from his body, not giving a single thought to the sudden change.

As his thoughts changed, his hardening body soon went back to normal.

Concentrating, Shi Yan looked at the others. Luo Hao and Mu Yu Die were chatting behind a tree not far from him, without noticing what he had just experienced.

Relieved, happiness took over his face, as he secretly enjoyed a mirthful time.

His body became hard, which meant the Petrifaction Martial Spirit of the Shi family had awakened!

The Petrifaction Martial Spirit was exclusive to the Shi family. As one's level increased, it became stronger and stronger, to the extent that one won't be damaged by weapons and the impact of Profound Qi.

Before, Shi Yan had thought that the owner of his body didn't possess this Martial Spirit. It surprised him that it had awakened after he reached Nascent Realm. He was ecstatic.

The Petrifaction Martial Spirit was beneficial in battles. After Petrification, one's body would be as hard as rock, but was still very agile, which would increase one's ability a lot.

Apart from Petrifaction, Shi Yan also found he also possessed the Immortal Martial Spirit, which could achieve self-recovery. With the help of these two Martial Spirits and more training, he couldn't imagine how powerful his body would become.

“No!” Shi Yan frowned and thought, “Don’t Martial Spirits show up not long after birth? But this body is already seventeen, and yet my Martial Spirit can still awaken? Too strange! Or does it have something to do with the weird energy gushing out from the meridians?”

An idea suddenly flashed in his mind. The activation of the two Martial Spirits; Petrification and Immortal, were somehow related to the blood pool and the changes in his meridians.

Shi Yan guessed that the weird stream gushing out from his meridians could stimulate the Martial Spirit hidden in one’s body. With this thought, he was so excited that he wanted to sing out loud and celebrate!

A Martial Spirit was inherited. Generally, it got stronger as one’s level increased. There were hardly any other ways to strengthen a Martial Spirit.

A Martial Spirit was the gift that a warrior was most proud of, and also the vital thing to define a warrior’s ability. Warriors trained arduously to improve their Martial Spirit.

But even if one’s level had upgraded, there were limitations in increasing the level of a Martial Spirit.

On the Grace Mainland, even those legendary God-Level alchemists could barely refine pills effective to general Martial Spirits. Those pills were rare and precious on the Grace Mainland, and were believed to exist merely in legends.

Nonetheless, the effect those pills had on Martial Spirits was also quite limited. After all, Martial Spirits were an inherited gift, which was very hard to change.

Surprisingly, the weird warm stream gushing out from Shi Yan’s meridians seemed to go against the rules. It could virtually stimulate Martial Spirit and increase its ability.

Chapter 20 - Steel Himself

Stars were illuminating the dark sky, surrounding the bright crescent moon. The cool moonlight went through the tree leaves and scattered around, illuminating the quiet and dark forest.

Di Yalan and Hu Long were patrolling around, while Zhao Xin was having a rest, leaning against the tree with stable breaths, eyes closed.

Luo Hao was standing next to another ancient tree on alert, never relaxing his vigilance.

Among the dense leaves of that tree, Mu Yu Die was sleeping quietly. After a long day's journey, she was exhausted, for she couldn't operate her Profound Qi at will.

Luo Hao looked up at Mu Yu Die, who was resting among the leaves, now and then, showing a rare tenderness in his eyes.

“Daa! Daa!”

Luo Hao's thick eyebrows frowned, as he saw Shi Yan approaching nearby. He asked in surprise, “Still awake?”

“Yeah.” Shi Yan nodded and answered in a low tone. He stood still beside Luo Hao, and asked under his breath, “Wouldn't it be easy for them to spot us here?”

“Of course not.” Luo Hao smiled, “There is no settled route through the forest, and demon beasts and warriors are always showing up now and then, so those from the Dark World will find it hard to distinguish our tracks. In this area, those demon beasts and warriors are whom we need to pay more attention to.”

“That is to say, they won't find us easily.” After pondering a bit, Shi Yan asked again, “Uncle Luo, do you need to consume too much Profound Qi to release your gravitational field?”

“Why do you want to know this?” Luo Hao was puzzled.

“I want to steel myself with the help of your gravitational field. Under the gravitational field, I will have to bear a huge pressure, which will strengthen my body. I want to know my limits.” Shi Yan replied seriously. He didn’t go with the conventional path. Usual training didn’t excite him, so he sought out passion desperately.

“To steel yourself by using my gravitational field...” Luo Hao’s eyes lit up, and he nodded, “Great idea, but are you sure you want to try it? If those emissaries found us while you were exhausted, you couldn’t even fight back.”

“I don’t plan to use my Profound Qi.” Shi Yan smiled.

“To steel yourself using merely with your body?” Luo Hao was shocked.

“Yes.”

Luo Hao fell in a deep thought for a long time, and said, “You have just reached the Nascent Realm, so it is beneficial to train your body in a proper way and get used to it. But you haven’t strengthened your body before. It is crazy that you want to train in my gravitational field without operating your Profound Qi. You’re sure you can endure that?”

“I want to try.” Shi Yan replied calmly.

“Good! Follow me.” Luo Hao nodded, and walked away without making a sound. Shi Yan followed him.

After they left in silence, Mu Yu Die, who was sleeping on the leaves, slowly opened her eyes.

Gazing at the two people beside the river from afar, Mu Yu Die was taken by surprise and puzzlement. She murmured to herself, “Just reached the Nascent Realm and he wants to steel himself under the gravitational field. Is this guy insane?”

Mu Yu Die became more and more confused as she thought about it, so much that she couldn’t fall asleep any more. Out of curiosity,

she slipped down the ancient tree dexterously, and sneaked over to Shi Yan and Luo Hao, in order to see what would happen next.

“Let’s start with the gravitational field at five times normal gravity first. Generally, a Nascent Realm warrior’s body can only endure this after undergoing specialised training. You have to do what you are capable of. When you feel it is unbearable, stop the procedure at once.”

Standing still, Luo Hao added, “Since it’s your first training, run laps around me first. If you can run ten laps without using your Profound Qi, your body will strengthen. Remember, do within your limits!”

After his speech, a violent wave broke out from Luo Hao’s body all at once.

In an instant, centering about Luo Hao, the gravity surged by five times! The area around him seemed to have collapsed. The air had become so heavy that one could hardly breathe.

An invisible pressure suddenly surrounded him all over!

Shi Yan felt as if sand had filled all his cells, and his body was carrying hundreds of pounds of weight. The tendons of his knees tightened, and his heart was beating at a faster rate. Under the effects of the increased gravity, all his muscles were under tremendous pressure.

His body slowly adapted to the invisible pressure from the increased gravity. However, he found it hard to breathe, even when merely standing still.

Holy crap!

Shi Yan was too astonished when he felt that overwhelming pressure. He thought to himself that, anyone who went into Luo Hao’s gravitational field would be severely influenced by it. They wouldn't be able to use their abilities at their best.

It was only five times of gravity. What would happen if it was increased by ten times?

Realizing the horrifying part of this Martial Spirit, Shi Yan took a deep breath, and drove all the distracting thoughts out of his mind. He yelled, and then began to run around Luo Hao.

His body shook as the pressure increased. His feet seemed to be filled with metal, and were heavier than a thousand pounds. Normal running also became the most terrible torment.

In the gravitational field, his body couldn't move easily. He felt as if being pressed by a giant. He could hardly breathe.

One lap. His speed had slowed down by half.

Three laps. He slowed down by half again.

Five laps. Shi Yan was not running, instead he was walking...

On the sixth lap, Shi Yan's face was as red as an apple, while the blue veins on his arms were trembling like small snakes, about to jump out of the skin.

On the seventh lap, Shi Yan looked like a beast, as his eyes were almost on fire from the lack of oxygen.

On the eighth lap, Shi Yan staggered. Every step exhausted him. After every step he would quiver.

At that time, Luo Hao couldn't stand it anymore. He shouted, "It is your first gravitational field training. Don't try too hard! You have reached your limit here! Enough! Stop! Or you will be dead tired."

Shi Yan raised his head, while his eyes looked as if they were bleeding. He said in a grave tone, "Hehe. That was interesting, let's go on!"

Luo Hao stood aghast, and could only come up with the idea conclusion: 'this guy went insane!'

In the bushes not far from them, Mu Yu Die was speechless, her

mouth covered by her hand. She had never met someone like Shi Yan before.

Shi Yan didn't reply Luo Hao. After another beast-like haul, he continued to step forward. With his face showing extreme stress, he finished another lap.

By the last lap, his body was swaying. He had a quiver in each step, and could fall any time, as if he would die at any moment.

With his body in that state, he finished another lap, step by step. After that, he got a weird smile on his face.

Waking from his astonishment, Luo Hao was relieved when he saw Shi Yan was ok. He was about to withdraw the gravitational field before advising Shi Yan.

Mu Yu Die pressed her mouth with her hand, and had an amazed look in her attractive eyes. She had never thought that Shi Yan would achieved this extreme challenge, even if he was at the Nascent Realm.

"Another lap." Shi Yan yelled.

"What?" Luo Hao's body shook greatly, and his eyes grew as sharp as knives. He shouted, "Enough! Don't fool around!"

Before Luo Hao withdrew the gravitational field, Shi Yan continued to walk unexpectedly. He was staggering, and finally dropped on the ground.

Luo Hao was just about to shout, when he found Shi Yan was using both his hands and feet, crawling like a demon beast. He seemed to be seeking death on purpose.

After about half an hour, Shi Yan finally made it to the end, as slow as a snail.

Mu Yu Die stared at him from the bushes, completely stunned.

Chapter 21 - Pervert

Shi Yan lay on the ground on his back with his limbs spread. His face was red, as though he were bleeding. He was panting heavily and his body was twitching every now and then.

Looking at the sparkling stars above, Shi Yan could feel every cell of his body trembling. As his body twitched, his muscles, veins, and bones were all expanding and contracting regularly.

Not using his Profound Qi, he closed his eyes slowly, and began to feel the fantastic shift in his body, the amazing quivers in the muscles and ribs, the destruction and reconstruction of cells, and the slow increase in strength.

As a wild fanatic for extreme sports, Shi Yan knew that reaching his this limit this time was merely the beginning of next adventure.

The limit of a human body could always be broken, and be surpassed time and time again. The potential of human body was infinite.

Those extreme sports experiences had taught him that only by breaking the limit could he obtain rapid progress.

With his eyes closed, he could clearly sense the changes happening in his muscle fibres, even without operating his Profound Qi.

Sensing it carefully, Shi Yan soon found the Immortal Martial Spirit in his body beginning to work. It was repairing his body in an incredible way, reconstructing and strengthening his torn muscles.

Rigorous training under increased gravity enhanced one's explosive force. Only when the muscles tore under these extreme conditions could they become bigger, more powerful, and more explosive after reconstruction.

As a fanatic for extreme sports, Shi Yan was so aware of the truth, which had been verified by his repeated practices. He knew the fastest way to strengthen his muscles.

Feeling the effects of his Immortal Martial Spirit beginning to reduce the pain in all his muscle fibers, Shi Yan struggled to sit up. He took the food out of his bag and began to wolf it down, feeling happy with his progress.

Intensive exercise consumed too much of his energy. He had to eat a lot of food to recover quickly and improve his power.

The dry meat was eaten and slipped into his guts where it was quickly digested and became nutrition.

In a very short time, he had finished enough food for five people.

As he felt the changes in his body, his smile became broader. After exercising his limbs for a while, he closed his eyes and began to circulate his Profound Qi quietly.

As the Profound Qi moved, Shi Yan felt a slight quiver in his body.

Just as he had expected!

The Profound Qi was flowing in his meridians virtually 30% faster than normal.

His body became more sensitive after the extreme stress and likewise, his meridians became abnormally dynamic. His weak meridians seemed to be absorbing the Profound Qi flowing through them, and with that energy, his meridians expanded and became firmer.

Shi Yan had presumed long ago that strengthening the body was as important as training the Profound Qi; the two were complementary.

Once the body was strong enough, the Profound Qi would condense faster. The stronger the body, the more beneficial it was

when operating and condensing Profound Qi. So maybe, the two Martial Spirits hidden in his body would enhance as well.

His first attempt had successfully verified Shi Yan's hypothesis, so he was grinning from ear to ear.

In the thick grass far away.

“Die, why are you here? You should have a good rest. Get plenty of sleep, so your Martial Spirit recovers.” Luo Hao had noticed Mu Yu Die when he was training Shi Yan with his gravitational field. As Shi Yan was sprawled on the ground exhausted, Luo Hao came to Mu Yu Die secretly and complained.

“I couldn't sleep so I am just walking around. I just happened to see you training.” Mu Yu Die smiled gently in fear.

She paused, and said with a naughty smile, “Uncle Luo, was it too much for him? I remember that when you trained Zhao Xin, you had just tripled the gravity. Zhao Xin was at Second Sky of the Nascent Realm then, and had the experience of body strengthening before. Why did you quintuple the gravity for this guy?”

Wearing a bitter smile, Luo Hao shook his head and sighed, “I used the quintuple gravity at the very beginning to stop him from wasting energy and make him quit. Who would have known that he was insane! I was shocked in the end too! I tried to stop numerous times but he wouldn't agree!”

“You mean, you just tried to scare him in the beginning? So he won't ask you to train himself later on?” Mu Yu Die rolled her eyes and felt quite speechless.

“Yup.” Luo Hao sighed again. “You know, to control the gravitational field consumes a lot of Profound Qi, and during that, I can't be distracted. I neither wanted to waste my own Profound Qi, nor wanted him to be paralyzed tomorrow, which would slow

our journey. Who would have known that he is a lunatic.”

“So, Uncle Luo, how many laps did you presume that he could have managed?”

“Four laps!”

Luo Hao lifted four fingers and said in a heavy voice, “Average warriors who have just stepped into the Nascent Realm without any systematic body training can only manage four laps in the quintuple gravitational field, five laps at most. That guy is so small and thin, so I thought he would ask me to stop on the fourth lap.”

“Hmm... but he finished eleven laps.” Mu Yu Die got a weird expression on her face. She couldn’t help but take a glance at Shi Yan from afar, who was sitting there as firm as a mountain and training again. “God! He, he is upright again!”

“What? He can still move?” Luo Hao was stunned as he glanced over at Shi Yan. He shook his head and said, “Lunatic! This guy is a lunatic! Too reckless! I guess he couldn’t even move tomorrow! With this intensive training, he would find his body hurting everywhere tomorrow. I bet we will have to adjust our plan tomorrow.”

“Well, let it be. What an unruly guy!” Mu Yu Die shook her head and smiled subtly.

The next morning, before the sun rose, there was very heavy fog.

“Die, come down. It is time to set off.” Under the ancient tree, Luo Hao called out to Mu Yu Die softly.

“I want to sleep more.” Mu Yu Die murmured as if in dreams, “Why so early today? Weren’t you sure that he couldn’t move today...”

“He is waiting for you.” Luo Hao said in a very low voice, his face still trying to control his surprise.

Ten minutes ago Shi Yan came to him asking for enough food for three people.

Right in front of them, Shi Yan wolfed down the food and patted his belly, sighing with satisfaction, “Let’s go.” Luo Hao was totally astonished; he glared at Shi Yan with frightened eyes for a few minutes before he murmured to himself, “Pervert!”

“That guy is waiting for me too?” Mu Yu Die murmured, rubbing her eyes unwillingly.

“Yes, he is more energetic than anyone.” He smiled bitterly.

“What?” Mu Yu Die suddenly woke up, astonished. She looked for Shi Yan under the tree, to find him sitting straight like an arrow with bright eyes. The same as Luo Hao, she murmured, “Pervert!”

Shi Yan scrutinized his own wearing and was sure that there was nothing strange. He frowned, “Uncle Luo, and Miss Mu, which part of me looks like a pervert?”

“Your whole body!” Mu Yu Die chuckled and got in a joyful mood.

Her chuckle seemed to bring a spring that made the beautiful scenes in the Dark Forest seem dim in comparison.

Zhao Xin and Hu Long were fascinated with goo-goo eyes; but the soon realised their misdemeanour and lowered their heads to cover it up, not daring to look into Mu Yu Die’s eyes directly.

Shi Yan narrowed his eyes and wandered his burning eyes on Mu Yu Die’s beautiful face audaciously, “Miss Mu, if I were a pervert, I would put my hands on you first. So be careful tonight, I would be unable to control myself. You should scream loudly then. I love women’s crazy screams so much!”

“How dare you!” Di Yalan sniffed.

“Oh, sorry, I forgot there is another pretty woman. Maybe you

are angry because I ignored you. Trust me, I will go for you too, don't be jealous now." Shi Yan pretended that he just realized that and patted his head to show regret, as if he had forgotten something important.

"Haha! Hahaha!" Mu Yu Die held her stomach and burst into laughter in the tree, almost falling down. She pointed at Shi Yan and giggled, "You funny guy! Why are you so hilarious? Haha..."

Di Yalan was dumbstruck, and then chuckled too, feeling helpless when it came to Shi Yan.

Zhao Xin and Hu Long were taken over by confusion too, and their facial expressions couldn't be stranger.

They just couldn't understand that even when they always acted politely with the two girls, and didn't dare to do anything to offend them, they two girls scarcely smiled at them.

While Shi Yan showed not the slightest hint politeness towards the girls with his giddy words, but the girls smiled at him a lot. What the hell is with that?

"Oh!" Luo Hao glanced at Shi Yan strangely and smiled, "Well, stop it now, let's move."

Chapter 22 - Shi Family

The Merchant Union, Tianyun city. In the Stone Room of the Shi family.

Yang Hai, who was a little stout, was sitting on a stone stool with a serious face. Eyes narrowed, he was checking an account book, page by page, and reporting the recent month's production status of the quarry to the family head of Shi family, Shi Jian.

Though Shi Jian was in his seventies, he looked in good health. Being the family head of Shi family, he was simply wearing a plain gown which was suited to martial training. Sitting on a brown stone stool, he had a calm demeanor and was listening to Yang Hai earnestly.

After Yang Hai illustrated the case, Shi Jian frowned and commented, "Hai, the production in recent months has literally decreased by 20 percent. What's up?"

"It's all because of the Mo and Ling families." Yang Hai sighed, "Many skilled pitmen were lured away by their high salary. We are now lacking in pitmen. We were in bad situation due to the secret fight with the two families. Those pitmen feared that we would be beaten by them, plus they were being offered a higher salary, so the pitmen turned to them."

"Humph!" Shi Jian sniffed. "They are doing that deliberately. Since Mo Yanyu and Ling Shao Feng got engaged, the Mo family and Ling families have gotten closer and closer. The Ling family has also been interfering in our secret fight with Mo family. They must have come to an agreement, or Mo family couldn't compete with us."

"Master, when do we strike back?" Yang Hai asked.

"No worries. I have a plan." Shi Jian looked assured, then he paused and frowned, "Is my little bastard grandson Shi Yan still is

not back home?"

"No. I was just about to mention that." Yang Hai looked disturbed, "That stupid boy said he would go to the Dark Forest before he left. It's been a year since he left home. I received information a couple of days ago that Mo Chaoge and Mo Yanyu were in the Dark Forest as well. I'm afraid he has had an accident. He didn't take any capable escorts with him. His mother Qing died early, and we have this single child. I am so worried..."

Shi Jian frowned and kept silent for a long while. Then he sighed, "This boy was born without inheriting the Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi family, and nor was he fascinated by Martial Arts. Instead, he was crazy about those odd things, and would always goof around. Troublesome!"

"Master, it's all because of my humble bloodline. If I had a Martial Spirit, Qing would have given birth to a kid with a Martial Spirit." Yang Hai was ashamed.

"It's all doomed." Shi Jian shook his head, "Hai, I found you by the Endless Sea. Though you are not my own, I treat you as my own son, or, I wouldn't have betrothed my daughter Qing to you. Yes, you don't own a Martial Spirit, nor did you train in Martial Arts, but you play a key role in the development of Shi family and the management of our quarries. We wouldn't have accumulated so much wealth if it hadn't been for you. Though you don't know about Martial Arts, you contribute a lot to the family."

"But nowadays, a strong warrior is much more valuable than anything." Yang Hai smiled and mocked himself, "If I had a Martial Spirit, I would have trained in Martial Arts. And if Yan had inherited the Petrification Martial Spirit from his mother, he too would have trained in it. But a Martial Spirit is inborn..."

Shi Jian nodded, and sighed, "Yes. It's true. A strong warrior is more valuable than anything."

"Family Head, could that little boy be in danger?" Yang Hai

couldn't help but worry.

"He shouldn't be." Shi Jian thought for a while, and added, "My grandson isn't into Martial Arts, so the Mo family have never set their eyes upon him. Neither Mo Chaoge nor Mo Yanyu have seen him before. So it's not possible that they would harm him."

"But I still feel something's wrong. He should have been home."

"Well, I will tell those soldiers in Silent Town to keep an eye for him. Silent Town was beside the Dark Forest. Once they spot Shi Yan, they will let us know. So don't worry."

"Thank you, Family Head."

"Why? Your son is also my grandson!" Shi Jian glared at him and berated, "How many times have I told you? Don't call me Family Head. I'm your adoptive father, and also your father-in-law. You can call me anything but Family Head."

"I got it, Father."

"Ok."

The Dark Forest. A silent night.

Luo Hao was standing still on the side of the track, with a quintuple gravitational field surrounding him; it was getting very hard to breath.

Shi Yan was perspiring from all over his body, as he pounded in the air and jumped around Luo Hao. Blue veins showed up on his face and neck, quivering like little snakes.

In the grass, Mu Yu Die was gazing at them secretly, biting a straw in her mouth.

"Guess how long could he endure today?" Di Yalan asked as she walked up and sat beside her

"You finished your task today?" Mu Yu Die chuckled, without

replying her.

"Zhao Xin took over. It was really dangerous! A single horned silver snake was twining around the tree trunk, and I didn't notice it. I was almost bitten by it! If I hadn't moved quick enough, I would be dead right now."

Di Yalan still looked terrified. She cursed, "More and more demon beasts are appearing these days. We have to be careful. We have met five groups of demon beasts in the past three days. They walk around especially at night. You'd better take me with you next time you want to peep. Or you will be in danger."

"You just wanted to say the last thing right?" Mu Yu Die giggled.

"Ha, you found it out." Di Yalan didn't disguise herself and said, "That guy is really something. He broke his limit every day in the past three days, and got more and more stamina. Though I'm at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, I don't dare break the rules in the quintuple gravitational field of Uncle Luo. This guy is literally insane. Every time, he won't stop until he faints. Nuts! Nuts!"

"His endurance is most shocking." Mu Yu Die shook her head slowly, as her eyes glimmered.

"Yes, and he recovered in such a short time. Unbelievable! He is only at the First Sky of the Nascent Realm, but he has incredible recovering ability." Di Yalan was confused too.

"This guy... has so many secrets..." Mu Yu Die thought for a while and murmured, "I have never seen anyone greedier than him! He almost ate up all our food in the past three days. I'm now worried about food. He is such a rice bucket*!"

(*ED Note: A 'rice bucket' is a slang term for a useless person. Someone who is only good for eating rice.)

Di Yalan laughed, "But he talks in a funny way! Any of his casual talks could amuse us a lot. And he has so many novel ideas that I have never heard of. He says that kings must be voted in by

citizens, and merchants dominate a country. By the way, he even composes sarcastic poems. I'm really confused, how could this 17 year old boy be filled with so many odd things."

"And it is this 17 year old guy who looks as if he wants eat us when he casts his eyes upon us. I have never seen such possessive eyes. Bastard! Too bad!" Mu Yu Die grinded her teeth, and made an action of cutting in the air, "I would let him know how capable I am!"

"Till your Martial Spirit is back, ha, what's the big deal to let him look at us? We don't lose anything. Also Zhao Xin and Hu Long, the cowards, pretend to not be ogling at my ass when I am right in front of them. I despise them more! Compared to them, that bastard is bolder, I like it!" Di Yalan laughed loudly.

"You are trying to seduce him?" Mu Yu Die smirked, "He is still a kid! Don't seduce him!"

"Have you seen any kid who gives that kind of look?" Di Yalan lowered her voice, "I am guessing that he is older than he looks. Maybe he had adopted some secret skill to make himself look young! Maybe it's a special secret Martial Spirit..."

"Could be. Seems we have to be careful." Mu Yu Die pondered, and then nodded slowly.

"Bang!"

Shi Yan was sprawled on his back. He was totally exhausted. He asked in a raucous voice, "How many laps?"

"Fifteen." Luo Hao answered with a complex look. "You made actions of jumping and rolling during the fifteen laps, which made the pressure much bigger. Young man, you really... can bear that?"

"Well, we will know tomorrow." Shi Yan found it even impossible to speak.

In the past three days, he trained in [Rampage] whenever he had free time.

After the arduous training, the meridians in his chest and waist could easily release negative energy at his will, which made him pine away a lot.

He almost trained every part of his body to the most, but the hardest part, was his brain...

At night, he would ask Luo Hao to lay the quintuple gravitational field, then he could steel himself under the massive stress.

Three days. In those short three days, he broke his limit from eleven laps to fifteen laps. While running, he also increased the hardness as he jumped and rolled, to consume more energy.

By undergoing this intensive training, he found his body becoming much more powerful than before. His hands, feet, ribs, muscles and entrails all became stronger. Every morning, when he woke from his training, his body would be full of explosiveness, and he could jump several meters higher in normal gravity. Even his hands and feet became more agile.

He could feel the progress every day clearly, thus he continued the training, and wrecked himself crazily. He steeled himself in such strenuous way that his ability increased rapidly, while his Profound Qi condensed even faster as well.

“Aaao! Aaao!” There came a weird sound from far away.

Luo Hao turned pale and cried out, “It’s the Level-4 demon beast, Fire Snake! A Fire Snake is very tough. They don’t usually go out at night. Someone must have annoyed them!”

"Uncle Luo!" Zhao Xin and Hu Long hurried over, looking anxious.

"What's up?" Lou Hao yelled.

“A troop of warriors are hunting the Fire Snake, and the latter

are approaching toward us! The warriors are hell bent, thus the Fire Snakes are totally irritated!" Zhao Xin was in a panic.

"Shit!" Luo Hao took off the broadsword on his shoulder, and said, "Take care of Die!" Then he dashed away.

Shi Yan, who was suffering all over, sat up immediately and began to operate his Profound Qi. Eyes lit and cool-minded, he silently gazed in the direction of Luo Hao.

Chapter 23 - The Tush Mercenary Union

Zhao Xin and Zhao Long dashed toward the bush and encircled Mu Yu Die.

Mu Yu Die, who had been hiding in the bushes for a long time, stood up ashamed. She took a quick glance at Shi Yan while blushing, and guessed she had lost face.

But soon she found her assumption incorrect, for Shi Yan didn't even pay attention to her. Instead, he was glaring at the direction of Luo Hao, like a wary beast.

After a speedy Big Circulation cycle by Shi Yan, the pain had reduced bit by bit. Looking serious, Shi Yan tried to recover while focusing on Luo Hao.

“Go after it! The Fire Snake looks very weak now. Catch it! Don't let it go!”

“Fire the arrows! Quick!”

“Shoo! Shooo!”

From the woods not far away, came shouts and wrangles. Arrows flew fast in the air, chasing their targets.

“Hooo!”

All of a sudden, there was a fire in the woods. The fierce fire covered the area in no time, and heavy smoke rose quickly and twined around the trees, making people unable to breathe.

“Kakaka! Bang Bang bang! Bang!”

The sound of trees exploding, flying arrows, and fighters on the move, all came at the same time from that brook. A fierce battle was going on in the woods.

“Someone's there!” An unfriendly shout came from the woods, “You want to steal our success?”

“Don’t get it wrong. I just don’t want the Fire Snake to hurt my people, so I simply stopped it from running that way.” It was Luo Hao’s voice. He seemed to have a dispute with someone far away.

“Humph! We, the Tush Mercenary Union, have kept an eye on this Fire Snake for half a month, you’d better not get involved.”

“I said, I’m not interested in a Level-4 demon beast.” Luo Hao explained.

“Uncle Luo is having words with someone, let’s go and see.” Mu Yu Die raised her head from the bushes and frowned. She was a little worried since she didn’t know what was happening there.

“Yes, let’s go!” Hu Long grunted, “I have heard of the Tush Mercenary Union. They have a very bad reputation. We can’t let them take advantage of Uncle Luo”.

“Then let’s hurry.” Hearing that, Mu Yu Die began to panic more.

“Ok.”

Zhao Xin nodded and said to Hu Long and Di Yalan, “You still need to encircle Miss Mu when we reach there. Put her safety in the first place, even during fights.”

“Rubbish! We all know this!” Di Yalan was getting impatient.

While muttering, the four quietly rushed toward Luo Hao.

Shi Yan was not at all worried. He stood up after a few minutes.

Feeling the vibrancy of his Profound Qi in the meridians, he at first moved his hands and feet slowly in order to make sure that they were still flexible after the fatigue. Then he followed the four people at leisure.

“Whoa!” One man yelled in surprise, “Beautiful girls, haha, there are two beautiful girls! I have lingered here for two months and have never seen such beautiful girls!

“Captain, you had promised that you would let us be satisfied.

Don't go back on your word."

"Shut up! They are unavailable!"

Shi Yan walked up slowly, and began to look around with a rigid face.

On the ground, was an eight metre long huge snake which had patterns of fire all over its body. Its tail was blazing and its body was covered with arrows. Meanwhile, a large quantity of blood was flowing out of the wound between its eyes.

Eight mercenaries, in warrior uniforms, were standing around the Fire Snake. They looked robust and rough, and each of them got a tattoo of tush on their left arm. All of them were at least Nascent Realm.

The captain's short brown hair stood like steel needles. There was a long scar on his left cheek which extended to his neck, making him look extremely savage.

When Shi Yan arrived, those mercenaries were staring at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan with lustful eyes. They looked rather infatuated.

However, the captain was not looking at the girls at all, but exchanging glances with Luo Hao. The captain's right hand was at the cuff, where silver light was glowing now and then. He was prepared to have a fight.

"Go home and look at your mama!" Under those mercenaries' salacious eyes, Di Yalan couldn't help cursing them.

"Haha! This woman has a fiery temper! I love it!" An uncivilized mercenary with a bare and hairy chest burst into laughter. He patted his thigh and shouted, "Captain! I want this woman!"

"Son of a bitch!" Di Yalan drew out the sword beside her waist and posed to fight, "Come on! Let me see if you are a real man!"

"Haha, here I am!" That big guy was joyful and was about to rush

forward.

“Tumu!” Bernard shouted, then he lowered his voice, “Don’t make a fuss! Everything is negotiable!”

“Ok, Captain.” That man with hairy-chest, whose name was Tumu, smirked and shook his legs to Di Yalan, and laughed cunningly, “Bitch, you will know how manly I am when we are naked.”

“I will cut off your balls.” Di Yalan shot back.

Disgusted, Mu Yu Die frowned but didn’t utter a word. She had gotten used to such remarks.

“Who let you come here?” Luo Hao got a little worried. He knew those mercenaries well. These mercenaries, who stayed here to kill demon beasts, were leading an extremely dangerous life. They could be killed by demon beasts at any time.

Under that stress, they didn’t care much about morals or laws, and did a lot of nasty things.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were both pretty, and prettiness was the rarest thing in this area. The soft bodies of these pretty girls were the best comfort for those brutal mercenaries, so Luo Hao got a bad feeling at the sight of these men.

Shi Yan came up and stood beside Luo Hao silently, and began to observe the Tush Mercenary Union.

“Tumu!” The scar-faced captain of the Tush Mercenary Union, Bernard, yelled out viciously, “Take the things!” At the same time, he was gazing at Luo Hao and Shi Yan with cold eyes, silver light glowing from the cuff.

“Yes, Captain!” Tumu stopped teasing Di Yalan and commanded his people to move. Thus, three mercenaries walked up with daggers. They operated on the Fire Snake with blood all over their bodies. Ripping the skin, gouging the eyes, pulling out the tusks. They were doing it carefully and skillfully.

Bernard and the rest of the mercenaries kept staring at Luo Hao and others. They were all ready to assault them once Luo Hao made any move.

Looking rigid, Luo Hao held his glowing broadsword and said, "We don't have a slightest interest in the Fire Snake. You are busy, we are going." Luo Hao knew Bernard was tough, so he don't want to ask for trouble. To bring Mu Yu Die to a safe place was most important.

Seeing they were leaving, Bernard was a little stunned, as he called out, "Wait."

Luo Hao got serious as he turned around. He said, "Hey buddies, I don't want to have a dispute with you guys. You guys don't go too far either."

"Yeah well..." Bernard smirked, the muscles on his face relaxing, "Friend, you got us wrong. I just want to make a deal with you. Nothing else."

"What deal?" Luo Hao was surprised.

"What about one Fire Snake's eye, three tusks, and two metres snake skin for the two women?" Bernard pointed at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan, and smiled, "My people haven't touched women for a long time. They need to be satisfied. All women here have a price, and my offer is quite fair. What do you think?"

"F***!" Hu Long's eyes were almost on fire.

Zhao Xin grunted. Mu Yu Die bit her teeth as well, while Di Yalan waved her sword and shouted, "Come if you dare!"

Only Shi Yan kept silent as he gazed at the captain.

Luo Hao stretched out his hand to stop Di Yalan and shook his head to her. Then he turned around and said to Bernard, "I'm sorry; they are my friends, not my possessions. They can't be traded."

“Well, nevermind.” Bernard nodded, and said casually “See you.”

“See you.” Luo Hao looked into his eyes, then yelled, “Let’s go!”

Luo Hao glared at Di Yalan, suggesting her to keep silent.

Zhao Xin and Hu Long were both furious, but they could do nothing after seeing Luo Hao’s eyes. They had to encircle Mu Yu Die and leave. Shi Yan touched his own nose and left without a word too.

“Captain, the same as usual?” After Luo Hao and others disappeared into the woods, Tumu giggled, “We know what type of woman you like, so we won’t touch that little girl. But that hot bitch, Captain, you have to give her to us.”

Bernard’s eyes got colder and colder, and he nodded gently, “Collect the things on the snake first, and then do what we usually do!”

“Got it.” Tumu smirked, “That woman wanted to cut my cock! I would f*** her to death later!”

“She is a beautiful flower with thorns, and though lower than you, she is at The Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. You need to be careful. Don’t fail miserably in an easy task.” Bernard grunted. “Remember to kill those men first, don’t merely indulge yourselves in the woman. Be cautious, don’t let anyone run away!”

“Yes, Captain!”

Chapter 24 - Trouble

“Uncle Luo, why are we retreating?” As they were marching, Di Yalan cut tree trunks with her sword and was angry, “How dare that bastard tease Miss Mu and me! Shit!”

“Nothing would have happened if you two didn’t show up. Now we’ve gotten ourselves into trouble. Alas.” Luo Hao sighed and said, “Stop babbling. Let’s leave. Hopefully we can escape it.”

“Uncle Luo, we’ve already left, what’s wrong?” Mu Yu Die got confused.

“It’s more complicated than what you think.”

Luo Hao shook his head, “None of those mercenaries are good men. That captain was so salacious when he looked at you that he wouldn’t let it go easily. The four mercenaries operating on the snake appeared to be indifferent when we left, but they were much more interested in you, thus it’s unreasonable that they would give up. They must know their captain’s plan well.”

Mu Yu Die’s pretty face turned pale, “Uncle Luo, are you guessing that they would pursue us?”

“Not a guess. I’m very sure about it.”

Luo Hao sighed again, “They didn’t take action at once, for they were considering the materials on the demon snake. Other warriors and mercenaries may have come up to collect their prey when they were fighting with us. So surely they will chase us after they get the material on the snake.”

“The Tush Mercenary Union have a really bad reputation. I have heard about them doing a lot of bad things. Uncle Luo is right.” Hu Long added.

“Uncle Luo, sorry... we were worried about you.” Mu Yu Die was in low mood.

“I understand.” Luo Hao replied. However, he suddenly stopped and put Mu Yu Die down gently.

Thus, Shi Yan stopped as well. He asked while frowning, “What happened? They are pursuing us?”

Luo Hao glanced at Shi Yan in appreciation and nodded, replying with a rigid face, “Must be them.”

“Uncle Luo, what should we do now?” Hu Long was furious and he yelled, “They went too far! Let’s fight against them like hell!”

Luo Hao looked serious. He thought quickly and ordered, “Di Yalan, carry Die and go first, and send signals to us all the way. Young man, you go with them, and be careful. Choose untraversed regions, and don’t get into high-level demon beast areas.”

“What about you?” Shi Yan asked calmly.

“We three will stay. Without Die amongst us, we can do sneak attacks easily. After delaying them, we will catch up. Those guys won’t fight with us if they don’t see the girls. They should stop soon.” Luo Hao replied fast.

“Got it.” Shi Yan nodded and smiled light-heartedly, “Don’t worry Uncle, where there are these two pretty girls, there will be me.”

“Okay, go!” Luo Hao replied.

Di Yalan wanted to stay and fight, but she had to compromise under Luo Hao’s firm gaze.

She stamped on the ground with regret and crouched to carry Mu Yu Die. Then she ran to the thickest part of the forest.

After some hesitation, Shi Yan took out a paper bag from his bag and put it in Luo Hao’s hand, “I got this poisonous powder by accident. It is called Seven Snake Saliva, which is made from poison fluid of seven types of snakes. It’s very easy to use. Just wipe it on the weapon, and when it cuts even a little it will take

effect...”

Before Luo Hao could say anything, Shi Yan smirked and advanced in the direction of Di Yalan.

“Uncle Luo, wasn’t it too mean? A warrior has his own self esteem. To use poison is contemptible.” Zhao Xin frowned and looked at the poison powder in Luo Hao’s hand with contempt, then he murmured, “We know nothing about that boy, and he’s got so many vicious things. It’s dangerous to let him stay with Miss Mu.”

“Zhao Xin, there are not many rules here, so cut the crap. We would have been dead bodies if it weren’t for his Bone Chilling powder, and you wouldn’t be here talking about righteousness.”

Luo Hao reproached angrily and said, “Everybody gets to keep some powder, but don’t use it too early in case it irritates those mercenaries. If it gets worse, don’t hesitate to wipe it on weapons. You can reproach that boy again only when you two are still alive, understand?”

“Got it.”

In the woods.

Bernard and his seven people were flying fast in the woods with cold faces and obscene smiles.

“Shoo, shoo, shoo!”

Arrows flew out from the woods one after another, hard and quick, which made the mercenaries stop and react.

Bernard stopped at once and smirked. His right hand in the cuff finally stretched out-it was a shining silver iron hand! Rays of silver light exploded as the iron hand stretched out, and the light then divided into seven crescent knives in the air, and flew toward Luo Hao’s hiding spot with a rush.

“Ka ka ka!”

Tree branches in the woods exploded, and fell one after another as the knives flew by. The knives let out frightening silver lights and bombarded heavily in the place where Luo Hao hid himself.

“Bang bang bang!”

An ancient tree collapsed suddenly after being cut by the knives. Luo Hao’s figure showed up for a moment and disappeared into the woods again quickly.

“Tumu, go ahead with Kinmo. We will take care of this side.” Bernard smiled cunningly with his heavy face, and added, “The superior warriors are all here, while the women and that boy have run away. Remember, I need the women alive. If you kill them, you won’t get even one crystal coin!”

“Be at ease, Captain. I promise, I will bring that woman to you clean and beautiful, so that you can make her serve you however as you like.” Tumu laughed loudly, “Kinmo, let’s go first! Haha! That hot chick, haha, I will have her first. You are lucky today, you can taste her after me.”

“Yeah, I can’t wait anymore!” The ugly mercenary with pimples all over his face laughed too as he advanced with Tumu.

“It’s bad!” Luo Hao was stunned, and was about to send a signal.

He didn’t presume that Bernard was so experienced with this kind of situation. Bernard saw through Luo Hao’s plan at once and sent people to chase Di Yalan pointedly.

“Stay here.” Bernard sneered as he rushed to Luo Hao, “My friend, you wanted to delay us, didn’t you? Now, I won’t leave, so don’t you leave as well. Let’s trade blows and exercise our muscles.”

As soon as Bernard moved, the other mercenaries separated too to search for Hu Long and Zhao Xin’s traces.

Carrying Mu Yu Die on her back, Di Yalan shuttled back and forth in the woods. Every time she touched the ground, her well-shaped long legs would pedal on the earth and thus her bonny body bounced several metres high, like a female leopard pursuing its prey.

While up in the air, her short skirt under her armour flew with the wind, and her plump ass showed an attractive shape, looking extremely elastic.

Shi Yan was staring at her figure joyfully and couldn't stop praising her hot body. No wonder those mercenaries couldn't get rid of Di Yalan in their mind.

"Little bastard, stop looking at my ass! Take care of the surroundings! Keep an eye on any demon beast trails around here!" Di Yalan seemed to have a pair of eyes on her back, as she shouted while running.

"It's fine." Shi Yan broadened his mouth, "There are no trails of demon beasts for the time being, but it seems that someone is chasing us. I seem to hear their light steps."

"Someone's after us?" Di Yalan was stunned, "It couldn't be? The three including Uncle Luo are there. They weren't able to stop those crazy dogs?"

Shi Yan then stopped, bent down, and leaned his ear against the ground. He said with a serious face, "Uncle Luo wasn't able to stop all the crazy dogs? Two of them are almost here?"

Di Yalan was astonished as she stopped in front, she observed with a pale face, "Kid, carry Miss Mu and leave fast. I will stay and fight with them."

"No, I will stay."

Shi Yan shook his head, took a deep breath, answering in a low voice, "I was just thinking about testing the results of my recent

training. Keep going, I will catch up. Hmm, by the way, I will leave some signs as well, in case Uncle Luo Hao loses trace of us after dumping those mercenaries.”

“You...” on Di Yalan’s back, Mu Yu Die turned her head to Shi Yan and gazed at him numbly. Then a glow crossed her eyes, and she said with a complicated look on her pretty face, “You could have gotten out of this trouble, originally.”

“I know.” Shi Yan smiled, “But for you, I’m in. I still owe you a lot. Once I pay it back, I will leave even if you ask me to stay.” Waving his hand, he urged Di Yalan, “Sister, what the hell are you doing?! Move!”

Di Yalan felt it a little heartbreaking to see him again, so she turned her head away and said, “Little bastard, live on happily. If you can catch up again, I, I will allow you to touch my... butt.” In an instant, she stamped on the ground and dashed out rapidly.

“Haha, then keep yourself clean and wait for me.” Shi Yan laughed and shouted to her, “I will be back soon.”

Di Yalan quivered, and almost fell. She gritted her teeth and cursed in her mind with blushed face, “This damn bastard!”

Chapter 25 - Ghost

With his dagger, Shi Yan first engraved ugly patterns of butterflies on two tree trunks, then he climbed into one of the trees, cut down a branch as thick as an arm, chopped it into five pieces, sharpened one end of each piece, and wiped the Seven Snake Saliva onto the sharpened ends casually.

It took him two minutes to do all these things.

After two minutes, Tumu and Kinmo, the two mercenaries from the Tush Mercenary Union, showed up as expected.

Tumu and Kinmo didn't even take Shi Yan and the two women seriously. They were still discussing how to enjoy Di Yalan with salacious faces, while shuttling in the woods.

“Shoo! Shoo!”

Sharpened branches went through dense leaves and flew toward Tumu and Kinmo.

Tumu didn't care about it at all. He wielded his axe aimlessly and chopped two tree branches down; then he laughed happily, “Look at this guy, too shallow, haha. He treated us with these tree branches to lose our face?”

“Poor guy.” Kinmo shook his head and sneered.

“Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!”

Another three tree branches came over mightily.

Tumu got a little impatient that he drew a semicircle in the air with his axe which was as long as an arm, and three tree branches fell on the ground in the silver light.

Shi Yan showed up from among the bushes slowly and stared at them coldly, “You two will fight together, or come up one by one?”

Narrowing his eyes, Tumu raised his head and examined Shi Yan. Then he shook his head disappointedly, “A young kid! Of the

Nascent Realm at most! You talk big but have limited ability. Sorry, but I'm not interested."

After saying that, Tumu turned his eyes away from Shi Yan and walked away with his voice, "Kinmo, take care of it quickly. Catch up to me soon, or I will f*** that bitch twice. Hahaha!"

Kinmo sniffed, then threw his huge wolf tooth stick onto the ground mightily, which stuck deep in the earth. "Kid, come down, I won't use my weapon, and don't let me climb the tree to catch you. I'm in a hurry. Be quick."

"Yeah, I'm in a hurry too." Shi Yan replied with indifference and calmness in his eyes. Then he jumped down the ancient tree at once, and threw his dagger out with all might into the earth beside that wolf tooth stick.

"Bang!" Shi Yan stood ten metres away in front of Kinmo, raised his hands and waved at Kinmo, "I won't use a weapon either."

"Hey kid, you're rather audacious!" Kinmo broadened his mouth as all the pimples gathered on his face. With vicious eyes, he rushed toward Shi Yan at once.

All of a sudden, Kinmo's hands swelled and blue veins popped on his fists. All his fists strikes were so heavy handed that they were making a 'hoooohooo' sound in the air. His aggressive assault created numerous images of the fists.

After five steps, there appeared dozens of fist prints ahead of Kinmo.

"Mortal Level Martial Skill, [Star Fists]!"

Shi Yan narrowed his eyes and began to operate his Profound Qi calmly, clearing his mind of any other thoughts. There was only the fist images in his eyes and only the idea of "kill Kinmo" in his mind!

"Bang!"

With a heavy shake in his mind, he suddenly entered a different world.

His eyes, ears and body suddenly got much more sensitive than before. All of the surroundings grew much clearer. Gazing at Kinmo, he could specifically sense the speed and rate at which Kinmo's Profound Qi flew in his arm.

The fist images which had pervaded the air disappeared in an instant, and the air got clearer. Only Kinmo's waving fists were left in his eyes. Furthermore, he could even see the path his fists were traversing.

After taking a deep breath, Shi Yan shouted and his arms contracted and dried at a speed which could be seen by naked eye. Soon his arms were twined with vague, white smoke.

At the same time, from his neck, his skin began to petrify into grey rock, which looked as hard as iron.

Dim black light spilled from his skin and covered all of his skinny body.

Kinmo's iron fists, with the power to shatter rocks, struck toward Shi Yan's chest.

The [Dark Light Shield] twisted, and after being struck by Kinmo's iron fists, it turned into dark light spots, exploding in an instant. Kinmo's fists went through the [Dark Light Shield], though with less power, and struck Shi Yan's chest heavily.

“Bang!”

“Kaaar!”

The sound of striking and bone breaking came at the same moment.

Kinmo's face twisted at once.

The nasty pain on his fists made Kinmo realize that it was not Shi Yan's chest, but his fists that had been splintered.

Waving the painful arms with a hideous face, Kinmo looked at Shi Yan, who was as cold as a rock, rather terrified. He seemed to remember something at that moment, thus shouted, “Petrifaction Martial Spirit from the Shi family! You are from the Shi family of the Merchant Union?”

“Brilliant.” Shi Yan smiled with coldness.

Kinmo realized that he was at a disadvantage and thus tried to run, but it was too late since he was too close to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan stretched out his hand like lightning and held Kinmo’s neck. The white fog around his arm, containing all the negative emotions flew into Kinmo’s body, all at once.

Kinmo was so frightened that he felt himself fall into hell and screamed while quivering, “No! No! Nooooo!”

Kinmo kept screaming hard and waved his iron fists aimlessly, as if he couldn’t see a thing, and tried to defend from the ghosts which were approaching him.

Shi Yan had released his hand a long time ago. The white smoke had disappeared and his face had returned normal. He was counting the time in his mind.

One, two, three, four, five...

While counting, Shi Yan walked leisurely to where his dagger was struck. He pulled it out and walked over to Kinmo with light steps.

When Shi Yan counted to seventeen, Kinmo seemed to be calming down gradually. His eyes were becoming clear and he was about to come around.

Seventeen seconds was far more than enough to kill a person dozens of times.

Nodding his head lightly, Shi Yan got to know more about the situation. He moved like lightening and slashed across Kinmo’s

neck with precision.

Blood jetted out of his neck as Kinmo finally came back to his senses. He stared at Shi Yan in hatred and fell down with regret.

Squatting down beside Kinmo, Shi Yan wiped off the blood on the dagger with Kinmo's coat, and examined Kinmo's body. He found some food, hundreds of purple crystal coins and the two sharp tusks of the Fire Snake.

After putting these things into his bag without any hesitance, Shi Yan took a deep breath. He felt Kinmo's Profound Qi had all went into his own meridians. Then he stood up and murmured, "Someone at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm would lose their senses for seventeen seconds under the negative power of [Rampage]. This Martial Skill is really too weird. Maybe, the more the negative power is concentrated, the stronger its power..."

He talked to himself for a while. Then he pulled himself together, took a deep breath and rushed in the direction where Tumu ran to.

"Bitch! Too damn hot! Haha! But I love it!" Tumu was laughing happily and having a fight with Di Yalan with his axe.

Mu Yu Die's eyes were cold. Cuddling her zither, she looked panicked and seemed to make a difficult decision.

The heavy axe looked light as a feather fan in Tumu's hand.

As the axe shone now and then, Di Yalan's short sword was at a disadvantage. Once the short sword touched the axe, Di Yalan's thin body would shake. Apparently, Tumu had a much stronger Profound Qi than Di Yalan.

Tumu's axe left shadows in the air as he wielded it, and the shadows entangled Di Yalan, like rings. Between the light reflected from the axe, Di Yalan's long hair flew up and down, and her short skirt was shredding, through which her thighs showed up now and then.

“Bitch, you know my ability, huh? Don’t worry, you will know soon that my best thing is not my Martial Skill. Hahaha!” Tumu laughed with joy as he planned to defeat Di Yalan slowly. He was teasing her deliberately.

Di Yalan was very furious, but she couldn’t talk back and could only defend with every effort.

“Sister, need any help?” Shi Yan’s casual banter came from the woods all of a sudden.

The next moment, Shi Yan showed up with the dagger in his hand. He wandered his eyes over Di Yalan’s thighs and butt, visible through the cracks on her skirt for a while and praised, “Round and smooth, plump and cute. Too good! Terrific!”

Di Yalan was very surprised. Since she had no time to talk back now, she took a step back and answered loudly, “You bastard! How did you survive?”

Tumu’s face was frozen and pale. He didn’t continue to chase after Di Yalan, but turned his head to Shi Yan and asked in a low voice, “Is Kinmo dead?”

“What do you think?” Holding his dagger, Shi Yan walked toward him step by step, wearing a mysterious smile.

As he was advancing, his arms dried up again. The negative power flowed out from his pores, and twined around his arms again.

Kinmo’s Profound Qi was not all purified, but as Shi Yan began to operate [Rampage], Kinmo’s despair and hatred before his death suddenly gushed out from his meridians, forming the hideous shadow image in front of Shi Yan, which looked just the same as Kinmo.

“Kinmo!” Tumu was so astonished that his robust body quivered! Impossible!

In front of Shi Yan, Kinmo's ghostly shadow which was as light as a feather was rattling his sabre. The dim eyes which were filled with hatred, showed that he would even want to kill all the people in the world.

Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die were astonished too. With their thin bodies shaking, they couldn't help screaming, "What the hell is that!"

Even Shi Yan himself was astounded. Looking at the ghostly shadow in front of him, he didn't know what to do.

"Kinmo! Kinmo! What happened to you?" Under Kinmo's eyes which were full of unforgettable hatred, Tumu stepped back and shouted, "I'm your companion! Your enemy is behind you!"

Tumu's cry reminded Shi Yan. His will changed. Now there was only one thought in his mind; to kill Tumu. The negative power around his arms shot out like a weird, pale snake to Tumu.

Kinmo's shadow seemed to be stimulated by the negative power and flew lightly towards him and brutally caught him.

"Kill!" Shi Yan yelled and rushed out. Surprised, Di Yalan raised her sword and struck toward Tumu too.

Chapter 26 - The Wager

Tumu's face looked gloomy as he watched Kinmo's face with astonishment. He was frightened.

That shadow did not have any substance but was like a ghost, which made Tumu, a brave and battlewise mercenary, apprehensive. He took a step back from this abnormal thing and tried to analyse the situation.

Shi Yan immediately knew that Tumu was scared, as he stepped back. He took the right timing and rushed out with his dagger like a leopard. At the same time, he asked Di Yalan to fight together with him.

Though Di Yalan was a little scared too, since she knew that ghostly shadow was released by Shi Yan, she plucked up courage to besiege Tumu.

The pale, white light smoke, which contained refined negative power, began to intertwine Tumu. Kinmo's ghostly shadow was following it and went in front of Tumu at once.

Tumu suddenly concentrated. Without any hesitation, he began to practice his dense Profound Qi of the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm with his secret formula. The Profound Qi gushed into his left hand and exploded into a red fire.

In an instant, there appeared a red protective shield of concentrated pure Profound Qi in Tumu's left hand. That red protective shield was glowing with red light and letting out hot energy, though it was merely as big as a washbasin.

This shield, created by pure Profound Qi, was apparently Tumu's vital Martial Skill, which required a lot of energy to operate.

Just as the protective shield was produced, Tumu was already perspiring hard on his forehead. He must have consumed a lot of energy.

The protective shield was sticking on Tumu's left hand. Seeing Shi Yan's negative power pouring toward him, Tumu immediately raised the shield to block the negative power and Kinmo's ghostly shadow.

“Cheeee cheee cheee!”

That strip of white fog containing negative mood, along with Kinmo's ghostly shadow sparkled after bumping on the protective shield.

In the pervading sparkles, the white fog faded away and the ghostly shadow seemed to be melting and dispersed into the air bit by bit.

Noticing the shield could melt these two weird things, Tumu became a little relieved. He then sneered cunningly, “Kid, let me see what else you've got!”

A cold, evil air dispersed from the sparkles with the continuous sound of “chee chee”. Unnoticed by Tumu, the air went into his body through his pores.

After that sneer, Tumu's face turned dumb and panic welled up from his eyes.

A bright light crossed Shi Yan's eyes!

According to Tumu's facial expressions, though Tumu had tried to clear the negative power, he couldn't wipe it all away. Some of it had already invaded his mind.

“Take action!”

After a loud yell, Shi Yan sped up to his maximum speed. He appeared in front of Tumu all of a sudden, leaving a light shadow in the open air.

The dagger, with glowing blue light, stabbed toward Tumu's neck with a rush, which looked as if it was lightning.

The protective shield in Tumu's hand was getting hotter and

hotter. The temperature almost woke Tumu up from the numbness.

Tumu opened his eyes abruptly!

“Haaaaoooo!”

Tumu hauled, thus he suppressed all the negative emotions which had invaded his mind, at the same time, he drew a circle in the air with his axe in the right hand.

"Kangchang!"

Shi Yan's dagger stabbed into the axe while a nasty explosion came out from the axe. To his surprise, it rushed towards Shi Yan's arm through the dagger.

Shi Yan's arm became so numb that he realized Tumu's Profound Qi was very dense, therefore he moved the dagger away from the axe quickly.

Tumu didn't react to Shi Yan. Instead, he turned his body like wind and blocked Di Yalan's short sword which came behind him with his axe. He said with a cold face, "I will f*** you as hard as I can!"

Shi Yan grew rigid and the bloodthirstiness surged in his mind.

Wielding his dagger, his muscles on the legs began to contract slowly as well. Negative power gushed out from his pores on the legs, covering them in a pale fog.

As his hands and feet all went through the changes, Shi Yan couldn't control his bloodthirstiness any more.

He was overwhelmed by the desire for killing, and his eyes were getting more and more red, while his expression became as hideous as a devil from hell. Even Mu Yu Die who was beside him was so frightened that she covered her mouth with her hand.

"Hoooohoooo!"

Shi Yan's breaths got heavier and heavier. He stomped and could

feel endless power in his feet. His skinny body advanced ten meters in one second!

Like a flying arrow. Fast and mighty!

Tumu's axe flew swiftly in the air and made cracking sounds endlessly. It forced Di Yalan to retreat as her arms got more and more painful holding the short sword. She turned weaker and weaker under the severe attacks of Tumu's strong Profound Qi.

A forceful, murderous air suddenly came from his back. Tumu had a hideous look in his eyes as he struck his axe again, making Di Yalan retreat while trembling.

"Bang!"

Tumu kicked his leg impatiently onto Di Yalan's smooth abdomen heavily and she was kicked about seven meters away.

Di Yalan fell on ground on her back and she was bleeding severely from her mouth. Her Profound Qi was disordered and she lost all her strength at once.

Tumu's kick contained a surging explosiveness as his Profound Qi exploded in an instant. He aimed to drain his fighting capacity slowly so that he could deal with Shi Yan.

Turning around, Tumu brandished his axe with a vicious face. "Kid, I'm gonna slice you into a hundred pieces!"

Shi Yan ran up like an arrow and with the help of his impulses, he shifted all of his Profound Qi into his dagger.

As he brandished his dagger, the shadows of the dagger fell like rain drops; along with it, a cold vicious power was sent out from the dagger and enveloped Tumu.

"Humph!"

Tumu took a deep breath and began to wield the protective shield with his left hand. Warm wind flew out from the protective shield endlessly and drove the cold, vicious air away. Then he took up his

axe and struck Shi Yan's dagger precisely.

“Bang!”

With the hard thump, Shi Yan felt a severe pain in his wrist, when his dagger suddenly flew out and fell down on the earth dozens metres away behind him.

Tumu was having a hard time too. The power gushing out from Shi Yan's dagger was extremely vicious as well. As he defended from it, he retreated with a stagger.

At the same time, an air of coldness, evil and panic, sprawled through his arms into the brain like a small snake and dragged him into a bloody atmosphere again.

Shi Yan stood still as he saw 'Tumu' eyes become perplexed and retreated staggering into the direction of Di Yalan.

At that moment, his dagger was dozens of meters away behind him. He would miss the best timing if he went to pick up his dagger and rush to Tumu; maybe Tumu would have come to his senses by then.

That will flashed across in his mind like lightning and his eyes turned cold. Then he rushed to Tumu with all his strength and captured Tumu's waist with his arms. He pushed up with his legs and push Tumu toward Di Yalan with all might, and yelled, “Raise your sword! Stab!”

On hearing his shout, Di Yalan, who was lying on the ground exhausted, saw a huge dark shadow fall onto her.

Without any hesitance, Di Yalan summoned all her strength and raised her short sword which was as long as her arm.

“Puuuuh!”

As the sword stabbed into Tumu's heart, he woke up with a severe pain. He flailed crazily and tried hard to keep his balance.

The sword stabbed into the back part of his heart thus his body

tilted in the air, and he didn't fall onto Di Yalan immediately.

With the support of the sword, Tumu kept that tilting position magically and didn't fall immediately, as if his legs had rooted in the ground.

Tumu struggled with all his strength but only to find his hands held by Shi Yan tightly.

Shi Yan looked rather cool, and he smirked, "Wild dog, you are done!"

Keeping that position, Tumu shouted, "Bastard! Let go of your hands! The sword stabbed me; it can also stab you! Let go of your hand! You want to die with me?"

Tumu was really tough and he could still raise his leg like lightning under this situation. He kicked his knees into Shi Yan's belly heavily.

Shi Yan injected his Profound Qi crazily into his arms. Since he couldn't activate the [Dark Light Shield], he tried to use the Petrification Martial Spirit.

Tumu struck his knees into Shi Yan again and again. Under that heavy striking, the power of Petrification seemed to be concentrated in Shi Yan's abdomen, while the other parts of his body turned normal. His abdomen grew grey and was as hard as stone.

Under the attacks of Tumu, who was at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, Shi Yan could still support himself with the Petrification Martial Spirit. Though he felt extreme pain in his abdomen, he didn't spit out blood and his defensive power became abnormally strong.

Di Yalan who was under them then came to notice that Shi Yan and Tumu were hugging tightly. If she thrust her short sword toward them, or Tumu fell down heavily, the sword would go through Tumu's body, and then into Shi Yan's body, sticking them

together.

Knowing that Shi Yan would be stabbed along with Tumu, Di Yalan didn't dare act rashly, so she screamed, "Bastard! Release!"

"Wild dog, I'm shorter than you! But you will be the dead one, and I could only lose an arm at most!"

Shi Yan looked at him coldly with a smile. Then with Tumu's frightened eyes, he threw Tumu and himself with all his might onto Di Yalan.

"Poooh! Poooh!"

The sound of the weapon breaking the flesh and bone came one by one. Di Yalan was lying on her back, while Tumu was lying on her on his back, and Shi Yan on Tumu.

The sword in her hand stabbed through both of them. It went through Tumu's heart, and then forced itself into Shi Yan's right shoulder.

Tumu's heart was stabbed through. After several quivers, he died right away with an extremely terrified face.

Though his shoulder was broken, Shi Yan looked hideous and still didn't let go of Tumu.

After Tumu's Profound Qi spilled out of his body and flew into Shi Yan, the latter was convinced Tumu was dead. Then Shi Yan released his hands and laid his exhausted and soft body down.

Chapter 27 - Three Parties Meeted

In the woods.

The silver light on Bernard's iron hand flew like silk and intertwined together to form a dense, silver light net, which flew to cover Luo Hao.

In the [Ten Times Gravity] field, Luo Hao walked swiftly. He drew many odd arcs in the air with his broadsword to tear the light net in front of him into pieces.

Bernard looked normal and didn't show the slightest bit of fear. Yet he still kept a distance from Luo Hao and kept intertwining the silver light to form silver light nets one after another, throwing them towards Luo Hao.

The silver light net was not influenced by the gravitational field. It was still floating in the air, and those which were torn by Luo Hao's broadsword stuck together again while floating and came around Luo Hao's body.

Seen from afar, Luo Hao seemed to be in the very centre of a broken spider. In the shuttling of his broadsword, those light nets were torn and reconnected again.

At the same time, Bernard still kept a proper distance from Luo Hao and never stopped producing more light nets to envelop Luo Hao, who was surrounded by more and more light nets.

Bernard didn't let go of Luo Hao, apparently, he didn't need to use as much effort, as he smirked to Luo Hao. "My friend, why do you have to fight with me face to face? We just want the two women. My people have already followed them. Sure enough, the two women must have been taken away by my people. And you can't escape from my [Silver Net]. The results is very clear. Don't waste your time."

"If they have an accident, I swear, I will sweep away your Tush

Mercenary Union!” With a twisted face, Luo Hao replied while in the light net, “I will spend the rest of my life chasing you Tush Mercenary Union, till the last of you is killed!”

Bernard was surprised; he took a deep breath and nodded, “It seems like I have to kill you now.”

“Captain! Captain!” There came a surprised cry, “Jork’s dead! He was just cut by a sword and was poisoned to death!”

Bernard became furious, as he shouted, “Don’t be lenient! Kill them as soon as possible! Shit! Poison! Cut them into pieces and feed them to the demon beasts! Don’t leave their bodies!”

The mercenaries yelled together and began to chase Zhao Xin and Hu Long at the same time.

Bernard was so angry that he operated the [Silver Net] with all his might to cover the whole area around Luo Hao, making a final bid for victory.

Suddenly, lightning which was as thick as a finger turned into another huge net and fell from the sky, flying towards Luo Hao.

Luo Hao was shocked and he turned pale at once. Though he tried hard to wave his broadsword, he couldn’t cut down the new net.

There were ten finger-like lightnings glowing an odd light as they twined like magic snakes.

Frightened, Luo Hao immediately wielded his broadsword with all his Profound Qi. Then the broadsword generated a white light which grew into circles and entangled Luo Hao.

“Cheee! Cheee!”

Those finger-like lightnings came toward Luo Hao. As they bumped into the white circles, electric flashes exploded at once.

Luo Hao’s loss of Profound Qi sped up several times compared to before!

Under the fierce lightning, his energy was consumed quickly and his face turned extremely pale.

A sharp sword suddenly appeared above his head, filled with the severe smell of slaughter, and struck on the circles surrounding Luo Hao's body.

“Bang!”

Luo Hao's body shook greatly and crimson blood gushed out of his mouth. He staggered and stepped back.

Bernard's [Silver Net] took advantage of this to wrap Luo Hao tightly so that he couldn't move at all.

“Wang!”

The sharp sword went through Luo Hao's body, and that Crescent Emissary with a pale mask on his face finally showed up.

Alongside him was Mo Chaoge from the Mo family, who walked out from behind an ancient tree with lightning playing between his fingers.

“Pooh!” “Pooh!” “Pooh!”

The Crescent Emissary got a brutal look in his eyes, as his sharp sword went in and out of Luo Hao's body thrice.

The gravitational field faded slowly...

“Uncle Luo!”

Zhao Xin's eyes turned red and he cried in deep grief.

Arrows flew toward Zhao Xin one after another. His body became like a hedgehog and he fell on ground and died with regret.

On Hu Long's side, arrows were also flying around him. But they seemed to be not as accurate because instead of killing Hu Long, they blocked the people from the Tush Mercenary Union who were chasing Hu Long.

Seizing this opportunity, Hu Long ran away crazily in the wood

with red eyes. “Uncle Luo and Zhao Xin are dead. Only Miss Mu can avenge them. I must tell Miss Mu...”

“Chase!” The people from the Tush Mercenary Union yelled and began to chase, but only to find arrows falling down from the sky and blocking their way.

They turned rigid and realized someone didn’t want them to chase Hu Long, so they searched for that shooter with vicious eyes.

Some people with pale masks appeared in the woods, and there were some warriors from the Mo Family among them; they were all having arrows with them and looked serious.

“Why did you help me kill him?” Frowning, Bernard asked Mo Chaoge and the other Star Emissary, “I don’t know you two, do I? What do you want from me for killing him?”

“We were not helping you.” The Star Emissary walked up and glanced him with cold eyes, “Luo Hao was an enemy of the Dark World that we were chasing him all this time. It’s you who helped us.”

Mo Chaoge was standing aside and not in a hurry to come up. He frowned and asked, “Emissary, you said this is the strongest guy among those who were protecting that bastard. Since he is dead, we don’t need to waste time anymore?”

“Hmm.” The Star Emissary nodded, “Don’t worry. I left some Dark Moon Fragrance on Hu Long and ordered my people to let him go deliberately to become a guide for us. Later we can follow the trail left by the Dark Moon Fragrance and we can find the people we want.”

“Good.” Mo Chaoge started to smile, “It’s not far from our Merchant Union. After it’s done, would you like to have a cup of tea with the Mo family and discuss about the details of our cooperation, Emissary?”

“No problem.” The Crescent Emissary nodded.

In the past couple of days, the Crescent Emissary from the Dark World had already hooked up with Mo Chaoge, and they had come to a secret agreement.

“Why did you kill this guy?” Bernard waved his hand and soon his mercenaries crowded around him.

“For a teenage girl, and a skinny boy.” Mo Chaoge smiled, “I’ve known the Tush Mercenary Union for a long time. Now I know you why you really deserve such a reputation. I’m Mo Chaoge from the Mo family of the Merchant Union. I wonder if you are interested in doing business with the Mo family?”

“What kind of business?” Bernard frowned.

“Of course money-earning kind! Haha! If you are interested, we can discuss the details. You will not regret it.” Mo Chaoge laughed.

“Let’s talk about it later.” Bernard paused, and continued, “If there wasn’t an accident, my people must have beaten the people you want. We can’t do it for nothing. You take the teenage girl and the boy, and we, the Tush Mercenary Union, get that hot woman mercenary, okay?”

Bernard knew they were tough people, and both the Dark World or Mo family from the Merchant Union have a huge influence.

The Crescent Emissary and Mo Chaoge, who were in lead, were both at the Disaster Realm, not any lower than him, and those two had come to an agreement. After calculating, Bernard was sure that he could not compete with their joint power and had to step back.

Mo Chaoge didn’t reply, but looked to the Crescent Emissary from the Dark World.

The Crescent Emissary’s eyes flashed and he nodded slowly, “No Problem.”

“Well, let’s go get them.” seeing him nodding, Bernard became relieved. He had seen the brutality of those two people and he

didn't dare ask for trouble.

Mu Yu Die crouched and bound up the wound for Shi Yan carefully.

With a rigid face, Shi Yan was silent. He sat on the ground and examined the change in the wound on his shoulder, and the purification of Tumu's Profound Qi in his meridians. He was so focused that he didn't even take a glimpse at Mu Yu Die.

"Sometimes he is so lustful, and sometimes he is so righteous, too weird..."

Mu Yu Die questioned secretly, as generally in recent days, Shi Yan looked at her so audaciously without any disguise.

But now they were so close and could even smell the scent on each other, Shi Yan didn't even look at her. She was rather confused.

Mu Yu Die was so perplexed and she was not sure about Shi Yan's real personality.

Narrowing his eyes, Shi Yan concentrated on the changes occurring inside his body.

The cells of the wound on his shoulder were very alive. Without doing anything, he could sense they were recovering gradually with the aid of the Immortal Martial Spirit.

After Tumu's Profound Qi was purified in his meridians, the odd negative emotions were generated secretly within them.

After operating [Rampage], he didn't have the slightest amount of strength in his limbs and they ached a lot, seemingly not recovering in a short time. This familiar side effect made him uncomfortable but he could do nothing.

Di Yalan, who was resting not far from them, regained her spirit and began to search Tumu's body.

One minute later, Di Yalan walked to Mu Yu Die and Shi Yan with a little bag. “There is some food on this guy, some demon beast materials, and three Star Bombs. We don’t need the demon beast materials, but the Star Bombs are rather brutal.”

“Star Bombs?” flash crossed Shi Yan’s eyes and he stared at the green balls which were as big as fists. He asked with a lot of interest, “What are they for?”

“It will explode once shaken and produce starry blades, which are very sharp and would fly in all directions. The impact is so strong that even a Profound Qi shield from a Human Realm warrior couldn’t prevent it. It’s a type of brutal treasure and is very expensive. These three may cost five thousand of black crystal coins!” Di Yalan explained.

“Too brutal! Give it to me.” Shi Yan stretched out his hand and asked Di Yalan to hand it to him casually.

“Tata! Tatata!” Heavy steps came suddenly.

Di Yalan got pale and held her short sword cautiously.

Shi Yan pushed Mu Yu Die away a little rudely. He stood up with a grunt with the dagger in his hand, and began to stare at the direction where the sound came.

Hu Long, with bloody eyes and blood on his chest, staggered toward them.

At the sight of Di Yalan, Hu Long burst into tears and cried, “Uncle Luo and Zhao Xin died. Miss Mu, they died tragically! You must avenge them!”

Chapter 28 - The Blast

Mu Yu Die's slim body shook and she leaned against the tree trunk weakly, tears welling up in her eyes and flowing down her face.

All along the way, Luo Hao and Zhao Xin had protected her wholeheartedly. She had only survived until now because of Luo Hao who was like her spirit.

Hearing that Luo Hao and Zhao Xin were both dead, Mu Yu Die was filled with so much grief that she didn't even want to think about escaping.

Di Yalan's eyes were almost on fire as she clenched her teeth and asked in trembling voice, "Who the hell did that?"

Hu Long choked with sobs, and quickly explained the details, then he added, "Apart from the Dark World and the Tush Mercenary Union, there were also people from the Mo family from the Merchant Union. That guy released the power of lightning which was not refined from Profound Qi; it should be the Lightning Martial Spirit of the Mo family."

"The Tush Mercenary Union! Dark World! Mo family!" Di Yalan clenched her teeth and uttered word by word! Then she yelled, "They all must pay for that!"

Shi Yan frowned as he heard about the Lightning Martial Spirit. He realized quickly that the target of Mo family was him!

An odd scent suddenly went into Shi Yan's mouth and nose, which made him stand up quickly and walk around Hu Long. He turned pale and said, "Brother Hu Long, you have a strange fragrance on your body... you shouldn't have escaped alive... ahh..."

"Kid, what do you mean?" Di Yalan stared at him, "You wish Hu Long was killed?"

But Hu Long realized what he meant after a thought, and he answered with a bitter smile, “So it is. They didn’t kill me because they wanted to find you. I thought I got lucky. Haha.”

Then, before Di Yalan could stop him, Hu Long knelt down in front of Mu Yu Die and kowtowed three times; he said, “Miss Mu, please live on happily and avenge us!”

He then stood up and ran away quickly as his lamenting voice came afar, “Leave soon! Take the other way! I will distract them and earn as much time as possible for you!”

“Hu Long!” Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die wailed loudly.

“We should leave right now! Miss Mu, remember the grief and live on well!” Shi Yan looked serious as he stretched out his hand to Di Yalan, “Give the Star Bombs to me. You leave with Miss Mu. I will catch up to you soon.”

Di Yalan’s mind became blank because of her friends’ deaths. She was dumbstruck for a while, then she handed the three Star Bombs to Shi Yan, and asked in husky voice, “What are you going to do?”

“For now, to ask for some interest for Uncle Luo!”

Shi Yan went up to Tumu’s body quickly with an icy face and cut open Tumu’s belly with his dagger and then put two Star bombs inside it. After that, Shi Yan wiped the Seven Snake Saliva on the belly carefully, and turned over Tumu’s body; now his body was lying face down.

“People get curious. Once the people of Tush Mercenary Union come, they won’t be able to help but turn over Tumu’s body they see him like this. Thus the Star Bombs will explode. Guess what will happen if his body was turned over heavily?” Shi Yan smirked.

“I got it.” Di Yalan looked vicious too, “The more of them being killed, the better!”

“I also put some poisonous powder on his body. After the Star Bombs explode, the powder will stick to the blades and once the

blades cut people, they will definitely die!” Shi Yan looked cold, “Let’s go, we should live on! Or else we can’t avenge Uncle Luo!”

“I hope Hu Long is fine.” Mu Yu Die murmured with hazy eyes.

Shi Yan was a little sad, for he knew there was no possibility of Hu Long surviving. Still, he comforted her, “Don’t worry, our trap may damage them badly. Maybe we can still meet up with Hu Long.”

“Really?”

Mu Yu Die asked weakly; though she knew it was not realistic, she still wished someone could give her an answer, even if it was a lie.

“Sure, he will be alright.” Shi Yan nodded with certainty, and made eye contact with Di Yalan.

Di Yalan understood what he meant, as she carried Mu Yu Die and ran into the woods.

Shi Yan took a deep breath, summoned all of his energy and caught up in a hurry.

A quarter of an hour later.

The three parties; the Dark World, the Mo family and the Tush Mercenary Union, appeared together. They reached here by following the scent on Hu Long.

“Tumu!”

At the sight of the axe beside the body, Bernard realised at once that it was Tumu! He was so shocked that he cried, “It’s impossible! How could they kill Tumu!?”

“Didn’t you say we would just need to collect the people we want when we get here?” the Crescent Emissary grunted with cold eyes, “Luckily I had left the Dark Moon Fragrance on that guy, or else we would’ve needed to search for them everywhere.”

Bernard was rather confused as he ordered, “Zuo Song, turn Tumu over and check him.”

“It was that boy who killed him!” Mo Yanyu reminded Mo Chaoge in a very low voice, “Everyone who was killed by him will be drained. There must be poison on that boy’s weapon!”

“That boy is something.” Mo Chaoge nodded and reminded her, “Be careful later. Don’t become impulsive.”

“Got it.”

As they were talking, Zuo Song, a member of the Tush Mercenary Union, had already run to Tumu’s body on Bernard’s order.

Zuo Song grasped Tumu’s shoulder and turned his body over, and was just about to examine it...

“Thud!”

The back of Tumu’s body kicked on the ground heavily.

“Bang! Bang!”

A severe blast exploded out!

Tumu’s body ruptured into thousands of pieces in an instant!

Thousands of blades mixed within Tumu’s flesh and blood flew out from his body like stars!

As the blast was unexpected, those blades covered with flesh and blood shot toward everybody directly.

As the Tush Mercenary Union stood closest to Tumu, they were hit first!

Due to the flying blades, three mercenaries turned into honeycombs, with bloody holes appearing all over their bodies.

Zuo Song, who had turned Tumu over, was blasted apart and his flesh and blood was mixed with Tumu’s, flying in all directions.

The Dark World Emissaries and people from Mo family didn’t expect such a development, and thus they also didn’t escape from

it!

Though they were dozens of metres away, the warriors were injured as well, especially those of the Elementary Realm from the Mo family. They were cut by blades before they could defend themselves.

Miserable screeches continued. The blast from the two Star Bombs made it hell in this area. Flesh and blood filled the air. Limbs and entrails were spread all over on the ground.

Amidst the terrifying howls, everybody was panic-stricken.

Seeing that picture, Mo Yanyu, who was protected by Mo Chaoge, couldn't stand anymore. She turned pale and vomited.

Some warriors from the Dark World and Mo family were only cut by blades; they thought themselves lucky. But soon they felt pain in their body and began to lose their vision...

"Damn it! Poison on the blades!" Mo Chaoge looked as if been stomped on by someone. He stared at the warriors from Mo family and shouted, "Cut off your wounded flesh! Fast! Fast!"

The huge man Johnson's arm was cut by a blade, so it was bleeding badly.

Johnson was so terrified that he clenched his teeth and cut half of his left arm off. He howled and kneeled down, "Miss Mo, please bind this up for me!"

"Ou!"

When Mo Yanyu stood up and saw Johnson's dismembered arm, she got sick and began to vomit again.

Looking at the flesh, entrails, limbs and green bodies on the ground, Bernard boiled with rage, and his eyes were filled with murderous desire. He will eat whoever did all this alive!

Among them, the Dark World lost three people, while the Mo family lost five.

Since Bernard was closest to Tumu, he suffered the biggest loss, for all his people were dead! He was on his own now!

“I’m gonna kill them! I’m gonna kill them! I’m gonna kill them!” Bernard kept howling like a crazy demon beast.

“Humph!” The Crescent Emissary grunted and said to Mo Chaoge, “Let’s keep chasing. Leave him alone.”

He lost people and blamed Bernard for it. If Bernard didn’t order Zuo Song to turn over Tumu’s body, there wouldn’t be such a crazy blast.

“Let’s keep chasing.” Mo Chaoge nodded and left with the people from the Dark World, not bothering to deal with Bernard, who was raving like a lunatic.

“I will kill them!” Bernard panted as he looked in the direction where the Dark World and Mo Family people went. After a long while, he chased after them with a murderous look.

Chapter 29 - Eating Human Flesh

In the thick forest, while carrying Mu Yu Die on her back, Di Yalan was moving with Shi Yan.

Being on alert, Shi Yan was observing the surroundings carefully. Once he found trails of demon beasts, he would tell Di Yalan in advance; thus she could change her direction to avoid meeting demon beasts.

Time flew by. Quickly it became dark and there was the bright moon hanging in the sky.

Terrible howls could be heard in the serene forest now and then. Those demon beasts who loved to move around at night began to hunt at this time after resting during the day.

And at night, Shi Yan's eyesight worsened, making it hard for him to distinguish a safe area from a demon beast occupied area.

Some demon beasts didn't even make a sound when they were hunting.

Thus, where there were howls of demon beasts would be an unsafe place; but where there were no howls, didn't mean it was safe either. It might be hiding an even greater danger!

After three hours of running, Di Yalan and Shi Yan were both tired.

Though they killed Tumu together at dusk, they paid a price. Di Yalan had lost too much Profound Qi defending against Tumu's fierce attack, and she continued consuming her energy by running non-stop in the woods with Mu Yu Die on her back.

Di Yalan was extremely exhausted now. It was only her strong willpower that was supporting her along.

Shi Yan was in no better state either, his shoulder was wounded, and though it was bound up and the Immortal Martial Spirit was

helping him recover, it still needed more time.

The side effect of operating [Rampage] was a great loss of energy. Also, Kinmo and Tumu's Profound Qi which he had absorbed was still being purified, and the desire for blood was welling up now and then, but he still needed to observe the surroundings cautiously.

He was even more tired than Di Yalan.

"Let's have a rest." Mu Yu Die advised softly. According to Di Yalan's heavier steps and slower actions, Mu Yu Die realized that she was going to hit her limit soon.

"Ok." Shi Yan took a breath and replied calmly, "Let me find a comfortable place."

Immediately, he climbed up an ancient tree like a monkey to find dense foliage to hide himself.

Standing on that ancient tree, Shi Yan was examining the surroundings. Dancing from tree branch to tree branch, he moved to a nearby withered tree.

The ancient tree had thick, dry trunk: it must have been dead for years.

Shi Yan examined the dry branch of that withered ancient tree, and was surprised, "This tree is hollow from the inside, and its bottom is spacious enough for us three to sit down. A good place. You two have a rest first, then come up."

The upper part of that ancient tree was thin and was only wide enough for one person to slip in, but its bottom was rather thick. It was ten metres tall, which was easy for Shi Yan and Di Yalan to slip down, and also wide enough for Mu Yu Die to climb with the help of a rope.

Hearing that there was such a good place, Di Yalan couldn't bear it anymore, and urged, "Then let's get in soon. Demon beasts haunt this area. If we bump into one, it would become trouble."

“Ok, hand that rope to me. I will pull Miss Mu up first.”

Two minutes later.

The three of them sat down together in the hollow bottom of that ancient tree trunk.

The starlight fell into the empty center of the trunk. Outside, the demon beasts were howling ominously.

There was total silence inside.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were filled with agony.

All along the way, those two had stuck with Luo Hao and helped each other through many difficulties. But now, only the two of them were alive, and it was still uncertain if they could survive.

Their friends had died and bad guys kept chasing. Maybe tomorrow the people of the Dark World and the Tush Mercenary Union would catch them and harass them...

The feeling of hopeless for tomorrow made Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan quite worried.

Shi Yan's state was better, for he hadn't been together with Luo Hao for a long time, so he wasn't so emotional. Although the three of them died, he felt far from grieved and could still think straight.

Well, he also felt regret for Luo Hao's death. Luo Hao had treated him well and had trained him within his gravitational field every night, which consumed a lot of Luo Hao's energy. He owed Luo Hao a lot.

Especially when he heard Luo Hao's death was connected to the Mo family, he thought he should take responsibility.

He engraved the three parties; the Dark World, the Tush Mercenary Union and the Mo family, in mind and was determined to take revenge someday.

After glancing at Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die, Shi Yan frowned. They looked dull and hopeless, without any fighting spirit.

He knew they were hurt deeply by Luo Hao's death, but it was still a long way to the Merchant Union; they wouldn't survive if they lost their fighting spirit!

Pondering for a while, Shi Yan considered doing something. Gazing at them, he came up with an idea...

In the center of the hollow tree, the three of them sat down cross-legged. However, due to limited space, when the three of them all sat together, there was only a small space between them. Their legs were so close to each other that they could even feel the warmth from each other's body.

At first, Shi Yan kept his legs together, with a tiny gap between his and the legs of the other women.

But he suddenly spread his legs a little, with his left leg touching the leg of Di Yalan, and his right leg touching the leg of Mu Yu Die. He could clearly feel the difference between the muscles of the two women. One's thigh was strong and solid, while the other's was smooth and soft; he liked both of them.

Shi Yan's little action seemed unintentional, but the two girls both had reaction in their bodies.

Di Yalan raised her head and glared at him, but didn't say anything. However, Mu Yu Die was apparently a little embarrassed. She blushed, and she tried to move her left leg secretly in order to keep a distance from Shi Yan's right leg.

But every time she moved her leg, Shi Yan would move his right leg as well, taking every opportunity to touch her soft leg.

After several times, Mu Yu Die was a little irritated. She realized that Shi Yan was doing this on purpose to take advantage of her, but there was nothing she could do. Her face turned red and she blushed, calling Shi Yan a bastard in secret.

But due to the drama with Shi Yan, Mu Yu Die forgot her sorrow for a while. She was so focused on cursing Shi Yan that she forgot the terrible death of Luo Hao and others.

On the other side, Di Yalan saw through the little tricks Shi Yan was playing with Mu Yu Die. She seemed to have realized something, and so she didn't jump up to stop him. On the contrary, she was staring at Mu Yu Die with a mocking look, as if she was saying that Mu Yu Die was taking this too seriously.

Noticing Di Yalan's look, Mu Yu Die was even more embarrassed, and her face was becoming even redder. She was so angry on the inside that she rolled her eyes at Shi Yan with a look of shame.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, pretending that he was not doing all this on purpose. He breathed in and out naturally, as if he was sleeping.

"Endure! Endure it! I won't let you go peacefully when I recover!" Mu Yu Die was cursing Shi Yan on the inside. She could feel Shi Yan's body temperature on her skin, and her face had turned completely red. But all she could do was to curse him on the inside.

Of course Shi Yan wasn't sleeping.

With his eyes closed, he was feeling and comparing the touch of their thighs. The muscles on Di Yalan's leg was strong and vigorous, while Mu Yu Die's felt soft and bouncy. Both of them were so attractive. After comparing for a while, Shi Yan decided that both of their thighs felt good. He felt so wonderful that he could barely tell which of them was better.

However, while he was focusing on comparing those thighs, Shi Yan started to feel a burning sexual arousal. His primitive desires were out of their cage.

From within his meridians, threads of negative energy started to seep out secretly. Shi Yan could feel his pants getting tighter and tighter.

His breath became shorter and shorter. From deep within, he

didn't have the crazy desire for killing. Instead, he could only feel one simple, but strong desire. The more he suppressed his lust, the more he was about to lose control.

Shi Yan lost control of himself gradually...

Mu Yu Die suddenly noticed this change. She called out in a low voice, "Sister Lan, this guy looks a little strange. It seems... it seems he is returning to the beast he used to be."

Shi Yan was breathing heavily, with sweat covering his forehead. His body was trembling slightly. It looked like he was trying very hard to fight something from the inside.

Because the two, Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die, were sitting next to him with their thighs touching each other, they both noticed the strange reaction on Shi Yan's body.

Glaring at Shi Yan for a moment, Di Yalan blushed as she said, "This time he is different. He wanted to kill before, but now he... he..."

"Now what?" Mu Yu Die was confused.

"Now he wants to eat human flesh..." Di Yalan answered briefly. She looked a little embarrassed as well, and couldn't finish her sentence with a more detailed explanation.

"Eat human flesh?" Mu Yu Die's face turned white as she heard this. She screamed with terror, "This is even worse! How come? Will he also turn into those demon beasts? Sister Lan, is he gonna eat us both? What should we do?"

Apparently she didn't understand Di Yalan.

"You silly girl, what are you thinking about!" Di Yalan cursed with embarrassment, "He is turning into a horny beast."

Mu Yu Die froze for a while before she realized something. Her pretty face got even redder. She mumbled, "Sister Lan, just let me play the zither for a while to help him release his energy. How

about you go out for a while? I... I want to go out as well.”

“OK, I will show you out.” Di Yalan nodded. Her eyes lit up with a flash of light, and was about to fly up...

Just then!

Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes. With bloodshot eyes, he grabbed Di Yalan like a horny beast.

The tree hole was not that big. When she was pinned by Shi Yan, Di Yalan could barely move her beautiful body. There was no way she could escape.

“Bastard! Take your hands off me!” Di Yalan screamed, “You dumb girl, pull him away! Quick!”

Mu Yu Die was taken over with panic. She tried to pull Shi Yan away, but his body was as heavy as a rock. No matter how hard she tried, his body just wouldn’t move.

Di Yalan was extremely exhausted these days. With her Profound Qi not yet recovered, she could barely struggle against Shi Yan’s beastly force.

“Chi-la!” A loud sound of clothes being torn broke the silence in the tree hole.

Di Yalan felt a little chilly around her hip. She instantly realized that her leather skirt was gone. But before she could even defend, she felt a giant hand reaching between her thighs and rubbing her hip insatiably.

“Bastard!” Di Yalan couldn’t help but scream. She shouted to Mu Yu Die, “Quick! Stop him! He has been overtaken by his genitals! ”

“I, I can’t stop him.” Mu Yu Die punched on Shi Yan’s back with all her might and cried out in panic.

“Hmm...” With her sensitive parts being touched and rubbed by those fingers, Di Yalan gradually lost her defenses. She couldn’t find any strength to fight back, and couldn’t help moaning. Her

arms gave up the fight as well.

Mu Yu Die was astonished. She whispered in a low voice with blushed face, “Sister Lan, why... why are you screaming?”

“I am not screaming. Do something, ouch...” Di Yalan felt weaker and weaker, and her voice were getting softer as well.

“Sister Lan, it’s too la... late!” Mu Yu Die mumbled with her eyes filled with fear.

“Wha... What’s too late?” Di Yalan was stunned.

The next moment, she felt a hard thing inside her body. With her body trembling with the thrill, Di Yalan realized that it was too late to put on a fight.

A miraculous feeling pervaded in her body and drowned her sanity...

Aw well, well, maybe we will all be dead tomorrow. I will just let you take me this time.

The continuous pounding she felt from that guy had completely crushed her defenses, both physically and mentally. Di Yalan covered her mouth with one hand. She couldn’t help but scream with pleasure, as Shi Yan continuously twitched inside of her.

Mu Yu Die’s pretty face was covered in panic. She stood there like a statue, watching the two of them getting all sweaty.

Right in front of her, Shi Yan was working hard on Di Yalan. Apparently, under his mighty force, Di Yalan couldn’t put on much fight. She gradually got lost in his passion as well, and even moved her hips to match Shi Yan’s rhythm.

“You, you, you two...”

Mu Yu Die’s pretty face was also bloodshot. She couldn’t do anything but stare at the two of them lying within such a narrow space, doing it right in front of her eyes. The hot picture of them was mind blowing for her.

Mu Yu Die was dumbstruck, and didn't know what to do at all.

Chapter 30 - Inside the Tree

Shi Yan suddenly regained his sanity in the middle of his actions.

His body was still working on the woman, with waves of physical pleasure coursing through him. Even with his eyes closed, he could instantly tell what he had been doing.

He had one hand on Di Yalan's hips, pulling her alluring body tightly towards him, and the other hand lingering on her extraordinary bosoms, rubbing and squeezing.

That hot body of Di Yalan's was completely under his control. She was all over his body like a snake. Her eyes were lost in the passion, with sweet sweat all over her body; she couldn't help but move along with his rhythm, only to bring him more excitement and pleasure.

Many thoughts were speeding through Shi Yan's mind, but his eyes remained shut. Neither did he move his hands roughly. He continued to work his lower body on that woman, and took every moment to enjoy this wonderful experience.

Compared to the rough actions he had before, after he regained his sanity, Shi Yan slightly slowed down his movements with a softer touch, yet with way more masterful skills.

His hands were blessed by magic. When he moved those hands on Di Yalan's body, he knew exactly which spots to work on, triggering an even bigger reaction in her body.

Suddenly, Di Yalan's body was flipped around, with her impressive breasts pressed tightly against the tree while her hips were thrust towards Shi Yan. She lifted her plump hips up, shaking and swinging it back and forth, enjoying Shi Yan's whipping in a new position.

Mu Yu Die was totally embarrassed and blushing. She leaned her fragile body onto the other side of the tree. Her beautiful eyes were

lingering and staring at the two of them doing it.

With his eyes shut, Shi Yan was totally enjoying the moment. He had let his most primitive desires out of his body, which seemed to have sped up the purification process of the Profound Qi in his meridians.

Di Yalan was already lost in his passion, doing nothing but coordinating with Shi Yan's movements.

Before long, Shi Yan felt a strong wave of pleasure flooding towards his brain, completely out of his control. Together with that thrilling excitement, he could feel a most wonderful power start pouring out of his meridians and rushing into his body.

When that strange power reached his abdomen, it split into two parts. One poured into his Profound Qi, while the other part blended with his essence and shot into Di Yalan's body with his coming climax.

With the short gasps of the sweaty man and woman, Mu Yu Die lost all her strength. She fell down onto the ground, breathing heavily as her whole mind went completely blank.

Shi Yan slowly moved away from Di Yalan. He pulled up his pants, sat down in silence and started to operate the Profound Qi inside his body.

Di Yalan had lost all her strength as well, lying weakly on the ground, her whole body shining with a sexy red color. She only came to her senses after a while. She put on her leather skirt with a red face and slowly sat down.

The three of them returned to their original positions, sitting together in the tree with crossed-legs.

Mu Yu Die was the first to regain her calm. Although her face was still a little red, she moved her beautiful eyes between Shi Yan and Di Yalan, as if expecting something from them.

Shi Yan looked calm on the outside. He kept his eyes closed, and focused his attention on the strange power he felt in his Profound Qi during his orgasm. He was guiding this power within his Profound Qi slowly through his body. He wouldn't want to miss any opportunity to enhance his power.

Di Yalan hadn't opened her eyes yet, but she knew that Mu Yu Die was staring at her the whole time. Out of shame, she didn't dare to open her eyes and look up. She was so ashamed that she just wanted to bury herself in the ground.

Shi Yan had forced himself on her inside this tree, right in front of Mu Yu Die. However, she didn't put up much of a fight. Even worse, she was actually enjoying it during the process. She felt so ashamed of herself. Despite being a casual and bold girl, she knew this craziness was totally out of line for her. She was too ashamed to face Mu Yu Die.

Right about that time, a strange excitement slowly rose and spread from the sensitive parts of her lower body. Di Yalan couldn't help but tremble, and almost moaned again.

She anxiously twisted her body, secretly calling herself a slut, and quickly concentrated her attention on the change that was going on in her body.

After some observation, Di Yalan felt that the strange power inside of her had turned into two streams. One stream was flowing slowly towards her abdomen, while the other part had settled around her chest and her flesh and muscles, which seemed to have altered the parts around her chest in secret.

She could clearly feel her bones and flesh, muscles and vessels around her chest going through some incredible changes which she couldn't explain.

That strange energy, mixed with her Profound Qi, had been pouring into her abdomen, driving out a strong wave of power from within.

Her Profound Qi had suddenly been enhanced enormously!

Di Yalan couldn't help but exclaim. She quickly concentrated on dealing with her refreshed Profound Qi, operating it through a specific path through her body.

The bright moonlight was shining into the tree, and lit up the tiny space inside.

Shi Yan slowly woke up, breathing slowing in and out with a calm rhythm.

He had reached the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm!

With the help of that strange power, Shi Yan had enhanced himself to the next level, and successfully reached the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm.

After he woke up, Shi Yan found the wound on his shoulder didn't hurt that much. With the help of the Immortal Martial Spirit, the broken bones and muscles were slowly regenerating and recovering themselves on their own.

With this speed, it would only take a few days before he had fully recovered.

When he slowly opened his eyes, Shi Yan noticed a bright pair of eyes staring straight at him. But when he looked back, those beautiful eyes quickly looked away.

"Miss Mu, how come you are still awake?" Shi Yan said with a calm voice, with nothing strange showing on his face.

Seeing Shi Yan looking back at her, Mu Yu Die was so embarrassed that she quickly looked away. She turned her face away with a blush to avoid eye contact, and said in a joking tone, "You two were making such loud noises. How is it possible for me to fall asleep?"

"Oh, so sorry to disturb you. I will remember that next time." Shi

Yan laughed with embarrassment and defended himself with a natural explanation, “There must be something wrong with my body. Something odd happened to me and destroyed my sanity. There’s nothing I could do about it. Sorry.”

“So you mean you were unconscious during the whole time?” Mu Yu Die said with a grin on her face, “I was watching you two doing it. At first you were, but afterwards.... afterwards you couldn’t have been unconscious! Otherwise... otherwise, you wouldn’t be able to... to do that kind of thing...”

Mu Yu Die was too shy to continue her sentence. She was right there when Shi Yan pulled out all those tricks on Di Yalan.

No one in their unconscious mind would be able to play all those sexual tricks or remember all those different kinds of sexual positions, right in the middle of being insane. Therefore, Mu Yu Die was certain that Shi Yan had come to his senses way before he finished on Di Yalan.

“Err...” Shi Yan was completely speechless for a while. He sat frozen there for some time and put on an embarrassing smile, “So Miss Mu, have you have been watching us doing it the whole time? Then please spare my rude actions. I know that I am a real bastard.”

“You! How can you be so shameless?” Mu Yu Die got so angry that she hit Shi Yan hard on his thigh, making Shi Yan scream and beg for mercy.

Seeing Shi Yan suffering and screaming, Mu Yu Die felt a little better. She turned around and saw Di Yalan was also sitting there in silence with her eyes closed. However, her face was also carrying a shiny blush.

Mu Yu Die also felt angry towards Di Yalan. She jumped over to her side and suddenly patted on her thigh.

Di Yalan was already very embarrassed. She couldn’t help the

trembling of her body, but still kept her eyes shut. She thought this was another trick of Shi Yan, and called him a fucking bastard in secret. After all this, how dare he still tease her like this?

“Sister Lan, how long are you planning to fool us by sleeping? Your face is already as red as an apple. And you still want to pretend that you are operating your Profound Qi? You think we are both too foolish to tell?” Mu Yu Die said in an annoyed voice.

Di Yalan let out a soft sigh and opened her eyes reluctantly. She replied with embarrassment, “I... I just woke up. What... what are you two talking about? I have no idea.”

Mu Yu Die went silent all of a sudden. However, the beautiful but sharp eyes of hers were continuously moving between Di Yalan and Shi Yan. Her underlying sentence was obvious: How can you just pretend that nothing had happened between the two of you?

Under the judgmental stare from Mu Yu Die, Shi Yan still remained calm and peaceful. You’ve got to say, there aren’t many people as shameless as him in this world. He actually could pretend that nothing had happened between him and the woman.

Because he guessed that Di Yalan actually wouldn’t mind this thing very much. She would even like or miss this kind of feeling. Knowing that he wouldn’t receive any trouble from Di Yalan, he didn’t bother to worry at all.

However, under Mu Yu Die’s questioning look, Di Yalan wasn’t able to remain that calm. She thought about it and decided that she should express some anger toward Shi Yan. Otherwise, she would really appear to be shameless in the eyes of Mu Yu Die.

Despite everything, Shi Yan had helped her experience overwhelming pleasure and excitement, which her man could hardly offer even back when he was still alive.

“You fucking bastard!” Di Yalan suddenly jumped up, screaming with a sharp voice and pointing right at Shi Yan, “How dare you do

that to me back then? How dare you?”

“Shh! Keep it quiet! You are gonna draw all those demon beasts here. Furthermore, the people from the Dark World are still chasing us!” Shi Yan reminded her.

Di Yalan nodded. She had lost her power again, and said in a low voice, “You asshole, so how are you gonna make it up to me?”

Seeing Di Yalan acting like this, he was even more assured about his prior judgment. He knew that she didn’t mind this little episode very much. She only jumped out to accuse him because of the pressure from Mu Yu Die.

Shi Yan was actually amused by her reaction. He pretended to be thinking very hard there. He bowed his head down, put on a sad face, pretending to be sincere in his apology, and said in an honest voice, “It’s all my fault. Sister Lan, how about you tell me, how would you like to be compensated?”

Di Yalan was literally surprised by his reply. She froze for a while and thought very hard about his question. She only came to curse him, because she didn’t want to appear shameless in front of Mu Yu Die. She actually hadn’t really thought about how to punish Shi Yan. Caught by surprise by Shi Yan, she literally didn’t know how to respond.

“How about... how about you beat him up and call it a night?” Mu Yu Die put on a naughty face and joked about it. Even she could tell that her Sister Lan was not intending to punish Shi Yan, at least not very hard.

“That’s a good idea. He surely deserves that!” Di Yalan nodded with agreement, and said with a tough voice, “Just wait until he recovers from his wounds. At that time, I’m gonna kick his ass! You don’t need to worry about this. I will make sure that you will be satisfied with his punishment. ”

Mu Yu Die rolled her eyes at Di Yalan and went completely

speechless. What was that all about? What do I have to do with your business? So you are simply punishing him in order to make me satisfied?

“Whatever you two. I’m going to sleep.” Mu Yu Die had finally realized that she was literally caring too much. She should have just minded her own business. She mumbled as she turned to sleep, “One horny man, one slutty woman... no wonder... you two were already expecting this to happen... I should have known better... Poor me, my soul has been hurt, and my eyes have been polluted...”

She kept a low voice, but due to the small space between the three of them, it wouldn’t be a surprise that both Di Yalan and Shi Yan had heard her clearly.

Shi Yan secretly grinned and pretended to be sleeping.

However, Di Yalan couldn’t take this anymore. She teased Mu Yu Die a little, “You wicked girl!”

Mu Yu Die took a glance at her and mumbled again, “You two, be quiet for the rest of the night. I really need some good sleep. Please, just control yourselves. I cannot take your actions anymore.”

Di Yalan replied with a blush on her face, “I know, I know, just go to sleep, you wicked girl!”

Chapter 31 - Blue Magic Flames

Mu Yu Die did as she was told, and shut her mouth.

However, with Mu Yu Die staying quiet, the atmosphere between Di Yalan and Shi Yan got a little embarrassing. The two of them just lay there facing each other. Neither of them knew what to say.

“It’s about dawn.” Shi Yan looked up at the sky, trying to make some casual conversation. “How are you feeling? Has your Profound Qi recovered?”

“Not only has my Profound Qi recovered, but it has also been enhanced.”

Di Yalan checked her body in secret. Her eyes suddenly lit up in excitement. She said in a low voice, with a blush on her face, “Back then... back then it seemed like there was some strange energy streaming into my body. That strange energy merged with my own Profound Qi, and even altered something in my chest.”

She frowned a little, trying very hard to recall the feeling. She thought that the strange stream of energy seemed to have come from Shi Yan, or was originated from the Profound Qi that he had shot into her body.

Shi Yan thought for a while, and whispered to himself, “It really is that...”

Di Yalan’s gorgeous eyes lit up with an exotic charm again. She insisted, “Is it because of you?”

Shi Yan nodded, and explained with a smile, “I once received some pills from an Alchemist, but when I took them I never managed to absorb them entirely. However, those pills, as well as their power, still remain inside my body. Back then... back then it seemed as if the power of those pills merged with my Profound Qi and got planted into your body as well. ”

The thing about absorbing Profound Qi from dead people was too

creepy and scary to talk about, and Shi Yan didn't want anybody else to know about his secret. Therefore, he was using Master Karu as an excuse, and claiming all his strange power due to those pills.

“Those pills must have been extraordinarily precious.” Di Yalan nodded. She seemed to have bought Shi Yan's story. Along their travels, Shi Yan had resorted to using poisonous medicine powders several times. Therefore, she had already suspected that Shi Yan had some kind of relation with an Alchemist.

“Yeah, I guess.” Shi Yan smiled without elaborating too much on his relationship with Master Karu. He thought for a while and said with a frown, “You mentioned that there was a strange stream of energy which seemed to have changed the muscles and blood vessels within your chest. Can you try to operate your Profound Qi around your chest and see if there are any reactions?”

Shi Yan suddenly thought of the miraculous awakening of his Petrification Martial Spirit inside his body. It seemed that the strange flow of energy could not only enhance one's Profound Qi, but also trigger one's dormant Martial Spirit.

It was exactly due to the influence of that strange energy that the dormant Petrification Martial Spirit inside his body had suddenly awakened. Even the emergence of the Immortal Martial Spirit probably had something to do with that strange stream of energy. Hearing Di Yalan talking about the odd changes in her chest, Shi Yan had already come up with a theory.

“OK. Let me try.” Di Yalan slowly nodded. She concentrated her energy into her chest and paid close attention to the changes happening inside.

Controlling her Profound Qi, streams of Profound Qi flew into her beautiful bosoms, and lingered for a while around her tender breasts. But now, her Profound Qi seemed to be a bit different. Suddenly a most amazing thing happened. It seemed that her Profound Qi had changed and was becoming hotter and hotter.

Di Yalan suddenly panicked. She quickly moved the Profound Qi towards her arm, and then through the veins and vessels, into her right palm.

“Boom!”

A magic flame the color of purest blue suddenly jumped out of Di Yalan’s right palm. Although the flame was merely the size of a fist, it was burning with an extraordinarily high temperature. The little flame was dancing on Di Yalan’s palm, lighting up the hollow tree, as if they were embraced by the tender blue waves of the ocean.

“Wow!”

Di Yalan couldn’t help but exclaim. She jumped with excitement and her eyes were shining brightly.

Bingo!

Shi Yan was also secretly cheering. He was right about this energy! Looking at that blue flame, he was now certain that that strange energy could really trigger one’s inborn Martial Spirit!

“The Blue Magic Flame!”

Di Yalan couldn’t help but scream in excitement. She said with complete thrill, “This is the Martial Spirit of my family! I know about this! This is the Blue Magic Flames Martial Spirit! Since my grandfather, no one has inherited this Martial Spirit. Oh my God! But how... how is this even possible?”

Mu Yu Die was already awake due to the noise they were making. She was also staring at Di Yalan, but couldn’t figure out what was going on. Mu Yu Die looked so confused, “How is that even possible? Sister Lan, you are already 27 years old. How come that you could still awaken the dormant Martial Spirit inside your body? What is going on here? Is this a dream?” She rubbed her eyes and still couldn’t believe what just happened.

“Ha!” Di Yalan was brimming with excitement. She had

absolutely no idea how to express her bliss. She couldn't help but continuously stare at that blue burning flame on her palm, and she suddenly burst into tears.

She was actually crying in joy.

However, Shi Yan could totally understand her feelings.

On the Grace Mainland, warriors with Martial Spirits definitely took a dominant position. They would have more prosperous future as well. To warriors, the Martial Spirits were more important than anything else. Those without a Martial Spirit would often dream and kill for a Martial Spirit.

To warriors like Di Yalan, whose family had once possessed a Martial Spirit, it was a real shame not to carry on their family's Martial Spirit as an inheritance.

If this situation continued for several generations, even the most glorious family could end up fading into oblivion.

No matter if it was the warrior, or their family, possession of a Martial Spirit was essential.

"So what is really going on here?" Mu Yu Die was still confused after staring at Di Yalan for a while, who was totally flying high in excitement, so she had to turn the question to Shi Yan.

"Um..." Shi Yan put on an embarrassed smile, "Well, this is hard to explain. It has something to do with the pills and their exotic power. I don't exactly know what kind of pills they were. Anyway, those pills are indeed a little extraordinary. Quit staring at me like that. I already said I really have no idea."

"You bastard! Come here! Thank you! Thank you!" Di Yalan put out the blue flame on her palm, and suddenly hugged Shi Yan tightly, as if she were trying to squeeze his whole body into her bosom. Her sexy body couldn't help but tremble with the excitement.

Those delicious bosoms of hers were squeezed against Shi Yan's

chest, which gave Shi Yan the opportunity to experience their glorious softness again. Before long, he had that kind of reaction from below his belt again.

But this time, Di Yalan found out about his little thrill down there almost immediately. She quickly released Shi Yan from her arms with a blush on her face. Her eyes were especially charming, shining with light and dancing colors. She couldn't help but laugh and said with a smile, "You ass, always so horny!"

"Hey..." Shi Yan also laughed in embarrassment. He didn't give a reply though.

Mu Yu Die stared at the two people and she was obviously not so happy, "Hey! You two, knock it off! I am still here! Don't put on a sex show in front of me every time you get a chance!"

"You wicked girl! I'm just too excited!" Di Yalan replied with a laugh.

"What is going on after all?" The question was killing Mu Yu Die.

"I don't know either." Di Yalan shook her head, her eyes still lit up with those flying colors. She laughed, "I guess it's all because of him."

"You mean... you had sex with this guy, and then all of a sudden, your Martial Spirit that had been dormant inside of your body for 27 years, which probably would never be awakened in your life, was suddenly brought to life?" Mu Yu Die said with a curious look on her pretty face.

"Incredible as it sounds, that is the truth." Di Yalan admitted with a red face.

"So... so the essence of his, what is it? Some magic medicine with a strange power?" Mu Yu Die also started to blush. She shook her head as she couldn't believe this at all, "No, no! I don't believe this! This doesn't make sense at all!"

"Hmm..." Shi Yan looked up at the sky from the hollow tree, and

said, “The sun is out. We should get going.”

“Yeah, we should probably keep moving.” Di Yalan agreed. Apparently, she didn’t want to spend too much time discussing this issue about herself, in case Mu Yu Die would say something again to embarrass her.

After saying that, Di Yalan quickly flew up to the top of the hollow tree. She threw a rope down to the two of them and asked Mu Yu Die to come out quickly.

“No, I am still not buying it!” Mu Yu Die was obviously still obsessed with the issue, and only grabbed that rope after some sighing and groaning.

With Di Yalan’s help, Mu Yu Die slowly rose up with help from the rope, and slowly rose to the top of the hollow tree.

“Ah! You asshole! What are you doing?” Mu Yu Die suddenly started screaming. The two delicate legs of hers were kicking desperately, and her mesmerising body was swinging in the air.

“Let me help you with this.” Shi Yan put both his hands on Mu Yu Die’s soft bottom and tried to lift her up. He said with a horny smile, “There you go. This will save you some effort.”

“No! Stop it! I don’t want your help!” Mu Yu Die shouted with her body twisting intensely. Her hands suddenly lost their grip and she fell from mid-air.

“Thump!”

The two of them fell onto the ground inside the hollow tree.

Shi Yan was lying there with a satisfactory look on his face. Mu Yu Die was sitting right across his waist with her legs kicking and shouting, “Stop! Stop!”

The soft and smooth bottom of hers was right where Shi Yan liked it most, pressing tightly against his sensitive parts.

Shi Yan’s dick was still hard due to the previous entanglement

with Di Yalan. Now, with the pressing and twisting of Mu Yu Die's hips, and her delicious parts continuously touching and rubbing his sensitive parts, Shi Yan was turned on again, and he almost couldn't help but moan in great pleasure.

“Ah! Asshole! You horny dog!”

It didn't take Mu Yu Die much time to discover Shi Yan's intentions. She quickly got up with her hands covering her butt, screaming and crying. Her face was so pretty with that blush, and her beautiful eyes were filled with little tears. “Sister Lan, this bad guy! He was trying to take advantage of me!”

“Shh!” Di Yalan looked pretty serious. She made a sign to tell them to stay quiet.

Shi Yan quickly stood up. He suddenly forgot all about the sexy scenes that had previously happened in this hollow tree. He climbed up the tree quickly and stayed with Di Yalan. He said with a calm and cool voice, “What's the situation?”

“Demon beasts!”

Chapter 32 - The Silver Thunder Wolf

The howls of the demon beasts came from the woods far away.

“Tata! Tata!”

Heavy running steps sounded across the silent night. Judging from the sound of those steps, one could tell that it must have been human beings running in the woods.

However, Shi Yan couldn't tell if it was a warrior chasing the demon beast, or a demon beast hunting a human. He didn't want to be involved, and thus said to Di Yalan, “Hide well. Let's not ask for trouble. Remember the lesson from the Tush Mercenary Union.”

Di Yalan nodded, and mumbled to Mu Yu Die on the hollow tree, “Don't make a sound. Stay inside the tree leaves.”

“Let's go and hide inside another dense tree.” After a little thought, Shi Yan moved swiftly, found another luxuriant ancient tree and crouched in the leaves immediately.

As soon as he did that, Di Yalan came up and hid herself with him.

They were still on alert as they hid themselves in the dense leaves. Meanwhile they also removed their scent from the surroundings, to completely hide their presence.

Before long, five flustered mercenaries appeared at a distance with terrified looks on their faces.

They were all heavily wounded. Amongst them, the leader was a Human Level warrior, and the rest were at the Nascent Level.

The mercenaries were running through the woods with flustered expressions, looking over their shoulders, as if they were getting chased by demon beasts.

And that was exactly what was happening.

Just as they appeared in Shi Yan's sight, he beheld a Fire Snake and two Ice Lizards moving in the woods quickly. At the same time, several Silver Armoured Scorpions, which were nearly a foot big, came up from the left, seeming to encircle them.

The five mercenaries were completely terrified as they rushed into the woods.

Shi Yan turned pale as he realised that those mercenaries were done for.

Shi Yan could clearly see a robust Silver Wolf in the direction they were heading to. The wolf was four metres long but they didn't see it!

The wolf had two silver five-meter-long wings, which looked novel and mysterious, adorned with delicate patterns.

Though it was the first time that Shi Yan had seen it, he had heard its story long ago. That was a Silver Thunder Wolf of Level Seven---- atop demon beast in the Dark Forest!

Then he was sure that it wouldn't be a warriors-kill-demon beasts scenario, but... the complete opposite one.

The bloody hunting started at once!

The moment the five warriors rushed into the woods and saw the awaiting Silver Thunder Wolf, they screamed with despair.

The Silver Thunder Wolf didn't even give them a chance to struggle. It spread its thunder wings in no time and devastating blasts came out one after another beside the warriors. Three of them cut into shreds in an instant!

The Silver Thunder Wolf stood there in arrogance----it didn't strike again.

Those chasing demon beasts ran up quickly and encircled the rest two in no time.

The Fire Snake and Ice Lizards worked together to attack the

warriors. Soon, one of them was poisoned by the Silver Armour Scorpion, and the other killed by an Ice Lizard.

“Creak!” “Creak!”

Horrifying sounds broke the serenity of the deep forest.

Apart from the Silver Thunder Wolf, the other demon beasts crowded around the five dead bodies and started feasting on their bones.

Di Yalan was too terrified to look in that direction.

She was not at all afraid of killing, but those demon beasts were eating human flesh, which would make her vomit badly if she saw...

Hiding in the leaves, Shi Yan was gazing at those demon beasts calmly, while figuring out something in his mind.

As the five warriors were dead, their Profound Qi was gradually seeping out, and as it would eventually melt in the air and disappear.

If he could get to that area before the Profound Qi disappeared, he would benefit by a lot!

However, there were so many demon beasts feasting on the bodies, he could do nothing but hope they would leave soon.

“Oooouch...”

A miserable human cry came from very far away, which was full of fear and despair.

The still Silver Thunder Wolf suddenly howled and dashed out.

Hearing its howl, those demon beasts, who had almost eaten up the five bodies, stopped eating at once and followed the wolf in a hurry. They seemed to hunt other human beings.

Immediately, Shi Yan jumped down the dense tree as soon as they left, and headed to those messed up bodies like a ghost.

Di Yalan was startled as she screamed from the tree in a low voice, “What are you doing?”

“Going and checking what had happened. I will be back soon. Don’t leave the tree.” Shi Yan didn’t even bother to look back and moved to those bodies speedily. As he arrived near to the bodies, he closed his eyes and began to feel them.

Luckily enough, it wasn’t too late for him. The warrior of Human Level had more Profound Qi than others, and there was still twenty percent of it left on his body.

The invisible Profound Qi went into his pores, as being attracted by a magnet, and then flew into his meridians...

Sensing the power of the foreign Profound Qi, Shi Yan smiled with satisfaction.

Before long, all the Profound Qi which had not melted and disappeared into the air yet, went into Shi Yan’s body.

At the sight of the limbs and entrails on the ground, Shi Yan frowned. Nonetheless, enduring the bad smell, he began to examine their carry bags.

There was too much blood on the food, and it might also be the poison from the Silver Armour Scorpion----it’s inedible now. Crystal coins were not of much use in this area, and too many of it would prevent them from moving fast, thus the warriors didn’t carry too many crystal coins.

Searching for a while, Shi Yan was able to pillage only few demon beast material and medicine..

Poor guys!

Shi Yan mumbled as he cleaned his hands with one bag. Then he walked towards where Di Yalan was hiding.

“Hooooowl!” “Hooooowl!”

Demon beasts were howling in the Dark Forest even at dawn.

They seemed to be running around and hunting for warriors and mercenaries in a group.

Hearing the horrifying sound, Shi Yan wasn't frightened. On the contrary, he was a little happy.

Demon beasts' actions would influence their chasers. They would be spotted by demon beasts if they were still moving in the forest at night, and the more they moved, the more likely they would be found by the demon beasts. Maybe the people from the Dark World, Mo Family and the Tush Mercenary Union would lose a lot tonight, and the demon beasts would have a full belly tonight.

He was right...

That night, Mo Chaoge and his people were taken care of by the demon beasts.

As they wanted Shi Yan and Mu Yu Die desperately, the troop didn't sleep at night after Hu Long committed suicide. Instead, they kept searching for Shi Yan and his friends in the Dark Forest. Therefore, they were noticed by demon beasts. Thanks to the five warriors, the troops finally got to know of the reality and hid themselves in ancient trees.

"What were you doing?" Di Yalan frowned, "Were their possessions really worth the risk? If the demon beasts returned or if you were noticed by them, you would have had no way to escape!"

"Look, didn't I return safely?"

Shi Yan climbed up the tree without explaining what he had gained. Looking rigid, he said, "Why are all the demon beasts hunting for warriors and mercenaries like crazy? Someone must have done something to irritate them! Or they wouldn't act like this!"

"What should we do?" Di Yalan had no idea, "Are we still going to head forward?"

“Wait for a while. After spending the whole night hunting, those demon beasts should be much more subdued during the day. We can set off at noon.”

“Okay then.”

Chapter 33 - Martial Spirit of Music

Di Yalan and Shi Yan went into the hollow tree again.

“What’s happening?” Mu Yu Die, who was staying in the hollow tree in fear, got a little surprised, “I heard some explosions just now. Did some demon beasts pass by?”

Shi Yan sat down and began to feel the Profound Qi which had filled his meridians, without replying to Mu Yu Die.

Most of the Profound Qi, on those five warriors, had vanished into the air, and Shi Yan was able to absorb only a small part of it.

But since there was a Human-Level warrior among them, even if he just got a small part, it was a lot.

However, Shi Yan was still a little worried. He was cautious, for he didn’t know when the negative emotions would break out.

Seeing Shi Yan keep silence, Di Yalan told Mu Yu Die what had just happened outside.

Hearing the story, Mu Yu Die’s face turned serious and she seemed to be more worried. They were chased by so many bad guys, and now there were demon beasts in their way, she found their future was getting more and more hopeless.

The sun rose slowly and began to light up the sky. After one night’s rest, the three started to discuss in the hollow tree.

Shi Yan didn’t got too many chances to communicate with the girls when Luo Hao and his people were with them, so he didn’t know much about them. But now those males, including Luo Hao, had been killed, so he guessed he should know more about them, or he would land himself in a passive position.

“Why is the Dark World chasing you?” Shi Yan asked in a steady voice while frowning, “You are from the Fire Empire?”

Mu Yu Die nodded and sighed, “It’s all because of me...”

“What’s the matter?” Shi Yan knew Mu Yu Die was a very special person. Now that she was to explain, he wanted the whole story.

“Sister Lan, you tell him.” Mu Yu Die glanced at Di Yalan and sighed again.

“You don’t know who Die is?” Di Yalan was surprised as she looked at Shi Yan with curious eyes, “Though you are from the Merchant Union, you must have heard of General Muku from the Fire Empire?!”

“Muku? The General of the Eagle Army of the Fire Empire? The Iron Eagle King?”

Shi Yan was so astonished that he nodded after a long thought, “So she is the granddaughter of The Iron Eagle King ? I got it.”

Shi Yan went through the fragmental memories about the Iron Eagle King - King Muku, and . got the complete story after recalling it.

In the memories of the other Shi Yan, Muku was the General of the Eagle Army of the Fire Empire, who was a Nirvana-Level warrior and held the real power of the Fire Empire!

The Iron Eagle King was not only famous in the Fire Empire, but also well known in the Merchant Union and the God-blessed Empire.

Muku was a legendary military leader who was seen in every battle between the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire. He was famous for his cruelty on the battlefield, and uncountable people had perished in his hands!

Muku was merciless to his foes, and was also obstinate to his own people, thus offending many powerful people.

Three years ago, in a battle between the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire, Muku was killed by five Nirvana-Level warriors.

For Muku had offended a lot of people when he was alive, his

family got into trouble as soon as he died. Just in a few days, many of his direct relatives were slaughtered, thus the big family sank at once.

“I have heard of the Iron Eagle King.” After thinking for a while, Shi Yan nodded.

“Die is the Eagle King’s granddaughter, the only survivor of her family. The Dark World is an organization of assassins in the Empire, and it was the one who slaughtered her family. Die could survive only because of her Martial Spirit. On that day, her zither killed a lot of people in an invisible way, for her Martial Spirit has something to do with music...”

“You mean, Miss Mu’s Martial Spirit could kill with her zither?”

“Yes. Die’s zither can not only prevent one from becoming mad, but also can shatter one’s organs. The Dark World wants Die because their lord trains in a vicious Martial Skill and loses his mind now and then. He wants to calm himself with the help of Die’s music.”

“I got it.” Shi Yan nodded.

“As the Dark World was involved in the slaughter of her family, Die would rather die than help them. How could she help their lord train his vicious Martial Skill!”

But the Dark World was too powerful in the Fire Empire, so she had to seek for shelter in foreign countries.

Knowing Mu Yu Die’s identity and story, Shi Yan asked again, “Then why can’t Miss Mu operate her Martial Spirit now?”

“Her Martial Spirit is quite special. Everytime she operates her Martial Spirit and kills people, several of her veins break like the zither strings. Before the veins reconnect, the Profound Qi can’t move fluently. She would get injured heavily if she operated the Profound Qi, and it would take more time for the Martial Spirit to recover.”

Di Yalan looked gloomy, “Two months ago, just as we were about to enter the Dark Forest at the border of the Fire Empire, the Dark World found us and we lost several people. Since Uncle Luo couldn’t prevent them anymore, Die operated her Profound Qi. Though she killed a lot, her own veins broke too. And they have not recovered yet.”

“So you need your veins to help operate the Profound Qi?” Shi Yan was quite confused, “Are you playing your zither, or playing your veins?”

“I can’t explain either.” Mu Yu Die replied lazily. She looked dim.

“Damage to the Martial Spirit...” Shi Yan deliberated over it for a moment, then he uttered, “Maybe I could help.”

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan’s eyes lit at once, they stared at Shi Yan together!

“Well...” Shi Yan just popped up with that thought and he got embarrassed, “Well, sister Lan, your Martial Spirit had come to life? The medicine in my body may be helpful for her too. I think...”

“Don’t you ever think about that!”

Mu Yu Die replied with anger and she stared at him, “Stop your dirty idea about me!”

She knew too well how Di Yalan regained her Martial Spirit...How would she sell her virginity for it?!

“I was joking. Don’t take it seriously.” Shi Yan looked indifferent, and he looked up at the entrance of the hollow tree, “It’s about noon, and I don’t hear demon beasts, let’s resume our journey.”

“Ok.” Di Yalan giggled.

...

They got out from the tree hole and advanced in the forest, while

Di Yalan still carried Mu Yu Die on her back.

After a whole night's hunting, the demon beasts all seemed to be resting. They didn't see a single high-level demon beast on the way. Yet, those human remains reminded them how nasty the demon beasts were last night.

At dusk.

The Profound Qi in Shi Yan's body was purified, and thus the negative power filled Shi Yan's mind again. He got a strong urge to kill.

He knew Mu Yu Die's zither could comfort him and diminish the negative emotions, but it would attract those demon beasts and their chasers in the serenity of the forest.

Since he had the experience with Di Yalan, Shi Yan hesitated for a second, wandered his lustful eyes on Di Yalan's delicious body for a while as he developed a plan.

...

Night came.

In a secret valley, Mu Yu Die cuddled in the branches of a dense ancient tree. She was gazing at the bushes ten meters away with a blushed face, while grinding her teeth.

The bushes were shaking continuously, combined with waves of suppressed moans...

"Whores!" Biting her lips, Mu Yu Die cursed.

After a long yell, that bush calmed down.

Minutes later, Shi Yan and Di Yalan stood up from it and walked back with messy clothes.

Shi Yan walked in steady steps and looked calm, as if nothing had happened.

While Di Yalan looked fresh in her skin and smiled with satisfied

eyes, though she had some grass in her long hair.

“Miss Mu, why didn’t you go to sleep?” As he got close, Shi Yan saw Mu Yu Die was watching him in despise, so he asked casually with a careless smile.

“Humph!” Mu Yu Die was angry as she cursed, “Shameless!”

“Oh?” Shi Yan returned her a smile, and said casually, “Maybe we can’t even see the sun tomorrow, who would care about this? Do whatever you want.”

“Yeah, we could be three dead bodies at this time of tomorrow. I don’t care.” Di Yalan walked up and showed just a slight of shame.

Hearing their excuse, Mu Yu Die was stunned. As she realized their situation, she didn’t know what to say at all.

“Sister Lan, train by heart. Maybe you can improve a lot.” Shi Yan smiled meaningfully.

“Ok, I understand.” Di Yalan got his undertone and laughed, “You are really something, aren’t you! Haha!”

Thus, Di Yalan climbed up the ancient tree and sat down on a strong branch. Under Mu Yu Die’s confused eyes, she started to train wholeheartedly.

Shi Yan didn’t climb up the tree. Instead, he sat down beside the tree cross-legged.

Due to the intercourse with Di Yalan, those negative emotions in his meridians were cleansed. And the miraculous power from the meridians gushed into his body and nourished his Martial Spirit.

Only a small part of it went into Di Yalan’s body, but this benefited Di Yalan too.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan could feel that power was changing his blood and flesh. He operated his Profound Qi in the Big Circulation.

One hour later, Shi Yan found that that miraculous power had all

gone into his body, thus he began to practise his Petrification Martial Spirit.

As he thought about it, his bare arms hardened, and gradually they turned into dark brown.

Dark brown?

Shi Yan opened his eyes abruptly, which were as bright as stars. He looked in wonder and carefully examined his arms.

Dark brown! It was exactly Dark brown!

Shi Yan was so excited that he wanted to laugh wildly. At that moment, he finally realized how that power benefited his Martial Spirit magically.

Chapter 34 - Mysterious Martial Spirit

He realized in surprise that the power could not only operate the Profound Qi, but also increase it by levels!

The Martial Spirit only increases with the advancement in martial levels. It will be enhanced only with the progression to higher level.

This was to say, one would have a breakthrough in his Martial Spirit only when he enhanced from Elementary Level to Nascent Level, or from Nascent Level to Human Level, and so on.

The small progress from the First Sky of Nascent Level to the Second Sky wouldn't change the Martial Spirit a bit.

Only the progress across levels could develop the Martial Spirit!

However there were exceptions!

The Martial Spirit didn't increase with every advancement of a level. Sometimes, it only increased when the warrior progressed by two or three levels!

For example, the progress of Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit consisted of four stages.

A descendant of Shi Family who inherited Petrification Martial Spirit, would show grey skin about ten days after his birth, which meant the First Stage.

If this guy was diligent in training Martial Arts and reached the Human Level, the Petrification Martial Spirit would develop and his skin would turn dark brown, which was the Second Stage.

Once he got to the Earth Level, the skin would grow green with the advancement in Martial Skill, which meant the Third Stage.

If he was genius enough to get to the Sky Level, the Martial Skill would reach the pinnacle and the skin would turn purple, which would be the Fourth Stage!

The Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi Family strengthened only with every two levels and then changed one's skin color.

Everytime the Petrification Martial Spirit changed and progressed to a higher state, one's muscles' defensive power would increase by several times!

When the Petrification Martial Spiritl was at First Stage, one could easily defend against human fists and attacks infused with Profound Qi to a level.

When it reached the Second Stage and the skin turned dark brown, the defensive power would increase by many times, and one could not only defend against the strong attacks from Profound Qi, but could also safegaurd attacks from average weapons.

The green skin of Stage Three had a much stronger defensive power! Weapons could hardly penetrate one's body, and at the same time, one's body would still unbelievably be agile and flexible!

As it reached Stage Four, the body would turn purple and wouldn't be injured by anything, not even by water, fire, or any mysterious tricks. The body would become emormously powerful and agile.

Initally, if the descendant of Shi Family was at Elementary or Nascent Level, his Petrification Martial Spirit would stay at Stage One. It wouldn't advance until he broke to Human Level. The stage of this Martial Spirit advanced only with the increase of one's level.

Other Martial Spirits on the Grace Mainland were all the same as Petrification: they increase along with the advancing of one's level. But some magical pills could change the rules, and help the Martial Spirit increase cross levels.

On the Grace Mainland, these magical pills existed only in legends. Warriors of The Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire and the Merchant Union had merely heard of these. The real pills

hadn't been beheld by anybody.

Even the three Medicine Kings of the Medicine Valley in the Fire Empire were only Soul-Level alchemists, far from the Divinity Level alchemists who were able to refine such magical pills.

However, that power from his meridians seemed to have broken the rules!

That magical power could not only awaken the Martial Spirit, but also increase the Martial Spirit through stages!

His arms had turned dark brown after petrification, which would happen only to a warrior of Human Level from the Shi Family.

This was apparently the Second Stage of Petrification!

The magical power could awaken his Martial Spirit, and can also increase it, what did this mean?

It meant that he might enter Stage Four of Petrification Martial Spirit even if he hadn't advanced to the Sky Level!

Being impervious to either weapon or water, the body would not turn stiff, but become more agile, being able to defend against all kinds of attacks.

At the thought of power of Stage Four of Petrification, Shi Yan was pleased that he had gained something precious.

This ability was obviously a Martial Spirit too, which not only helped him purify the Profound Qi in his meridians, but also mysteriously imposed negative emotions on his foes during fights.

This mysterious Martial Spirit was able to absorb Profound Qi from the dead, alter it into alive magical power in meridians, and awaken and increase other Martial Spirits...

Shi Yan's dark eyes were sparkling like stars.

Sitting there silently, he realized that if he trained hard with the help of this amazing Martial Spirit, he would be a terrible existence on the Grace Mainland!

...

The Dark Forest. In a bloody area, where there were dead bodies all around the ground, a troop of people who looked gloomy were examining something.

“They were from the Wolf Mercenary Union.” Bernard walked among those dead bodies, looking worried, “The Captain of the Wolf Mercenary Union was a Disaster-Level warrior----the same as me. It looks like they were obliterated completely.”

On hearing that, the Crescent Emissary and Mo Chaoge frowned at the same time.

After a moment’s hesitation, the Crescent Emissary took out a silver horn and began to blow it.

Instead of any sound, an odd wave was sent out and propagated away.

Before long, two men, who wore silver gowns and masks, showed up secretly from the woods. Their masks were green and tush-like, which were different from the pale masks on the Crescent Emissary and his people.

“Emissary, have you found anything?” The Crescent Emissary asked coldly.

“Many warriors and mercenaries were attacked last night by demon beasts. Too many foot prints here. We can’t tell which are our targets’.” one Star Emissary answered respectfully.

The Dark World had two divisions----Dark Emissaries and Black Emissaries. The former were responsible for tracing and collecting information, and the latter killing. They were graded as the Star, the Moon and the Sun.

Though the Dark Emissaries and the Black Emissaries did completely different work, they were strictly graded. The star emissaries of Star Level were under Crescent Emissaries of Moon Level.

“Is it so hard to find the target?” the Crescent Emissary was good at killing and fighting, but was bad at tracing. Hearing that, his eyes turned dim.

“Sir, it’s a large area and there are too many warriors, demon beasts and mercenaries, so it’s really hard to find the targets. During these days’ searching, we were attacked by numerous mercenaries, and one of us was killed.”

The Dark World had disrepute, so the bold warriors and mercenaries who came to this area might kill people from the Dark World if they were in a bad mood.

In the past couple of days, they had encountered these kinds of cases for some time. They were even challenged after they cooperated with warriors from Mo Family, though they didn’t lose much.

“Can’t find the targets, and unsettled demon beasts, too tough...”

After pondering on it, Mo Chaoge said, “We should stop this aimless search. What about waiting in the Silent Town? It is the only way toward the Merchant Union. They would definitely go to the Silent Town once they get out of the Dark Forest, thus we could wait for them there.”

“Good idea.” Bernard nodded and showed a murderous look, “whoever goes to the Merchant Union would pass the Silent Town, so we just need to wait and meet them there.”

“Well then, let cross this region as soon as possible. And wait for their appearance during our way to the Silent Town.” The Crescent Emissary kept mute for a long time, and compromised to this suggestion, for he couldn’t come up with a better one.

The three came to an agreement quickly and stopped searching for Shi Yan and his friends. They began to prepare to cross the Dark Forest and ambush on its boarder and the way to the Silent Town.

...

For five days, they were moving in the Dark Forest carefully, hiding from demon beasts and warriors.

At night, they would stop moving and rest in covert region.

In this way, they avoided many high-level demon beasts, mercenaries and warriors with great luck.

And every night, Shi Yan would train ceaselessly to adapt the Second Stage of Petrification and let the shift go to every cell of his body.

Di Yalan had kept away from men for years. And since she had those amazing experiences with Shi Yan, she would always asked him for it. They let off their passions under trees, in bushes and beside brooks.

Mu Yu Die knew she was not able to stop them, so she just let it go, though sometimes she still couldn't help cursing and complaining about them being shameless.

This night, after a short training, Di Yalan jumped up and shouted mirthfully, "I, I just had a breakthrough!" Not long before that, she was having a crazy time with Shi Yan under a big tree...

In another ancient tree not far from Di Yalan, Mu Yu Die stuck her head out with surprise. Seeing Di Yalan in messy clothes, she shouted, "That, that is working?"

Chapter 35 - Block the Cave

Shi Yan slowly opened his eyes. He looked at Di Yalan, who was still in an absolute bliss, and said with a smile, “Congratulations! Sister Lan!”

After figuring out what the mysterious Martial Spirit was truly capable of, Shi Yan was just as excited as well. Although Di Yalan was just shagging him for a couple of days, she had already benefited enormously and reached the Human Level. This was almost a miracle, which proved that this mysterious Martial Spirit indeed had limitless power.

“Thank you so much!”

There was a warmth of gratitude shining through Di Yalan’s gorgeous eyes.

She didn’t need to be a genius to realize that what happened to her was due to Shi Yan. For the past few days, she really saw enormous improvements.

“Well, this might have something to do with the medicine within my body. Anyway, Sister Lan, you’ve also earned all this by yourself.” Shi Yan replied with a cool face, “So, now that you have reached the Human Level, could you show us the power of your Martial Spirit - Blue Magic Flame? Could there be any difference with before?”

Di Yalan smiled like a blooming flower. She slowly raised her left hand, with a blue flame suddenly bursting on her palm.

The flame was the size of a watermelon, which gradually covered her entire hand .

The blue flame was like a living creature. It suddenly turned into dozens of fire snakes, moving around her beautiful arm.

Moreover, this magic blue flame could change into various shapes with Di Yalan’s thoughts. It would suddenly turn into

snakes, and then into birds, just like actual living creatures, which would almost fly away from her palm at any time.

“The moment I reached the Human Level, I could distinctly sense that my Blue Magic Flames had changed. My Martial Spirit is stronger than ever.” Di Yalan couldn’t hide her excitement, “Not only it has become bigger in size, from the size of a fist to the size of a man’s head, but it also has achieved the capability of matter condensation, which means that it has already reached the second stage.”

Her Martial Spirit was capable of matter condensation?

Shi Yan nodded. He instantly realized that Di Yalan’s Martial Spirit - Blue Magic Flame was also quite something. He complimented, “Well, congratulations again!”

“This is all because of you!” Di Yalan said with a shine in her charming eyes. She couldn’t hide her sexual desire in her smile.

“How... how is this even possible?”

Mu Yu Die, who was resting on the tree, was filled with doubt and suspicion. “It only took Sister Lan a couple of days to reach the Human Level. That’s way too fast! How is this even possible? Sister Lan, I clearly remember that you only reached the Third Sky of a Nascent Warrior six months ago. ”

“Yes, that’s true.” Di Yalan was on top of the world, and said proudly, “I did just enter the Third Sky of a Nascent Warrior six months ago. Even I didn’t expect that I could reach the Human Level so soon. I thought it would at least take me another 3 to 5 years of hard practice before I could ever reach the Human Level. Hehe!”

Mu Yu Die had no idea how to answer her bragging, so she simply rolled her eyes.

How come... this guy’s essence... does it really have that kind of magical power?

With her mind lingering on that thought, Mu Yu Die couldn't help but blush again. She forced herself to stop right there and almost called herself a slut.

...

Another five days had passed by.

The three of them continued to proceed in the Dark Forest with great caution.

In those five days, each night, they would always hear chaos from the Dark Forest, mixed with the roaring of demon beasts and the crying and screaming of human warriors, as well as mercenaries. This continuous noise and chaos would make even the bravest man be filled with horror.

Shi Yan instantly realized that there must be some human who had irritated the higher level demon beasts. That's why during those nights, he would find a peaceful and an absolutely safe area to rest, and never took any chance to go out at night.

During this period, he decided not to confront with any demon beasts, or to pick fights with any mercenaries, i.e., avoiding any trouble from both sides.

Because of this code of caution that they took, during those five days, although the three of them didn't cover a long distance, they didn't run into any trouble on their way either.

Apart from that, if Shi Yan got lucky, he would still find some dead warriors freshly killed by those demon beasts. As soon as those demon beasts left, Shi Yan would rush to those corpses to collect their lingering Profound Qi.

But for the sake of safety, he would always wait for a while after those demon beasts had left, before showing up around those corpses.

Although he didn't harvest much Profound Qi from each corpse, with the stolen Profound Qi accumulating within his body, Shi Yan

also managed to enhance his own Petrification Martial Spirit by a bit.

Until now, his body was already able to petrify entirely within seconds, just with a thought. All of his skin would change to dark brown, and his defense power was also slowly enhancing.

For the past few days, there was never a second when he ever forgot about the practice for controlling his own madness.

However, the last threshold was just too difficult for him to break through. Every time he tried to operate the negative energy within his meridians in his brain, he would suffer from a mind-splitting pain. And when he reversed his Profound Qi within his body, he would be under so much pain that he would faint instantly.

After a few days of practice, he still could not manage himself through the last stage of Rampage.

And after such a series of fainting, Shi Yan guessed that he was probably using the wrong approach. Therefore, he gave up on this tough approach and figured that he should try another way, after a few days' reflection.

...

It was night again.

The three of them were hiding in a dark cave within a valley. With the opening of the cave covered with bushes, they talked in a low voice.

They could hear troops of demon beasts passing by their cave on the outside. It seemed there were the roaring and howling of demon beasts everywhere. God knows how many demon beasts were out there on that night.

“It is a little unusual tonight. It seems that all the demon beasts in the dark forest have come out.” Di Yalan said with a frown on her face, “This is too strange. Usually, even if the warriors and mercenaries are too out of line, those demon beasts would at most

attack them for 2 or 3 days. There is no reason for all these demon beasts to come out. God knows what the hell is going on out there.”

“Behind such large scale attacks and movements of these demon beasts, there must be orders from a demon beast of a much higher level.” Shi Yan said with a serious face, “The Silver Thunder Wolf is already a Level-7 demon beast, equaling our warrior of the Sky Level. It not only has Demon Crystals within its body, but also possesses the intelligence of the same level as humans. As even the Silver Thunder Wolf has showed up to lead, there must be a huge fight behind.”

“Thank God we proceeded with great caution these days, not aiming to cover more distance, but making safety our first priority. Otherwise, we would have been in loads of trouble.” Di Yalan nodded.

“Tata! Tata!”

There were some messy footsteps from the outside of the cave. They assumed that this was the movement of human warriors out there.

With such frequent movement of the demon beasts out there, those human warriors who were still moving around must be in some serious trouble, probably also being chased and hunted by those demon beasts right now.

“Maybe we should go out and take a look? Maybe we could offer some help?” Mu Yu Die asked the other two people dimly.

Shi Yan and Di Yalan both took a glimpse at Mu Yu Die, but didn’t say anything.

“What? You wanna let them die just like that?” Mu Yu Die frowned. She was obviously quite upset.

“There are so many demon beasts out there. We can barely hide ourselves right now. If this cave also got compromised, I am afraid

we wouldn't have much luck with those demon beasts. Apart from that, how can you be so sure that the warriors outside are not a disaster to us? What if they also lust for your beauty? God knows how much trouble that could bring us. I suggest you mind your own business." Shi Yan sniffed with no mercy at all.

Mu Yu Die was not that naïve. Of course she knew all about these. She only said this because she couldn't bear the idea that humans were killed by those cruel beasts.

But after being taught a lesson by Shi Yan like that, her pride was badly hurt. She puckered her lips and mumbled, "Cold blooded! You are not even a human! Hum, I guess you are just too scared of dying. I misjudged you before..."

"According to your suggestion, you are not only not scared to die, you are literally begging to be killed!"

Shi Yan sneered with a grin, "Miss Mu. You did save my life twice, but I have already repaid your favor. Just so you know, the only reason I am still here, is not because of you, but because of what your Uncle Luo has entrusted me with before he died."

Shi Yan paused a little and continued, "You are not my princess, so don't pull your drama on me, this annoys me a lot! If I really got pissed one day, I will just leave you here. Whatever you'd like to do is none of my business."

"You asshole!" Mu Yu Die felt so wronged that her eyes were starting to wet. She tried her best to control her tears and said with a crying voice, "You know nothing better than lecturing me!"

"OK, give it a break you two! At this time, we should be united. We are all heading towards the Merchant Union, so we'd better stick together and look after each other. Stop fighting over such trivial stuff." Di Yalan intermediated in their conversation.

"Oh crap!"

Shi Yan suddenly stood up, and his face looked like hell. "It

seems those people have discovered this cave. They are heading towards this way.”

“Shit! No way!” Di Yalan was also astonished. She quickly picked up her dagger and guarded the entrance of the cave together with Shi Yan, “What should we do now?”

“Ow!” “Woo!”

The roaring and howling of the demon beasts could be heard outside the cave. It seemed that there were more and more demon beasts coming toward their way.

“Block the entrance!”

Shi Yan suddenly changed the look on his face. He put his hands against the rock on the entrance of the cave and shouted, “Come here and pin these rocks. We cannot let anyone into this cave! As soon as other humans get into this cave, those demon beasts would figure out quickly that we’re here. If those demon beasts stick around, then sooner or later they would discover us and that would be a complete disaster! I am not going down with those guys out there!”

After Shi Yan entered this cave, he not only had covered the entrance with bushes and leaves, but had also moved some big rocks to block the opening, just in case for this type of situation to happen. He didn’t expect that these rocks would actually be put to use.

“OK!” Di Yalan was a little shocked, but she also quickly joined Shi Yan in pinning the big rocks, thus blocking the entrance of the cave.

Chapter 36 - Bang!

“Bang!” “Bang!”

The sound of heavy strikes on the rocks came one after another.

Violent strikes were forced onto Shi Yan who was blocking the cave. He and Di Yalan were both shocked and felt numb in their arms.

“Hey friends inside the cave, take your hands off! Or I won’t be this polite anymore!”

At the entrance of the cave, a cold voice yelled, “My Matial Spirit can perceive life signs within two hundred meters. I know there are three of you. We just want to get in and hide for a while. Please do us a favor!”

“It’s OUR cave! Please go and find one of your own. Don’t get us into trouble.”

Shi Yan looked very serious as he pressed all his Profound Qi into his arms. In no time, his arms began to contract and turn dry, while white fog flew around them.

“Move! Demon beasts will come in a few minutes and there must be several high-level ones! If you don’t want to lose your lives, let us in!” A forthright voice cried fretfully.

“Get lost! Our cave is too small for you people!” Shi Yan was rather cold, showing not the slightest amount of friendliness.

Their cave was not big enough so it could only hold six people, and counting the rock at the entrance, it could only hold five people at most. According to their breaths, Shi Yan could tell there were six of them, which was too much for the small cave.

“Steve, come with me, let’s break it!” One of them shouted coldly with impatience.

“Sure!”

“Bang! Bang!”

Two streams of explosive power struck the rock at the same time, and an enormous force blasted out from within the hard rock at once!

With the dull booms, the hard rock which was being supported by Shi Yan and Di Yalan was comminuted into dozens of pieces.

“Kaka! Kaka!”

The rock segments fell on the ground one by one and suddenly the light shined into the dim entrance.

Three people got the chance and slipped into the cave at once.

The leader of the group, who was around thirty years old and wore a silver warrior uniform, looked cold and arrogant. He glanced at Shi Yan and the two girls, then jeered, “A mere Human-Level warrior dares to block us. You are going beyond your depth, young man!”

“Big brother, kill them!” Another rude young man urged, “This cave is only capable of holding six people. Our people can’t come in if they still stay here!”

“You three get out of the cave right now! Or I will kill you in no time!” The man in silver uniform demanded, “You are definitely no match for us! We have two Human-Level and four Nascent-Level warriors. You’d better not waste our time.”

The three warriors who were standing at the opening of the cave looked at Shi Yan and Di Yalan coldly, seemingly prepared to take action at any time, as a dim light was gradually sent out from their bodies.

“Big brother, look at the girls, woah!” Another skinny short young man found Di Yalan and Mu Yu Di extraordinarily beautiful after he adapted to the dimness in the cave and couldn’t help but shout out.

“Chuck, do you want the girls or our brothers outside the cave?” The leader grunted.

That skinny young man smiled with embarrassment, “Don’t be pissed my brother, I’m just kidding. Of course I want my brothers! Women are everywhere, right? Ha, now that we got so much treasure from the Silver Thunder Wolf’s cave, we can get women whenever we want! Haha!”

“Why are you still there?” The warrior taking the lead looked hideous suddenly as he was about to fight.

“Fight!” Di Yalan shouted as she lifted her shortsword, “There are all demon beasts out of the cave. We would still die even if we get out!”

“Hehe, please run away as far as you can and take the demon beasts with you, then we will be safe.” That rude young man burst into laughter, “Or, do you think you can even be alive here?”

“Sister Lan, let’s go out.” After a deep breath, Shi Yan calmed down, then he dragged her, “Quick! We may escape if we run quickly.”

“It’s impossible...” Di Yalan was dragged away by Shi Yan before she could finish her sentence.

Mu Yu Die had lifted herself up long ago, thus she walked up after them.

As her slim figure passed by that skinny short man, that guy stretched out his hand toward her butt, “Gorgeous, forgive me. We can be closer if we meet again.”

Mu Yu Die got frightened and rushed out of the cave as fast as she can. But unfortunately, that guy still touched her slim waist, which made her furious.

Outside the cave, the three men of Nascent Level had been impatient for a long time.

Seeing the three getting out of the cave, the three warriors outside wandered their eyes on Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die lustfully. Then they walked into the cave reluctantly and complimented, “Brother, there should be two beauties! Your Martial Spirit is so great that you could even sense the cave here from so far away! We wouldn’t have managed in collecting so much treasure in the Silver Thunder Wolf’s cave if it hadn’t been your magical Martial Spirit!”

“Haha! We really harvested a lot this time! A Martial Skill of Spirit Level! We can get what we six want with this book when we go back to the God-blessed Empire ! Then we can own whichever women we are fond of!” The rude guy in the cave chuckled.

“Thanks to our big brother’s Martial Spirit. It can identify the stream of life in the surroundings. That’s too damn good!”

The six of them occupied Shi Yan and his friends’ cave, and started to discuss softly in it.

“You three, go as far as you can! It’s still early enough for you to leave now! Once the demon beasts came, you can in no way escape from them!” The leader demanded confidently, “If you are still going to stay at the entrance, please excuse my rudeness.”

Under the bright moonlight, Shi Yan was wearing an icy and terrifying expression.

Terrible demon beasts howls were coming from all directions. They were just gathering toward this way, for apparently they knew there were humans in this area.

Judging from the situation now, this area would be encircled by demon beasts soon.

If they left now, they would become those demon beasts’ target; even if they guided the demon beasts to other areas, they would be kill by them eventually.

Shi Yan knew clearly that the leader didn’t kill them because he

wanted them to run away and distract those demon beasts, so that those six warriors could survive.

“Ding Yan! Why don’t we just have a nasty fight with them! We could also be killed by the demon beasts if we get out of the cave! If we run away, we would die in vain! Why not drag those warriors in with us!” Di Yalan stared at Shi Yan in rage.

For his safty’s sake, Shi Yan had told them his name was Ding Yan, though Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die rarely called him by his full name.

However, since Di Yalan was strongly against Shi Yan’s decision, she shouted out his full name..

Mu Yu Die turned rather pale and she said in a miserable voice, “I would rather be killed by the Dark World than be eaten up by demon beasts. Sister Lan, let’s finish ourselves now and attract those demon beasts here.”

“Come here!” Shi Yan frowned as he caught Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die, separately with each of his hands, to the corner of the entrance, keeping them away from the middle of the opening.

“What?” Di Yalan flew into a rage, “You want to run away, don’t you?”

“Run away? Am I such an easy-going person?” Shi Yan broadened his mouth and looked hideous. Abruptly, he took out an iron ball out of his chest and waved it at the girls.

Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die were stunned at first. Soon they realized and smirked, then took several steps away from the opening again.

Shi Yan nodded, and as soon as the girls found their positions, he suddenly rushed to the entrance.

As he reached the entrance, he swiftly threw the iron ball into the cave and left in an instant.

“Bang!”

There was a devastating explosion in the cave as sharp splinters flew in all directions inside, some of which flew out of the cave and cut the bushes outside into pieces.

Terrible cries came from the entrance of the cave.

“Old Steve!”

“Micky!”

“Brother Teddy! Brother Teddy!”

“Brother Bob! I... I am hurt!”

“...”

Painful cries, combined with a strong bloody smell, came out of the cave.

Shi Yan signalled Di Yalan and went into the cave again.

Shi Yan was looking at the chaos in the cave at the entrance, as he sneered, “Hey everybody? Was it fun?”

The three men on the ground had turned into honeycombs with wounds all over their bodies. That rude guy was among them, with his head cut through.

The leader, that skinny, short man and another fat guy were still alive.

The other three had protected them. Though they too were wounded, those splinters didn't hurt their vital places.

Their limbs were filled with bleeding wounds, and the leader seemed badly hurt, for his abdomen was bleeding hard.

The cave was so small, and once the Star Bomb exploded, they had nowhere to hide. If it weren't for those three dead warriors who stood in front of them, there would've been no chance for anyone to survive.

“I'm gonna strip your skin!” Their leader had his eyes split, and he was too angry.

“Such dense Profound Qi.” Shi Yan took a deep breath and enjoyed a lot.

As he was talking, his muscles contracted slowly and his body got more and more dry.

A freezing, insane, and murderous smell flew out of Shi Yan’s body slowly, forming into a white thin fog, which spread all over him.

Chapter 37 - The Killing

Inside the cave, there were three dead bodies, three wounded warriors, and Shi Yan.

Shi Yan jumped into the cave. However, he did nothing but simply just stood there, feeling the blowing waves of Profound Qi coming from those three fresh bodies right towards him. The Profound Qi flew into the 720 meridians of his body. The waves were so strong that his meridians even felt a little pain.

Naturally, Shi Yan's body went mad again. All his muscles had shrunk so badly that he suddenly looked even thinner.

There was a wave of evil energy quickly spreading from the white smoke covering his whole body. With the coldest and cruelest spirits, this energy quickly fulfilled the entire cave.

Those evil spirits seemed to have some bewitching magic power.

Once those three wounded warriors breathed in some of this white smoke, their mind was instantly fulfilled with a crazy urge of slaughtering as well.

“You fucking son of a bitch! I'm gonna skin you alive!”

The leader of them shouted loudly, with a creepy green poppy flower suddenly appearing on his palm. That poppy flower was made purely by his Profound Qi and looked just as alive, growing and expanding with astonishing speed on his palm.

Only within seconds, that green poppy flower had become the size of a cattail leaf, with a freezing light shining in the middle of the bud and a green light diffusing around it.

At his sway of hand, that giant poppy flower instantly flew right towards at Shi Yan.

That poppy flower was like an open bloody mouth. It was trying to bite Shi Yan right on his head, seemingly trying to swallow his

entire head into its bud.

“He!”

A roaring sound came out of Shi Yan. He had quickly concentrated the streams of negative energy that he absorbed from those dead warriors, and let that energy out from all the meridians covering his whole body, which soon formed into three ghost shadows in front of his body.

Those ghost shadows were floating in front of his body in the scariest way, with their eyes filled with utmost endless resentment to this world.

“Steve! Micky! Teddy!”

The thin warrior was instantly filled with horror. He stared, dumbstruck, at those floating ghost shadows Shi Yan had in front of his body, and couldn't help screaming.

Those three ghost shadows looked exactly like those three warriors right before they died!

The leader was also pretty astonished. He couldn't help but take a step back. However, that creepy poppy flower didn't stop its move and continued to try biting on Shi Yan's head.

“Break!”

Shi Yan waved his fist and sent out a web of white smoke which was tangled and concentrated with all kinds of negative energy. Those streams of negative energy combined together into a silver snake and suddenly shot into the center of that poppy flower.

“Boom!”

That poppy flower exploded into pieces, with its freezing light suddenly splashing everywhere like a creepy firework; beautiful but strange.

“Look out!”

The leader shouted out. He quickly moved forward and covered

the other two guys with both of his hands. There were also spots of weird lights shining inside his palms. He waved his hands and surprisingly captured all the freezing light coming towards him all into his chest.

Shi Yan had the cruelest look on his face. He started to operate his mind power and petrify his whole body. In this dark cave, his entire body became brown and as tough as the steel.

Dozens of freezing dots of light shot towards him again with buzzing sounds. However, they were all blocked by his petrified body. Only a small proportion of the freezing energy filtered into his body through all his petrified muscles.

The freezing energy was rushing and bumping inside his body. However, its power was mostly blocked by his petrified muscles.

Only after a few seconds, Shi Yan's body had already returned to normal, and wasn't influenced by the freezing energy any more.

“Shi Yan!”

Di Yalan rushed into the cave. Seeing Shi Yan confronting those three warriors all by himself, she couldn't help but scream and ask him with worry, “Are you OK?”

“Use your Blue Magic Flame to cover for me. Hold back the leader. I will kill the other two Nascent Warriors first.”

Shi Yan gave his order with a cruel face. He then started operating his mind. Those three ghost shadows floating in front of him suddenly started rushing towards those three warriors like starving wolves towards its prey.

The tiny stone cave could barely hold all these people. Once an attack was launched, there was no room to escape. The opponent could only defend themselves with everything they had.

Seeing those three ghost shadows coming towards their way, the three warriors in the cave all seemed pretty terrified.

People are naturally intimidated by the unknown.

Especially because, one minute ago, those three ghost shadows were still their dearest brothers!

The three of them tried to escape, but only to find their way already blocked by the stones. There was nowhere for them to go.

“Don’t be scared!”

The leader shouted. The freezing light he just withdrew into his chest was transformed and turned into an icy, silver light shield, sheltering the three of them.

Shi Yan sniffed secretly on the inside, and continued to operate his mind power.

The three ghost shadows stopped in front of the three warriors. With the silver light shield in between, those ghost shadows waved their fists and started to make terrifying postures such as biting and gobbling, showing all their utmost resentment in their eyes towards those warriors.

All kinds of negative energy had gathered into the eyes of those ghost shadows, and through eye contact, flew right into the mind of those three warriors.

Almost instantly, as they were impacted by the negative energy, the three warriors felt like they were thrown into the lowest level of the hell. Countless terrifying and screaming ghosts were coming towards their way, dragging them towards the endless hell. There was no way for them to get out.

The faces of the three warriors became stiff, and their eyes became lifeless, all with the most terrified look on their face.

“Sister Lan! Break their ice light shield!” Shi Yan shouted.

Di Yalan trembled a little. She didn’t give much thought, but quickly threw out her Blue Magic Flame which she already gotten ready on her palm. The flame turned into an agile phoenix and

shot itself into that silver light shield.

“Chi-chi!”

The silver light shield was instantly melted under the heat of the Blue Magic Flame. The shield formed by the leader's Profound Qi was obviously too weak in front of the attack of Di Yalan's Blue Magic Flame Martial Spirit, and suddenly cracked a fist sized hole.

The three ghost shadows took advantage of this crack and quickly sneaked in like a light smoke. The ghosts separated and sneaked into the body of the three warriors respectively.

Shi Yan suddenly rushed forward towards them.

He had all his Profound Qi flowing into his arms like crazy. When he was moving his arms, there was even a deep bursting sound in the air, like a mountain was falling apart.

The white mist entangling his iron fist had already concentrated and turned into a layer of pale liquid matter covering his arms, making his bony arm look even more terrifying, like the sharp claw of an evil ghost.

“Poo!”

Shi Yan's arm was like a sharp sword, and pierced right through the chest of that thin guy who once mouthed about Mu Yu Die. He used his fist to punch that guy so hard that he fell onto the wall of that cave with a deep sound.

“You're seeking death, you fucking bastard!”

The Human Level leader warrior suddenly woke up in the middle of his nightmare. Seeing another one of his brothers miserably die in front of his eyes, he couldn't help but shout with anger. He generated a huge silver light ball on his palm and pushed it hard towards Shi Yan's chest.

There was an overwhelming gravity falling towards Shi Yan, which, combining with the freezing cold ice power, exploded, all of

a sudden, on Shi Yan's chest.

“Deng! Deng! Deng!”

Shi Yan had to step back some distance before he could stabilize his body.

He just took the full blow of tough a warrior at the Human Level right on his chest. However, Shi Yan's chest only hurt a little after taking the hit. He checked his body for a second only to see his body completely intact.

That icy blow only froze his chest a little but didn't manage to hurt him.

So this is the second stage of the Petrification Martial Spirit! How awesome is that!

Shi Yan was actually wildly laughing on the inside. He kept operating his own Profound Qi, guiding it rapidly through his own veins and vessels in his chest. His Profound Qi was like a warm stream of energy, quickly recovering his chest from the freezing light attack by blowing within his veins and vessels.

Di Yalan, with a dagger in hand, rushed to the front, fighting with the leader. Her phoenix made of the Blue Magic Flames was her strongest power, fighting against the leader together with her. The Blue Flame Phoenix could not only counter all the freezing power that the warrior threw out, but could also control some of his creepy attacks.

“Are you guys all right?”

Mu Yu Die entered the cave with both hands covering her nose. When she stepped inside, she almost puked instantly due to the strong bloody smell.

“Pile up the bodies!”

Shi Yan ordered with a frown. He didn't wait for Mu Yu Die to respond before he quickly rushed towards the other Nascent

Warrior who was still drowning in his nightmares, just like a haunting ghost.

“No! Little Joe!”

The leader suddenly changed the look on his face. He instantly screamed out anxiously.

Even in his wildest dreams, he could not imagine that this guy in front of him, who was merely a Nascent Warrior, could take on his full blow, and not only survive, but also fight back again!

But he himself was a Warrior of the Human Level who had already reached the Second Sky!

“Brother Trump!”

Hearing his name being called, that unconscious warrior suddenly woke up and couldn't help but scream.

But this was also the last sound that he would ever make in this world.

The next moment, he stopped screaming as his back bumped hard onto the stone wall and blood came out through all his meridians.

Shi Yan's body was as forceful as a mountain because of the scary explosion power that he got from going mad. . He simply just bumped this guy to death onto the stone wall , and all of his bones broke into pieces.

“No! Little Joe!”

The leader couldn't help but howl. Seeing all his brothers die in such a horrible way one after another right in front of his eyes, he started to regret entering this cave for the first time.

He regretted that he ever provoked Shi Yan, this mad slaughterer; regretted even setting foot into The Dark Forest.

“Miss Mu, quick, pile up these bodies!”

Shi Yan took a harsh look on Mu Yu Die who had already completely lost her mind, and said with a cold voice, “If you don’t want to die, then move quickly!”

Mu Yu Die couldn’t help but tremble. Under those cold-blooded eyes of Shi Yan, she had to kneel down to deal with all these nasty bloody bodies and move these ugly broken body parts to a corner of the stone cave, piling them up one by one.

“Shi Yan, come help me!”

Di Yalan screamed, “This guy’s Profound Qi is too strong. I cannot handle him for much longer!”

The demon beasts started to gather outside the stone cave, with waves of roaring and howling coming towards them. It seemed that before long, this valley would be covered with demon beasts. Of course Di Yalan understood the value of time. They must finish this fight and kill the leader as soon as possible.

“I’ll be right there!”

Shi Yan rushed forward and stood right in front of Di Yalan facing the leader.

“Boom!”

The silver freezing light appeared again on the palm of the leadery, with another strike shooting right at Shi Yan’s chest.

“Hey hey!”

Shi Yan put on a scary grin on his face. With the help of his Petrification Martial Spirit which had already reached the second stage, he took this hit just fine. Now this leader was forced into a corner of the stone cave. There was no way for him to escape.

The phoenix made by the Blue Magic Flame took the chance and also flew over. It soon landed on the shoulder of the leader.

The flames surrounded and spread rapidly on the guy’s shoulders just like a tendril of vines. Soon there was the smell of burning

flesh on his shoulders. The flames became stronger and stronger, and then spread from his shoulders to his abdomen then to his waist, until burning his little brother under the belt.

“Ah!”

The lead guy started to scream with great pain. He started to hit Shi Yan like crazy, desperate to break Shi Yan’s defense and get out of this cave.

“You tried so hard to get in, but now you wanna leave? Hey, hey, too late for that!”

Shi Yan put on his Dark Light Shield and used his Petrification Martial Spirit to block all his crazy attacks with a mocking grin on his face. Despite his terribly thin body, Shi Yan was standing there like a steady stone. No matter how hard the attacks were, he just stood there without moving an inch.

Di Yalan found an opportunity to get in. With her dagger in hand, she pierced one leg of the leader almost within a second.

“Please don’t kill me! I’ve got the treasures we stole from the cave of the Silver Thunder Wolf. Please just let me go. I will give them all to you! Please!” The leader screamed and begged with his twisted face.

“I will take the treasures, and your life as well!”

Shi Yan put on a scary grin. Countless streams of white smoke suddenly wrapped tightly around this guy’s body. And with this man’s most terrified screams, Shi Yan pierced his throat with one finger.

The leader soon lost the light in his eyes. His body also started to become soft and fell onto the ground slowly.

Shi Yan didn’t take another look on that man’s body. He quickly turned around and looked at Mu Yu Die with a scary face. He cursed in a cold voice, “So useless! Still haven’t finished with these bodies?”

Mu Yu Die was already pretty upset. She was trying very hard at dealing with these bodies. For a girl who hated nasty stuff like this, it was not an easy task to pile up all these bodies. Don't even expect her to be extra efficient, which was almost impossible.

Shi Yan didn't waste a lot words on her. He simply sniffed and piled up all the bodies himself with a frown on his face and blood all over his hands. He said with a cold voice, "The demon beasts are coming towards this valley together. Whether we can survive this still depends on God's will."

Chapter 38 - Spirit Level Martial Skills

Inside the cave, the bodies were piled up with all of their Profound Qi wiped clean.

Under the influence of Shi Yan's mysterious Martial Spirit, the bodies were not only drained of all their Profound Qi, but even the blood inside the corpses had solidified within a very short time.

With all their blood solidified, the bloody smell that once filled the entire cave was not as strong as before.

However, Shi Yan was still not satisfied with this.

After thinking it over, he quickly took out a packet of medicinal powder from his backpack and sprayed it all around the cave without hesitation.

This medicinal powder was called "Cleansing Powder", which had an extraordinary absorbing power, capable of capturing all the little impurities floating in the air, including toxins, smell and poisonous smoke.

After using one packet of "Cleansing Powder", the remaining bloody smell in the cave was instantly wiped clean like magic.

After capturing the bloody smell floating in the air, the "Cleansing Powder" had become dozens of little red particles which looked just like drops of blood, micronized into little atoms falling onto the ground.

"I need to find something to hide the cave entrance."

Although that bloody smell in the cave was now under control, Shi Yan was still a little bit worried. He started to cover the cave entrance with the nearby bushes and twigs.

Although the battle between the two groups was for the cave, both knew of the importance of the nearby foliage. As such, none of the nearby vegetation was moved or destroyed when

approaching the cave.

However, with the eruption of the “Star Bomb”, the bushes at the cave entrance were damaged and cut into pieces. Fortunately, the bushes near the cave entrance were still intact.

Now what Shi Yan needed to do was to move the bushes on each side to the middle of the cave entrance to perfectly cover the entire opening.

Shi Yan was breathing smoothly and paying great attention to his movements. He was acting with great caution and moving the bushes and leaves towards the entrance of the cave slowly, inch by inch, for fear that the demon beasts outside would discover something strange in this place.

With the roaring of the demon beasts getting more and more frequent, they sensed that God knows how many demon beasts had gathered in the valley outside the cave.

Shi Yan had a serious look on his face and was acting extremely nervous. Sweat was secretly coming out of his forehead. Even his back started to become wet with sweat.

When he finally dragged the last large bush into the cave entrance, even his arms were slightly trembling, as if he had made huge efforts to finish this job.

“Are you OK?” Di Yalan asked with care.

“It’s nothing, I’m just a little tired.”

Shi Yan shook his head. His face had turned extraordinarily pale. He stopped to think for a moment and then said, “You two be careful later. If we are ever found by those demon beasts, you must make every effort to guard the cave entrance!”

Di Yalan nodded and added with care, “Yeah, I get it. But what on earth has happened to you? I just saw you kicking the ass of that Warrior of the Human Level with my own eyes, but how come you’ve become so weak right now?”

“It’s exactly because I made such great efforts to fight with him, that I’ve become so weak right now.” Shi Yan sat down with his legs crossed and refused to give any more explanation.

At this critical time, surprisingly, he closed his eyes to rest!

This was actually the side effect of “Rampage” kicking off inside his body.

Every time he performed “Rampage”, his body would suffer great pressure.

The Rampage Martial Skill required the excitation of all kinds of negative energy within one’s meridians. The power of “Rampage” served as a double-edged sword, giving you power far beyond your own Level for a very short amount time, but on the other hand, also making you more exhausted afterwards.

After all, those negative energies were way too evil and creepy.

When these negative energies spilt over from his meridians, they were hurting his body as well. Every time when he finished “Rampage”, he would be wrapped in waves of exhaustion, weakening his body very quickly.

Sitting right there in the cave, Shi Yan felt that both his arms and legs were weak and powerless. The meridians all over his body were also hurting like hell.

The Profound Qi he absorbed from those six fresh corpses had also rushed into his meridians, filling his body with wave after wave of strong power. While his meridians were processing and purifying this Profound Qi with high speed, the negative energies would take advantage of this to sneak out and slowly rot his mind and sanity.

At this moment, he couldn’t do anything that required effort. His meridians were still busy processing and purifying all this new Profound Qi. If he couldn’t relax his body, he wouldn’t be able to achieve a quality recovery at all.

Therefore, he made a sensible decision to leave everything else alone. He just sat still, keeping a peaceful mind for the recovery.

Seeing him sitting and resting with both eyes closed, the other two women, Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die, also looked pretty serious. They concentrated on observing the movements outside the cave.

The demon beasts were still moving inside the valley. There were even some demon beasts around their cave and they seemed to be searching for something.

Both Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were guarding the entrance of the cave very nervously. They didn't dare to take any chance to relax.

Di Yalan was holding her dagger firmly in her hand, looking outside warily through the gaps between the bushes covering the cave entrance, fearing that some demon beast would suddenly jump in.

They were both aware that demon beasts had an extremely sensitive sense of smell. They were worried that those beasts might find them through the bloody smell in the air. They knew that once their cave was discovered by any of those demon beasts, they had to guard this cave no matter what the price was.

“Deng! Deng!”

A three-headed hound was coming towards them with its three giant heads shaking in the air. It seemed to have found something. Its six eyes on its three heads were scanning around as if it had discovered something unusual.

Oh, crap!

Di Yalan suddenly changed the look on her face, grabbing her dagger even more firmly in her hand. With sweat pouring out of her palm, she focused on the three-headed hound with all of her attention and didn't dare to move her eyes away for a second.

Di Yalan was already extremely tense and was ready to start a fight at any time.

The three-headed hound was a Level Three demon beast, equaling a human Warrior of the Human Level, which was pretty tough to deal with.

Moreover, this demon beast possessed an extraordinarily sharp sense of smell. The bloody smell inside the cave might be able to fool other demon beasts, but it could not necessarily hide from this three-headed hound.

Due to her anxiety, Di Yalan's entire body became stiff and tense. Her hand which held the dagger was also shaking slightly, which meant that her Profound Qi was moving very fast through her veins and vessels.

“Aw!”

Right at that moment, a howl from the Silver Thunder Wolf came from the distance which alerted the whole valley and outmatched all the roaring and shouting of the other demon beasts.

“I am Gan Xiao from the Medicine Valley. I came to the Dark Forest simply to collect medicine for myself. I have never stepped into your cave! Silver Thunder Wolf, I know you are good, but I am not afraid of you. If you continue to harass and kill my people, I will not let you go easy!” A low dark voice came from the distance.

“Aw!”

The Silver Thunder Wolf started howling again in the distance.

Hearing this howling sound, the three-headed hound, which was about to approach the cave where the three of them were hiding, suddenly stopped right there.

It paused a little and quickly turned around, and started running towards the howling of the Silver Thunder Wolf in high speed.

Upon the howling of the Silver Thunder Wolf, the demon beasts gathered in the valley were also starting to take off, leaving the valley for the Silver Thunder Wolf.

The Silver Thunder Wolf and Gan Xiao seemed about to have a huge fight.

Di Yalan suddenly relaxed. She felt so weak that she sat right down on the ground with her body covered with sweat.

If only that three-headed hound had moved a little further forward, maybe even a couple of meters, then their cave would have definitely be compromised. And once that three-headed hound had discovered the cave, the other demon beasts in the valley would most definitely have followed it over here as well.

If that really happened, there was no way that the three of them could have ever escaped those demon beasts!

“Sister Lan, are you OK?” Mu Yu Die was wiping the sweat off her forehead with a handkerchief stained with blood. She also sat down on the ground with the stone wall behind her.

“It’s OK.” Di Yalan smiled softly, but still sighed. “We were very lucky back then. If the Silver Thunder Wolf didn’t have its eyes on Gan Xiao from the Medicine Valley and didn’t suddenly call for all the demon beasts to gather around it, I am afraid that we wouldn’t have been able to make it through this.”

“Yeah, I was also pretty scared just now.” Mu Yu Die’s pretty face also looked quite pale. She added in a low voice, “I was even prepared to commit suicide back then.”

“Don’t ever have that thought unless we have no other options.”

Shi Yan sniffed. He suddenly opened his eyes, and ordered with a frown, “If you have no better things to do, how about searching through the bags and pockets of those six warriors? Just to see what kind of treasure they had stolen from the cave of that Silver Thunder Wolf.”

Hearing him saying this, Di Yalan's eyes suddenly lit up. She agreed with excitement, “That’s right! The Silver Thunder Wolf is a Level Seven demon beast, a top level creature within the Dark

Forest! It is said that the Silver Thunder Wolf is a highly intelligent creature, and that it has killed dozens of high level warriors in the Dark Forest. It must have collected many treasures from those dead warriors and stored them inside its cave. The treasures those warriors have stolen must be extraordinary!”

“I heard that there is a practice method for a Spirit Level Martial Skill...” Shi Yan said with a cool voice.

“He!” Di Yalan replied with her face filled with joy and her beautiful eyes lit up with excitement, “Spirit Level Martial Skills are very rare. Even for the royal families from our Fire Empire, there are only five kinds of Spirit Level Martial Skills. Any practice method for a Spirit Level Martial Skill would be worth millions, and countless big families would even be willing to kill for it.”

“Then you should really search through them very carefully.” Shi Yan nodded and closed his eyes again, seemingly having something on his mind.

Of course he knew how precious so-called Spirit Level Martial Skills were.

Across the Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire, and the Merchant Union, there were around 100 warriors who had reached the Earth Level and the Nirvana Level for a warrior. However, among all these 100 warriors, those with Spirit Level Martial Skills only counted for a quarter of those warriors!

And among that quarter, some were even studying and practicing the same kind of Spirit Level Martial Skills.

According to the rumor, across the entire the Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire, and the Merchant Union, there were only 18 kinds of Spirit Level Martial Skills that were already known to the humankind.

And each and every kind of those Spirit Level Martial Skills were all possessed by various powerful families or warriors that ruled

their own little kingdoms.

Such as the Shi Family.

The Shi Family had possessed various kinds of Martial Skills, such as for the Mortal Level and the Sacred Level. However, it only had one kind of Martial Skill of the Spirit Level, which the Master of the Family, Shi Jian, believed to be the most precious family treasure. Even the his own descendants had no idea where he had kept that Spirit Level Martial Skill.

“It seems we are in huge luck!”

Di Yalan’s eyes were filled with joy. She dug out the backpack of the warrior leader with excitement and didn’t waste any time opening it.

A strong wave of silver light started to shine out from his backpack. The stone cave that was once buried in darkness was suddenly lit up and became as bright as the outside!

“Wow!”

Chapter 39 - Three types of Flames

Three shining crystals appeared from the bag and brightly lit the cave.

One of them was rhombus shaped and the other two were oval shaped. They all looked crystal clear and were diffusing waves.

Obviously there was an extraordinary energy hidden within them.

“Demon Crystals!”

Di Yalan screamed with joy.

“Ahhh!”

Mu Yu Die shouted after her and said joyfully, “Seems we are so lucky that we’ve been bestowed with Demon Crystals! Hehe, if we can get out of the Dark Forest alive we could spend the rest of our lives in luxury with these three Demon Crystals.”

Di Yalan squatted and began to examine the three Demon Crystals carefully. After a long time, she observed, “They must be from Level Six demon beasts, but I can hardly tell what Demon Beasts they are from.”

“Sister Lan, I have heard that demon beasts can directly absorb the energy in Demon Crystals. The Silver Thunder Wolf owned these Demon Crystals. Why didn’t it didn’t take the energy inside of them to strengthen itself? ”

“It is said that the Silver Thunder Wolf gave birth to a pup and the best way for it to grow up is to absorb the energy in Demon Crystals. If it is true, then I guess the three Demon Crystals from these Level Six demon beasts were prepared by the Silver Thunder Wolf for its pup.”

“Could be.”

“The energy in Demon Crystals is the best material for alchemists

and blacksmiths. They can easily tell what demon beast the Demon Crystal is from in just one look. Hmm, three Demon Crystals. We can have one each, right?”

“I didn’t help so I can’t take one.”

Mu Yu Die shook her head, and she took a glimpse at Shi Yan who was training with his eyes closed. “I think you two should share them. If it hadn’t been for me, you wouldn’t have got into trouble...”

“Let’s discuss this after he wakes up.” Di Yalan frowned, and continued to dig in the bag.

“Ah!”

With another exclamation, Di Yalan took out a transparent jade bottle from the bag which was on the ground. She suddenly lost her train of thought as she stared at the red liquid inside.

The liquid in the jade bottle was like a flame. As Di Yalan shook it gently, the flame also danced to the rhythm.

Di Yalan seemed to recall something as she stared at the liquid in the jade bottle.

After a long time, Di Yalan’s thin body trembled and she screamed, “Earth Core Flame Essence!”

“Congratulations Sister Lan!”

Mu Yu Die was stunned at first, then she realized something and yelled happily, “Sister Lan, it will benefit you the most! Haha! You really harvested a lot from this journey. You have not only awoken your Martial Spirit, but you’ve also gotten this Earth Core Flame Essence.”

Di Yalan was so delighted that she couldn’t help but keep nodding her head excitedly as she shook the jade bottle in her hand. She babbled incoherently, “I, I’ve never expected that I would be so lucky! Ha! It’s Earth Core Flame Essence!”

Just then, Shi Yan finished three Big Circulations after training silently for a long time. He opened his eyes and asked, “This Earth Core Flame Essence, what does it have to do with you?”

“What? How come you don’t know about Earth Core Flame Essence?” Di Yalan exclaimed in surprise, “It is common sense! Hell! Are you a warrior or not?”

Shi Yan was quite indifferent. “I’m all ears.”

“Do you know there are three types of flames? As in Sky, Earth and Human?”

“Not really.”

“What? You don’t even know about that?”

“Nope.”

Di Yalan shook her head bitterly for she totally had no idea about Shi Yan.

After a short pause, she explained leisurely, “The three types of flames refer to Human Flames, Earth Flames and Sky Flames. Human Flames, like my Blue Magic Flame, are the magical flames in human warriors, which is a vital factor for alchemists and blacksmiths to train with. Every high-level alchemist or blacksmith owns a Human Flame, because only it can raise their skill to the highest.”

Shi Yan nodded without a reply, and didn’t move his eyes away from Di Yalan.

After a short hesitation, Di Yalan added, “Earth Flames and Sky Flames exist between the earth and sky, such as the Earth Core Flame in the center of the earth and the Volcano Core Flame from the bottom of a volcano, and are formed naturally. The difference between Earth Flames and Sky Flames, is that the latter has a consciousness.”

“What does that mean?” Shi Yan was intrigued.

“Natural flames without a consciousness are called Earth Flames, which are regarded as a treasure like precious stones. As for a Sky Flame, it can think, just like humankind. It is immortal and has magical power, which is the most special life entity in this world. Some Sky Flames were formed at the beginning of the Grace Mainland.”

Though Shi Yan still looked indifferent, this stirred a storm in his mind.

He was a foreigner to this world and all the knowledge he obtained from his own world was totally different from that of this world.

Before, he had never thought that these flames could even think and have wisdom.

Hearing that, Shi Yan got to know the magical charm of this world more profoundly.

In this world, he met many mysterious things which he had never even dreamt of, such as Martial Spirits, demon beasts, and so forth...

“So this Earth Core Flame Essence is an Earth Flame?” After thinking for a long while, Shi Yan finally asked.

“This is the leftover liquid after an Earth Core Flame turned into a Sky Flame. It’s neither Earth Flame nor Sky Flame, but something in between.” ”

“An Earth Flame can turn into a Sky Flame?” Shi Yan was shocked again.

“Of course, millions of years is a long time. Over time, Earth Flames have the chance to gain consciousnesses and turn into a Sky Flame, but the possibility is very small. Not all Earth Flames have the chance for evolution.”

Di Yalan was amused, “But this is the liquid left behind before the Earth Core Flame turned into a Sky Flame. This liquid is very

precious for people owning Human Flames.”

“How precious?”

“It can enhance the Human Flame and improve one’s Martial Spirit!” Di Yalan was so joyful that she was almost about to dance. “A Human Flame is from one’s body and can’t be hotter than the flames in nature. Only top level warriors can make their Human Flames as hot as those in the natural world after strengthening them several times”

“Got it.” Shi Yan nodded, “So this liquid can enhance your Blue Magic Flame and give it the temperature of an Earth Flame?”

“That’s it!” Di Yalan nodded vigorously and stared at him with her shining eyes. After a hesitation, she said in shame, “Uhh...”

“Well, don’t worry. It’s yours.”

“I...” Di Yalan was delighted. She felt that she gained some extra advantage and wanted to say something.

Shi Yan replied peacefully, “Earth Core Flame Essence is of no use for me and I don’t even possess a Martial Spirit. What do I need it for? Just take it with you.”

“But you can trade for any valuable medicine you want from the three Medicine Kings in Medicine Valley with this liquid.”

“Well, you keep it then.” Shi Yan frowned and said casually, “There was a book on the Martial Skills of Spirit Level?”

Hearing Shi Yan’s reminder, Di Yalan began to search in the bag again hurriedly.

“This is it.” Di Yalan took out a dark yellow ancient book. She glanced at it and said, “I can’t read these ancient characters. We need to find some specialist to translate it for us.”

“Let me have a look.” Shi Yan asked for the book naturally as he stretched out his hand.

The previous owner of Shi Yan’s body was a big fan of ancient

things. Though he knew nothing about martial arts, he was much better than most so-called scholars in this world when it came to ancient languages and historic sites.

Shi Yan took a glimpse at the ancient letters on the book cover as soon as he got the reddish ancient book and mumbled the word naturally, “Gravitational Field...”

Chapter 40 - Sharing the Treasure

“You know these ancient letters?” Di Yalan couldn’t help but shout in surprise.

“Yeah, just a little.”

Shi Yan nodded, but he didn’t take a closer look at the contents of the book. He just held the book in his arms casually and said with a cool voice, “You take the bottle of Earth Core Flame Essence, and I will take this practice book for Spirit Level Martial Skills.”

Di Yalan nodded to show her agreement. The bottle of Earth Core Flame Essence was indeed extremely precious for her. She was already on top of the world with that little bottle of liquid in her hand.

“But what about these three Demon Crystals?”

After a while, Di Yalan asked again. And this time, while she was talking, she gave a quick glimpse to Mu Yu Die on her side, with a pretty complicated message in her eyes.

Shi Yan had already got his book of Spirit Level Martial Skill, which was obviously worth millions. However, until now, only Mu Yu Die hadn’t got anything.

Those three Demon Crystals were apparently not as valuable as the Earth Core Flame Essence or the Skill book. Therefore, Di Yalan intended to give those Demon Crystals to Mu Yu Die. However, she was worried that Shi Yan might be against this decision. That’s why she said this to gauge Shi Yan’s reaction.

“Then give them to Miss Mu. I’m OK with that.”

Of course Shi Yan knew what Di Yalan was up to. He said calmly, “We cannot leave Miss Mu with nothing. We have both got what we want. How about giving those three Demon Crystals to Miss Mu?”

“Sure, I’m also fine with this.” Di Yalan smiled with satisfaction. She was quite glad to see Shi Yan being so understanding and considerate.

Mu Yu Die looked a little surprised at Shi Yan’s words. She stared at Shi Yan for a moment, and then shook her head and replied with an awkward smile, “I didn’t do anything helpful and have been depending on your protection all this time. I cannot take these three Demon Crystals.”

“Die...” Di Yalan wanted to say something but hesitated.

“No, I cannot take them.” Mu Yu Die looked pretty determined. She shook her head firmly, and started to tease herself, “I have become a burden for you. You almost lost your lives protecting me. How can I take these three Demon Crystals? Sister Lan, Ding Yan, I know you are being very kind to me, but I would feel ashamed to take these Demon Crystals.”

“Then just take one of them.” Shi Yan said after some hesitation, “Anyway, you must take one of these Demon Crystals. We cannot take such advantage of you.”

“Yes, at least take one of them.” Di Yalan also insisted.

Seeing the two of them both insisting on this, Mu Yu Die found it very hard to deny their kindness any more. She nodded after some hesitation and said, “Well, thanks a lot for your generosity!”

Shi Yan stopped talking and closed his eyes again, going back to operate the Profound Qi inside his body for recovery.

When he cleared his mind and concentrated on the inside, he could clearly feel the changes going on in his body.

He didn’t know why, but somehow, just by sitting there, he could feel the pain and soreness in his muscles were quickly disappearing.

Shi Yan cleared his mind and focused himself completely on the changes his body was going through.

Suddenly, there was a flash of lightning in his mind. His spirit suddenly lit up and it seemed he had realized something.

This is the Immortal Martial Spirit!

Inside his body, his flesh, muscles, bones, veins, organs and entrails were all undergoing subtle changes.

The Immortal Martial Spirit had been secretly repairing his body in a way that he could never understand. His weakness due to breaking out of “Rampage” was also gradually returning to normal.

Shi Yan was extremely surprised. He realized that the Immortal Martial Spirit could not only recover his wounds, but also offset most of the side effects that he had been suffering from “Rampage”!

Without the help of the Immortal Martial Spirit, he was almost certain that he would be unable to confront any opponents for the next three days after using “Rampage”.

However, thanks to the Immortal Martial Spirit, this was no longer the case.

With the help of the Immortal Martial Spirit, the soreness and fatigue in his body was slowly disappearing.

Judging from the condition of his body right now, it would at most, take one more day for him to recover half of his power. There would be no problem for him to engage in another fight with the enemy then.

However, just at that moment when he was gloating in secret, a sudden strong wave of evil and crazy killing intent flared up from the bottom of his heart.

This explosion of his negative energy was as fierce as a tsunami and was more destructive than ever!

Streams of energy mixed with desperation, fear and resentment

were rushing out from the meridians all over his body. They had transformed into waves of spiritual power, roaring through his mind, corrupting his thoughts with an overwhelming force, and altering his morals and personality!

This time, he had absorbed the Profound Qi from all four Nascent Warriors as well as the two Warriors of the Human Level. When the six of them breathed their last breath, Shi Yan was right there with them in this stone cave.

Therefore, he had captured all the Profound Qi coming from the six warriors without missing a drop, which was way thicker and stronger than all the Profound Qi that he had absorbed before.

Therefore, the backlash this time was also fiercer than ever.

Although Shi Yan was still sitting there, his breath started to get heavier and heavier, and his body started to tremble slightly. His body was wrapped in a thick web of killing intent, making him appear even more evil to the others.

After a few minutes, he guessed that he couldn't resist this force any more. He suddenly opened his eyes and stared at Di Yalan with desire burning in his eyes. He said in a very low voice, "I'm having that weird thing happen to my body again!"

Di Yalan was stunned for one moment, and then quickly blushed all of a sudden. She said to Mu Yu Die in a low voice, "Die, you... you turn around, and don't look."

Mu Yu Die's face also quickly went red. She bit her lips a little, turned to the entrance of the cave with her back towards those two people, and said, "You two be quiet. Please don't draw the attention of those demon beasts here. I... I'll be staying here at the entrance."

"Em." Di Yalan answered with a very low voice and then quickly threw herself into Shi Yan's arms.

Shortly after, inside the cave, a slapping rhythm could be heard.

...

After a long time, with a deep moaning and trembling of the body, Shi Yan released his climax inside Di Yalan's body.

From the meridians all over his body, there suddenly sprung streams of magical power.

This strange power was wandering around inside his body randomly, with only a small part of it shooting into Di Yalan's body together with his essence. Most of this strange power was still rushing and bumping around inside his veins and vessels, filling his entire body.

Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes.

He pulled up his pants and left Di Yalan, who was still enjoying her moment of bliss, lying on the ground. He quickly went towards Mu Yu Die and said, "Miss Mu, quick, come here!"

Mu Yu Die was completely shocked by his actions, and couldn't help moving back. Her pretty face instantly went pale. She cried out with horror, "No! Don't come close!"

"The magical power inside my body has just spilled out a little!" Shi Yan was moving towards Mu Yu Die with a heavy panting, and said impatiently, "I am trying my best to control it right now. Let me try and see if I can share some of it with you in order to help you recover your broken veins and muscles inside your body!"

"No way!" Mu Yu Die started screaming, "No, no, no, I'm not ready yet! I don't want to do that with you! Don't come close!"

"I didn't mean that!" Shi Yan roared with a low voice.

He could feel the magical power split into dozens of streams, roaming around inside his body across his muscles, veins, flesh and blood, nurturing his Martial Spirits and Profound Qi in his abdomen respectively.

With this speed, before long, this magical power would be

dispersed all over his body and absorbed entirely.

Shi Yan was concentrating more than ever right now. He forcibly blocked a small part of this strange power inside his arm. He was hanging onto this magical power very tightly and planned to inject this part of the power into Mu Yu Die's body through the spillover of his Profound Qi.

Seeing Mu Yu Die continuously backing away, Shi Yan got extremely impatient. He suddenly took a step forward and grabbed Mu Yu Die tightly into his arms.

With the soft and nicely curved body of Mu Yu Die suddenly taken into his arms, a refreshing and sweet fragrance instantly kissed his face tenderly, making his spirit excited all of a sudden.

“Let go of me!” Mu Yu Die didn't buy Shi Yan's theory at all. She was hitting Shi Yan's chest intensely with her little fists, and struggling with all her might.

However, with all of her veins and muscles broken, she couldn't manage to use her Profound Qi smoothly.

With all her power being void, she was no different from a weak fragile little girl, and couldn't break out of Shi Yan's arms even a little.

“Stop struggling! Just be quiet!” Shi Yan locked up his arms even tighter and forced her delicious and delicate body tightly against his own, leaving her no room to struggle.

At that moment, Shi Yan made the magical power inside his arms quickly rush towards his wrists, all the way through his palms, and into the veins and muscles on Mu Yu Die's back.

“Now, try your best to move this power to your broken veins and muscles! Quick!” With Mu Yu Die locked up in his arms, Shi Yan quickly whispered into her delicate ears.

Mu Yu Die's ears twitched a lot, and her sweet body couldn't help trembling. She was silently cursing Shi Yan as a bastard in her

heart.

However, she clearly felt two strange waves of power flowing into her body through Shi Yan's palms and circling inside the veins and muscles in her back.

Under Shi Yan's harsh order, Mu Yu Die finally became quiet and stopped her struggling. She started to make her best efforts to feel the magical power inside her body, take control of it, and use it for the recovery of her broken veins and muscles.

Holding Mu Yu Die tightly in his arms, feeling the delicious curves of her body, smelling the sweet fragrance from her body, Shi Yan was suddenly distracted and starting to entertain some dirty thoughts in his mind. He couldn't help the excitement coming from his lower body.

“Ah!”

Mu Yu Die screamed with embarrassment. She said in a hurry with a blushed face, “Let go of me now! You... acting like this... I ... I cannot calm myself down.”

“Well, I will let you go for now.” Shi Yan knew that this was not the right time for him to take advantage of her. He nodded and slightly kissed Mu Yu Die's cheek, “I will take this as a reward for offering you this magical power as a gift.”

After these words, Shi Yan released Mu Yu Die from his arms and took a few steps back. He then sat down against the stone wall and slowly closed his eyes.

Mu Yu Die's entire face was completely red. She was both embarrassed and annoyed at the same time. She glared at Shi Yan with anger and cursed, “You dirty bastard!”

After this, with her beautiful bosoms heaving up and down, Mu Yu Die took a few deep breaths before finally calming down.

She understood that given this critical situation, she couldn't afford to waste any time on blaming Shi Yan. She also quickly sat

down and tried to use the magical power that she got from Shi Yan to restore the broken veins and muscles inside her body.

Chapter 41 - The Third Sky of Nascent Level

It was silent outside the valley.

The demon beasts had left a long time ago.

It was already daytime, as the sunlight filtered into the cave through thick bushes like fire.

The three were training cross-legged on the ground with steady breaths.

Not knowing how much time had passed, Shi Yan woke up from the serenity. He stood up, stretched his neck and tried to move his body.

The Third Sky of Nascent Level!

With a deep breath, Shi Yan felt refreshed and his fatigue disappeared at once, while his senses became much more accurate.

With the help of the magical power, Shi Yan's training speed advanced as fast as a shooting arrow, and he increased to the Third Sky of Nascent Level at once!

Standing at the entrance of the cave, he was dimly able to perceive the spiritual scent between the sky and the earth.

He couldn't smell the spiritual scent in the air before. But now, it was all so clear to him that he could sense it easily.

To perceive the spiritual scent in the air was something only Third Sky of Nascent Level warriors could manage. Once he perceived the spiritual scent, he could train his martial skills faster with its help.

As soon as he willed it, his body turned as hard as iron immediately, while his skin turned dark brown and was covered with a vague black light which was similar to the state when he operated his Black Light Shield.

“Er?”

Shi Yan was a little surprised. After a careful examination, he was certain that he wasn't even utilizing his Black Light Shield with Profound Qi.

This was to say, the dark light covering the skin was merely the reaction to reaching the second stage of Petrification Martial Spirit.

He smiled after further examination, knowing that the magical change to his skin must have something to do with his Martial Spirit.

It was rather bright in the cave now. Shi Yan's black eyes blinked and began to wander to Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan's bodies.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were still sitting on the ground cross-legged with tightly closed eyes. There was a vague light moving around their bodies, as their Profound Qi operated in their bodies along specific paths.

He had injected part of the magical power into Mu Yu Die's body, because he wanted to know if this magical power could be passed on to others without sexual intercourse.

And also, he wanted more help. He was not sure how many foes he would meet during the upcoming journey. It would affect their travel if Mu Yu Die still needed protection.

As Di Yalan had said, Mu Yu Die was also a warrior before her tendons broke. If Mu Yu Die recovered, it would be very beneficial for their journey ahead.

Because of those thoughts, he gave that small part of the magical power to her.

Holding his breath, Shi Yan focused his attention on Mu Yu Die. Suddenly, he felt a strong Profound Qi circulating in her body.

A little surprised, he couldn't help but take several glances at her. After a further thought, he got even more confused...

To his amazement, Mu Yu Die's Profound Qi was more refined than Di Yalan's, which meant... Mu Yu Die was a higher level than Di Yalan!

Shi Yan was really shocked. He knew Mu Yu Die was a warrior too, but he thought she was no more than Nascent Level.

After all, Mu Yu Die was much younger than Di Yalan, thus there was no way she could be a higher-leveled warrior than Di Yalan.

But it turned out to be quite the opposite. Shi Yan finally realized that Mu Yu Die was already a Human-Level warrior at such young age. It was an entire level higher than Di Yalan!

As he was standing there stunned, he acutely felt that Mu Yu Die's Profound Qi was calming down gradually.

He knew that Mu Yu Die was about to wake up...

As expected, before long, Mu Yu Die's eyelashes shook and she opened her eyes slowly.

Two clean and bright eyes suddenly observed the cave, and Mu Yu Die's delicate little face lit up. She looked like an extremely beautiful and attractive angel in the wood.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck as he gazed at such a beautiful creature. He couldn't even think straight.

"Done staring?" Mu Yu Die looked indifferent as she stood up slowly. After stretching herself, she chuckled, "From now on, I'm not your burden anymore."

Streams of thin white light flew out from her arms as she was stretching her body. The light soon disappeared in the air...

As Mu Yu Die moved her fingers slowly in the air, the light showed up again little by little, and began to shuttle between her smooth fingers.

"I haven't played my zither for so long. Need a practice now." Mu Yu Die smiled. That smile was like a clean brook in a valley, serene,

empty and intoxicating.

“You are much prettier than before.” Gazing at her for a long while, Shi Yan uttered.

With her veins connected and the Profound Qi of the top of Human Level flowing in the body, her skin became extremely translucent, while her face turned rosy and her eyes brightened. Mu Yu Die looked so confident that nothing in the world could terrify her.

With her strength regained, Mu Yu Die seemed to have turned into another person that she was much more attractive than before.

At this moment, in Shi Yan eyes, Mu Yu Die was literally far prettier than Di Yalan and Mo Yanyu. Both her level and temperament transcended those two girls.

“Thanks.” Mu Yu Die smiled casually, “How long has it been?”

“Two days, I guess.” Shi Yan hesitated, “I’m not sure either. I just feel that we have stayed in the cave for more than one day. You recovered?”

“Yes.” Mu Yu Die nodded confidently, “Let’s leave this cave and set off after Sister Lan wake up.”

“Ok.” Shi Yan replied casually, and felt a little bitter.

Before, though Mu Yu Die was too naive and too kind, she was quite adorable, just like a lovely little sister.

Though Mu Yu Die became more attractive after regaining her energy, her cuteness disappeared, and on the contrary, she made Shi Yan feel some holiness from her, which made Shi Yan a little disappointed.

Disappointed, Shi Yan didn’t bother to say anything. Instead, he walked out of the cave and began to wander in the valley.

Taking out the book “Gravitational Field” on Spirit Level Martial

Skills out of his bag, he turned the pages randomly. Without reading it carefully, he put the book into the bag scrupulously, he was now sure that there were letters in the book.

Spirit Level Martial Skills could only be trained by warriors of at least Earth Level. But he was just a Nascent Level warrior now, which was a long way from Earth Level. Without advancing, to train with the Spirit Level Martial at a low warrior level would only disturb one's mind.

Because of that reason, Shi Yan put the book away after he was assured it was authentic.

A half day later, Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die walked out of the cave together. They were clean, dressed and high spirited, ready to set off.

“Kid, thank you. I’ve stabilised my level now.” Di Yalan said loudly after she got out.

It was rather dangerous a short time after one reached a new level. The warrior needed strengthen his Profound Qi as soon as possible, or he would be hurt in fights and training while his level was still unstable.

The essence from Shi Yan took effect again in Mu Yu Die’s body, which stabilised her level, and enabled her to fight without any fear of backlash.

“Well then, let’s set off.” Not intending to boast, Shi Yan smiled naturally, and guided them out of the valley.

...

Seven days later.

The three of them finally stepped out of the enormous Dark Forest.

Looking at the huge ancient trees behind them, they all felt themselves lucky survivors of a disaster.

In those seven days, they never got into any danger.

The warriors and mercenaries in the Dark Forest had either died or were wounded, not daring to stay in that dangerous area. The demon beasts led by the Silver Thunder Wolf had also calmed down and didn't show up again.

Since the demon beasts and mercenaries were quiet, their journey became magically smooth. Without meeting any obstacles, they went through the most dangerous area and stepped out of the Dark Forest.

They need to pass Silent Town if they were going to the Merchant Union, and they must cross the wide Stone Woods to get to the Silent Woods.

The stones in the Stone Woods were all grotesque in shape, which were either as big as a mountain, or as small as a human. In addition, there were also many stone caves, which were natural shelters.

There were always brutal warriors lurking in the Stone Woods, killing and trading.

Those walking out of the Dark Forest were trade caravans, or warriors and mercenaries who were seeking adventure.

Merchants from foreign countries must have goods with them, while those adventurous warriors and mercenaries, who could get out of the Dark Forest alive, must have medicines and materials from demon beasts.

These people all had something valuable with them...

Therefore, there were people hiding in the Stone Woods for years, who would show up if they found their prey was weak and harvest their goods after a nasty slaughter.

Thus, sometimes the Stone Woods were more dangerous than the Dark Forest. A single man who stepped into it, unless he was a Disaster Level warrior, would always get into trouble.

“The Stone woods is very dangerous. Maybe the people from the Dark World are lurking there...” Di Yalan thought for a while and reminded Mu Yu Die.

“Someone will come to our aid in the Stone Woods, no worries.” Mu Yu Die smiled and looked back at Shi Yan, “You are going into the Stone Woods?”

“Yup. I’m from the Merchant Union, of course I will go back there.” Shi Yan replied.

“Good. Then let’s go there together. You will be safe with us in the Stone Woods.” Mu Yu Die looked confident, and before Shi Yan replied, she added, “let’s go into the Stone Woods. Don’t worry, we are safe now.”

“Ok.” Shi Yan replied. Though he didn’t relax. Once they stepped into the Stone Woods, he was always on alert.

From the memories of the other Shi Yan, he knew it was chaos in the Stone Woods. All the powerful parties were involved in it, including the big families from the Merchant Union.

He didn’t know what Mu Yu Die had that made her so confident. But he knew they would be killed in an instant if they weren’t cautious.

Shi Yan kept calm as he looked around in the woods. Every five steps, he would turn back and examine carefully.

Chapter 42 - Departure

In the Stone Woods. Beside a giant rock.

Mo Chaoge, Bernard, and the Crescent Emissary were standing indifferently, seeming to wait for some news.

Before long, a Star Emissary appeared on the stone path far away, who was heading in their direction hurriedly.

That Star Emissary came near and bowed to the Crescent Emissary, "Sir, still no trace of them."

The Crescent Emissary nodded, and waved his hand, "Keep watching those passes! Be on alert!"

"Yes Sir!"

The Star Emissary who was in charge of collecting information stepped back silently and disappeared into the piles of stones.

One hour later.

Big Johnson, who had lost his arm, showed up from another stone path. He walked up to Mo Chaoge and gave a salute, "No news of them."

"Well." Mo Chaoge nodded, "Keep watching. I just don't believe that they won't come out."

"Third master, is it possible that they were already killed by the demon beasts in the Dark Forest?" Johnson asked after a hesitation, "It is said that the demon beasts in that area went crazy after we left. Many warriors died because of them. They disappeared for so long, maybe they were killed by those demon beasts."

"Could be."

Surprisingly, Mo Chaoge didn't oppose, but nodded and said, "But if they were not killed by demon beasts and slipped through to the Merchant Union, we can do nothing anymore. You know

what I mean?”

“Got it! I will go and watch right now!” Johnson was enlightened and left immediately.

Frowning, Mo Chaoge said to the Crescent Emissary next to him, “Let’s wait for another month, if they still don’t show up, I guess they must have been killed in there. What do you think?”

“Well, I agree with you.” The Crescent Emissary agreed. He thought for a moment and said, “I got the information that the Medicine King Gan Xiao and the Silver Thunder Wolf are still fighting in the Dark Forest. But since there are too many demon beasts, Gan Xiao seemed to begin to withdraw. The demon beasts in the Dark Forest have now all gathered around the Silver Thunder Wolf, chasing the Medicine King Gan Xiao and his escorts. That battle area is relatively safe now.”

“You mean they may still be alive?” Mo Chaoge asked.

“Very likely.” The Crescent Emissary said, “Many warriors were killed in that region, and those not being killed had been scared out of the forest a long time ago. Therefore they can easily get out of the forest alive if they are not unlucky.”

“They’d better be alive!” Bernard from the Tush Mercenary Union was filled with hatred as he said coldly, “They will regret being in this world.”

A cold light flashed in the Crescent Emissary’s eyes, as he said indifferently, “I will take Mu Yu Die away.”

“Then that skinny boy is mine. He stole something from my Mo Family, so I need to get it first. Then you can do whatever you want to him.” Mo Chaoge took a glimpse at Bernard, and said in despise.

Bernard kept silent, pondering on something that no one knew.

...

Shi Yan was walking on the jagged stones cautiously, not daring to relax his vigilance.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were discussing something ahead of him. He couldn't hear them clearly.

"Ding Yan." Mu Yu Die paused abruptly and turned around to look at him.

"Yeah?" Shi Yan was surprised and relaxed his vigilance a little, "What's the matter?"

"You are from the Merchant Union?" Mu Yu Die hesitated and then asked casually.

"Yup."

"You trained all by yourself?"

"Yup."

"You helped me a lot all along the way, so I want to introduce you to someone. If he thinks highly of you, it will be very beneficial for your training. What do you think?" Mu Yu Die was serious, as her beautiful eyes shone and gazed at him.

Shi Yan was shocked at first, and after a long while, he shook his head and replied indifferently, "Miss Mu, thank you for your kindness, but I don't like to be restrained."

He understood, Mu Yu Die wanted to introduce him to an influential person or to a certain power.

In this world there were many single warriors who were at a very high level and could do whatever they wanted without any help.

But most warriors would choose to attach themselves to a certain power or a big family.

Those powers and families possessed lots of resources, immense Martial Skills and training materials, and most importantly, reputed warrior trainers, which could speed up one's training process and step into a higher level.

However, those influential powers and families hardly admitted unknown warriors. It was very hard for a warrior to enter a big power without anyone's introduction.

Apparently Mu Yu Die knew someone influential and she wanted to thank Shi Yan in that way.

"It is very hard to train all by yourself." Mu Yu Die was a little shocked, as she couldn't understand Shi Yan. "One could gain rapid advancement only when he joins a strong power, and could get help at difficult times. A single warrior tends to be attacked in foreign areas. You understand that?"

"Yes, to train alone has many disadvantages. Die is very considerate. You still have the chance to reject after meeting that person." Di Yalan persuaded too.

"Nope. I'll mind my own business, and I don't want to be anyone's domestic servant." Shi Yan shook his head firmly.

"Then whatever." Mu Yu Die frowned and felt that Shi Yan was being ungrateful, though she didn't insist.

Di Yalan sighed, with a little bit of bitterness.

She would go with Mu Yu Die, and since Shi Yan rejected Mu Yu Die's invitation, they would depart forever, for there was little chance they would meet again.

In the past few days, Shi Yan had already walked into her heart. She was filled with sorrow at the thought of their departure.

"Ding Yan, I must go with Die. You..."

After a long thought, Di Yalan couldn't help but plead, as she looked at Shi Yan with regret.

"You can go with me." Shi Yan was stunned, then added, "If you are willing to."

"I..."

Di Yalan looked gloomy as she murmured, "The power behind

Die can not only protect Die, but also help me increase my ability. Furthermore, Die has promised me that I will get exorbitant training materials, as well as a weapon of the Soul Level, and will even have the opportunity to train with Spirit Level Martial Skills. I...”

“Then fine!”

Shi Yan replied decidedly, “You have your own pursuits, so do I. And I can’t give you what you want... Let’s depart as soon as we get to Silent Town.”

Obviously Di Yalan chose Mu Yu Die because she thought the power at Mu’s back was more beneficial for her. And Mu Yu Die really gave her a high price, so she found it hard to refuse.

“Ding Yan...” Di Yalan was heartbroken, “I’m sorry.”

“You don’t need to apologize.” Shi Yan shook his head and replied indifferently, “We did everything at our own will. We don’t owe each other.”

“You!” Di Yalan was a little angry as she stared at Shi Yan with discontent. Her chest trembled, but then she uttered with a bitter sigh, “However you think about it, I have my own plans. You are too young to understand that...”

Shi Yan curled his lips and looked at them coldly, not saying a word.

“You just don’t appreciate it.” Mu Yu Die grunted.

“If there isn’t a common ground, a single word is a waste of breath.” Shi Yan shook his head and walked onto another crossroad without taking a look at the two girls. His back to them, he said coldly, “Goodbye forever.”

“Ding Yan!” Di Yalan shouted, “Didn’t you say we wouldn’t depart till we get to Silent Town?”

“Miss Mu is at the Third Sky of Human Level, and there will be

skillful warriors supporting you in the Woods. You don't need to worry anymore. I won't take advantage of that." Shi Yan's sound faded away gradually, and so did his figure.

"This arrogant guy will get into trouble someday." Mu Yu Die shook her head, "One has to learn to yield sometimes in this world. Or it will be hard to survive, especially for us warriors."

Di Yalan was so disappointed, "I'm so worried about him. Why not just go with us? Why did he refuse?"

"Never mind. Stop worrying. We all will be in the Merchant Union, and will get the chance to meet again." Mu Yu Die comforted her, "Sister Lan, though we are women, we have a mission to make our family prosper and avenge Uncle Luo and our friends. We have to depend on a big power and complete our mission."

After a short pause, some mixed emotions crossed her eyes. Mu Yu Die recalled the days when they were travelling with Shi Yan and that mind-blowing kiss with him in that cave...

But eventually, she shook her head firmly, seeming to get rid of Shi Yan's shadow in her mind. "And him, just let him be a beautiful memory in our lives."

She seemed to say that to herself.

"He is not that bad... almost Human Level... and he is so young..." Di Yalan mumbled.

"It will take at least ten years for him to advance to Disaster or Earth Level, and even longer to get to Nirvana and Sky. We don't have that much time. Furthermore, he is on his own, without any strong support..."

"Well, fine. I hope we made the right choice."

"I've never made a mistake!"

Chapter 43 - Beiming Family

In the Stone Woods.

Mo Yanyu was leaning her plump behind against an oval rock under the hot sun. Frowning slightly, she seemed to be deep in thought.

A Mo Family escort with a plain and pimply face was standing next to her and was also deep in thought while narrowing his eyes.

The sound of inconsistent heavy steps gradually came from afar.

Mo Yanyu opened her eyes and fluttered her eyelashes. She glanced at Johnson, who was rapidly running towards her, and coldly reproached, "Why are you in such a hurry?"

"We've spotted them!" Johnson answered with a twisted face, "Two girls! According to the Star Emissary, that's who we want!"

Mo Yanyu's adorable eyes suddenly lit up while her expression calmed down, "Is the boy with them too?"

"Seems not..." after a short pause, Johnson said calmly, "We will know where the boy is once we catch the girls."

"Had Third Uncle got this message?"

"One of our Star Emissaries had been sent for him."

"In which direction?" Mo Yanyu stood her beautiful body upright and stretched her limbs slowly, "Are they further away from us or Third Uncle?"

"Further away from us. If everything goes well the Third Master and his people should arrive here soon." Johnson replied.

"Well then, let's not worry about it right now." Mo Yanyu frowned, as she talked to the pimply Mo Family escort next to her, "Uncle Li, do we need to go up there and meet them?"

"No hurry, our target hasn't shown up yet." Li Han smiled and

shook his head, “Third Master and the people from the Dark World are all there, so it will be fine. This pass is very crucial as well. We’d better stay on high alert. Our goal is that boy. All our previous efforts will go to waste if that boy slips away.”

“That makes sense.” Mo Yanyu nodded, without saying anything else.

...

“Woowoowoo! Woowoowoo!”

While stopping beside a snake-shaped rock, Mu Yu Die took out a silver horn and began to blow it.

The sound of the horn rippled away like waves to far away places.

Figures hiding in every corner of the Stone Woods came out one after another after they heard the horn, quickly rushing in the direction of Mu Yu Die.

“Sister Lan, don’t worry, some people will come to our rescue.” Mu Yu Die smiled lightly, “We are really safe here. No need to worry about the Dark World.”

“Hopefully...” Di Yalan barely smiled. She couldn’t settle down as she was worried about Shi Yan. She sighed, “I hope he is fine...”

Shortly after, shadows appeared one after the other from far away. The man in the lead turned out to be the Crescent Emissary from the Dark World, and beside him were Mo Chaoge and Bernard, as well as several other Mo Family warriors and Star Emissaries.

“Miss Mu, nice to meet you again.” The Crescent Emissary’s vicious eyes were wandering over Mu Yu Die’s body like a cunning snake. His voice was like ice, “You nearly managed a perfect escape! But too bad. Unfortunately for you, you didn’t quite make it to the Merchant Union. You will instead be taken away by me.”

“Really?” Mu Yu Die smiled calmly, showing no fear.

The Crescent Emissary frowned and was confused. Mu Yu Die was too calm at this time. This was too abnormal.

“Where is that young guy who was hanging around with you?”

Mo Chaoge came over, glanced at the girls, and said coldly, “Tell me where the boy is! Or I will kill her first!”

Mo Chaoge pointed at Di Yalan.

“She is mine!” Bernard angrily stared at Mo Chaoge, then flashed over to Di Yalan like lightning and stretched his hand towards her.

“Triing!”

Noise from a zither rang out suddenly. The sound was like a sharp weapon, lightly cutting into one’s nerves.

Bernard quivered and his face suddenly twisted in pain. He stepped back quickly and stared at Mu Yu Die in astonishment.

Holding her zither, Mu Yu Die had already sat down. She looked at Bernard with a cold expression on her face, “You wanna try again?”

Bernard’s brain felt like it was being stabbed by a steel needle and he felt like his head was splitting. Hearing that, his face became even more distorted, but he didn’t dare step up again.

“That’s impossible!”

The Crescent Emissary’s face twisted and showed panic for the first time, “It has only been a few weeks, your Music Martial Spirit shouldn’t have recovered so soon!”

After a pause, he seemed to remember something and sneered, “I know, you forced yourself to operate your broken veins! You are seeking death!”

“Oh?” Mu Yu Die replied indifferently, “Maybe you can give it a try? I know you have reached the Disaster Level. But if you could remember, you should know that I killed a Crescent Emissary at the same level as you with my Music Martial Spirit before we

entered the Dark Forest.”

This not only made the Crescent Emissary hesitate, but also made both Bernard and Mo Chaoge also panick. They stared at her with an unbelievable look in their eyes.

“Emissary? This... is it true?” Mo Chaoge felt his mouth go dry and he took several steps back. He made a gesture to tell the Mo Family warriors not to take action.

“She could do that if she is in a good condition... but now, I don’t buy it.” The Crescent Emissary grunted.

“Haha, Emissary, it’s up to you.” Mo Chaoge retracted further, and stood amongst the Mo Family warriors, showing that they were not going to take the initiative.

“Whoever comes up first, dies first.” Mu Yu Die said coldly, and then turned her head away, not bothering to say anything more.

Di Yalan was standing beside her on alert with a stoney face.

Suddenly all was silent.

Though suspicious, the Crescent Emissary didn’t take action blindly.

At the same time Bernard and Mo Chaoge quieted down after they heard that Mu Yu Die was capable of killing a Disaster Level Warrior. They made eye-contact with the Crescent Emissary to urge him to test Mu Yu Die.

At that moment, shadows appeared from all directions from the surrounding rocks.

A tall man suddenly stood beside Mu Yu Die and said softly, “Miss Mu, how are you?”

Everyone in the area, including the Crescent Emissary, Mo Chaoge and Bernard, who were all Disaster Level warriors, couldn’t figure out how he appeared.

That man just appeared next to Mu Yu Die like a ghost.

“Martial Spirit of Teleportation! Beiming Family!”

Mo Chaoge screamed in shock.

“Look who we have here... the Mo Family!” The handsome young man beside Mu Yu Die looked around in arrogance and said coldly, “Huh? You wanna fight with my Beiming Family?”

“We dare not.”

Mo Chaoge took a deep breath and calmed down. He said to the young man politely, “It’s the Third Young Master, no wonder Miss Mu was so confident. Third Young Master, I didn’t know that Miss Mu was protected by the Beiming Family. If I knew that earlier, I wouldn’t have bothered coming here. Please forgive me, Third Young Master...”

Beiming Ce waved his hand and said impatiently, “If it’s none of the Mo Family’s business, just leave with your people. Don’t get involved. I’m gonna clean up the Dark World.”

As he was talking, warriors wearing Beiming uniforms arrived one by one.

Two old men, one thin and the other fat, stood next to him silently and fixed their cold eyes on Mo Chaoge and the Crescent Emissary separately.

“Well then, I will take my leave.” Mo Chaoge smiled respectfully and left at once.

The Mo Family warriors turned quiet after they saw Beiming Ce, and left immediately with Mo Chaoge.

As for Bernard, he stepped back and was about to run away into the Stone Woods.

Mu Yu Die touched her zither softly and said, “Third Young Master, please kill that guy.”

“Triing!”

The sound of the zither rang out.

Benard's body quivered heavily and he almost fell down. He jumped behind a rock immediately and ran as fast as hell.

"Old Yin, please." Beiming Ce ordered softly.

The thin old man behind him suddenly rushed out like a ghost and, after a moment, disappeared.

Three seconds later, Bernard's miserable horrifying scream came from within the Stone Woods.

Five minutes later the thin old man, Old Yin, flew back like a ghost and stood still beside Beiming Ce, all without saying a word.

Note from the TL: Hey guys, thank you for reading this excellent novel! And yeah, I know, though it's perfect, there's something funny...such as the author sometime has bad memory that he forgets to make Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die call Shi Yan "Ding Yan", and the Pinyin "Die" is like the English word "die"...haha, anyway, it IS an intriguing novel, isn't it?

Chapter 44 - Silent Town

“Thank you, Third Young Master.”

Mu Yu Die stood up and put her zither away slowly. Seeing confusion in the Crescent Emissary's eyes, she said, “You never thought you would encounter misfortune after such a long chase, did you?”

“Beiming Ce! This is a matter between the Dark World and the Mu Family. Your Beiming Family better not get involved!” The Crescent Emissary didn't look at Mu Yu Die, but instead stared at Beiming Ce. “As long as you allow me to take Miss Mu away, the Lord of the Dark World will reward your Beiming Family with anything you want.”

“No need.” Beiming Ce shook his head and said calmly, “Since you're already here, there is no reason for you to return.”

The two old men behind him quickly flew out again.

These two old men flew towards the emissaries like hideous devils. After a few seconds, all the emissaries from the Dark World, including the Crescent Emissary, had their chests sliced open and died instantly.

Once all the emissaries were killed, the two frightening old men silently flew back to Beiming Ce's side like two ghostly shadows.

Standing beside Mu Yu Die, Di Yalan was astonished when she saw the miserable deaths of the emissaries.

She knew that the Beiming Family was very influential within the Merchant Union, but she never thought they were this powerful!

The Beiming Family didn't care about retaliation from the Dark World. Therefore, they ruthlessly killed the emissaries.

“Sister Lan, do you still think we made the wrong decision?” Mu

Yu Die smiled.

Di Yalan had a complicated expression on her face. She lightly sighed, “No, it’s just that...”

“Stop worrying. For our future’s sake, it’s best to forget about him as soon as possible.” Mu Yu Die persuaded her softly.

“Ok.” Di Yalan nodded helplessly.

“Shall we go now?” Beiming Ce’s black eyes wandered over Di Yalan and Mu Yu Die for a while as he asked politely.

“Sure.”

...

In another region of the Stone Woods.

As Shi Yan stepped around a corner, he suddenly drew back while on alert.

“Shoo!”

A sharp arrow landed in front of him. At the same time, a Blue Smoke Bomb of the Mo Family shot up into the sky.

“Hum! It’s you again! Reckless!” Shi Yan grunted with a stony face.

Mo Yanyu appeared from within a stone cave with arrows in her hand. She looked at Shi Yan and said coldly , “You’ve finally shown up!”

Johnson, with his broken arm, and Li Han also appeared from behind her and blocked Shi Yan from both sides, while watching him cautiously.

“You are seeking death!”

Shi Yan shouted and suddenly shot towards Mo Yanyu like a sharp sword.

While shooting forward, his body was covered with white smoke and the smell of death. He looked like a terrifying devil!

“Miss! Watch out!” Li Han cried out in fear and flew towards Mo Yanyu like lightning.

Li Han was at the Second Sky of Human Level, thus he could see Shi Yan’s amazing explosiveness! How could Mo Yanyu bear such violent force!

“Cheechee!”

Shi Yan slammed his foot down and cut a long gouge in the ground. Suddenly, his body changed direction and rushed towards Johnson, moving faster than before.

“Bang!”

Before Johnson could even think, he saw a white shadow rushing towards him and an overwhelming power slammed into his body.

“Kakaka!”

All of Johnson’s bones broke instantly and blood poured from his mouth and eyes. He fell to the ground and moaned miserably.

“You are Johnson, right? You certainly enjoyed it when you whipped me hard a few days ago!” Standing beside Johnson, Shi Yan kicked on Johnson’s chest again and again. He smirked, “Are you enjoying this now? Huh?”

Shi Yan continued to kick Johnson until a broken bone in his chest was forced into his heart and he finally ceased to breathe.

“Brutal!” Li Han was shocked. Though he wanted to go and kill Shi Yan, he worried about Mo Yanyu, so he could only hesitate and shout, unable to stop him.

Mo Yanyu was horrified. She was dumbstruck after she saw how brutally Johnson was killed.

Johnson’s Profound Qi was then quickly absorbed into Shi Yan’s meridians in a few seconds.

Shi Yan turned around and fixed his bright eyes on Mo Yanyu; then he smiled coldly, “Pretty, we will meet again. And believe me,

you will regret what you have done to me.”

As he finished his sentence, he slipped around a nearby stone and disappeared into the Stone Woods.

“Old Li, why didn’t you kill him!” Mo Yanyu said angrily after Shi Yan disappeared.

“That guy is at least at the Second Sky of Nascent Level. Also, he used such brutal martial arts that could kill in a single move. He moved so fast that I could hardly follow him. If I had moved, he would have come and attacked you, so I was afraid...” Li Han said apologetically.

“Second Sky of Nascent Level!”

Mo Yanyu held her breath as fear could be seen in her eyes. She mumbled, “It’s impossible! There was only a little Profound Qi in his body two months ago! He was merely at the First Sky of Elementary Level!”

“What?” Li Han’s whole body shook as he looked at her unbelievably. After a long time, he continued, “If that’s true, Miss, in my humble opinion, you have caused a huge problem for the Mo Family.”

...

Shi Yan moved quickly through the Stone Woods, not spending one more second than necessary in any area.

He knew that Li Han was a Human Level warrior, and since the Blue Smoke Bomb of the Mo Family was already in the sky, more people would gather there shortly. He had to escape as soon as possible to avoid any further trouble.

Because of his cautiousness, he managed to escape from that dangerous region before Mo Chaoge and his people arrived.

There didn’t seem to be many warriors hiding in the Stone Woods. He didn’t see anyone while he was fleeing, which confused

him a little. He guessed this abnormality had something to do with those influential people Mu Yu Die mentioned.

...

At nightfall.

Shi Yan finally got out of the Stone Woods and was walking towards Silent Town, which was only a very short distance away.

He slowed down a little and began to sort through the memories of the previous owner of his body to recall everything he could about the Shi Family.

He needed the identity of the former master of this body.

As one of the five biggest families in the Merchant Union, the Shi Family was rich in all types of resources such as Martial Skills, a Gravity Field training room, rare Chinese medicines and skillful warrior trainers...

He needed to use these advantages to strengthen himself.

He had decided when he was at the blood pool that he would go to the Shi Family, and that's why he refused Mu Yu Die's offer.

The identity of his body was too special that it would cause a lot of trouble if he attached himself to another power.

In addition, a new power wouldn't give him access to the best resources.

But it would be totally different if he went to the Shi Family...

The previous master of his body was the young master of the Shi Family. As long as he showed talent, the Shi Family would cultivate him at any cost.

It would be a total waste if he didn't take advantage of their special resources.

...

Once he reached Silent Town, he walked directly into a shop

which was collecting all sort of stones without a second thought and shouted naturally, “Anyone here?”

An attendant came up with a wide smile, and flattered, “Young Master Yan, you’ve finally returned! The Master sent Minister Han to pick you up long ago since you disappeared in the Dark Forest. Young Master Yan, Minister Han is in the backyard, for he has waited for you for many days. But now, it is a little inconvenient for him to meet. Could you wait for a moment...?”

The attendant looked towards the backyard with ambiguous eyes.

“Never mind. I know what he is doing.” Shi Yan walked directly into the backyard of the shop.

Several Shi Family warriors were gambling in the backyard. At the sight of Shi Yan, they panicked and put the dices away embarrassingly, then greeted loudly, “Young Master Yan!”

“Please go on.” Shi Yan waved his hands and strode past them to the back room.

These warriors were quite surprised since Shi Yan left without scolding them.

“What? He didn’t reproach us this time. Too strange!”

“Yes. He used to scold us every time he saw us gambling. Do some actual work! Stop goofing around! How strange that he didn’t say anything this time!”

“Young Master Yan looked totally different. It seems... that he has developed some manliness. Don’t you think so?”

“Well, yeah, you have a point.”

“...”

Shi Yan opened the door as he reached the back room and walked in directly, “Uncle Han, when did you arrive here?”

Han Zhong was quite shocked. After dressing himself in a hurry,

he smiled in embarrassment, "... Young Master Yan, when did you come in?"

"I've been here for quite a while." Shi Yan smiled, sipped his tea, and waved his hand, "It's ok. If you are not satisfied enough you can keep going. Besides, I have the chance to learn something from you."

"Kekeke!" Han Zhong coughed strongly for a while, "Satisfied, satisfied. Well, Xiao Feng Xian, you should go back to your business."

"Ok, I will take my leave." That young woman dressed herself in bed and then stepped down with a red face. As she walked to the doorway, she suddenly turned back and glared at Shi Yan, "Everybody said Young Master Yan from the Shi Family is a righteous man, I guess they are all blind! I've never seen such a 'righteous' man before! Humph!"

She giggled and leered at Shi Yan, before moving her hot body out of the room.

Chapter 45 - The Change

As soon as Xiao Feng Xian left, Han Zhong became more relaxed right away.

After briefly dressing himself, Han Zhong sat down at the table in front of Shi Yan, made a cup of tea and sipped it, “Young Master Yan, where are your escorts?”

“All dead.” Shi Yan looked calm as he explained casually, “The demon beasts in the Dark Forest went insane when hunting the warriors. In order to protect me, they all sacrificed themselves.”

Han Zhong was rather shocked as he looked at Shi Yan in confusion, “I was more or less aware of the situation. It’s so lucky of you to have escaped from it.”

He had heard the news long ago that the Silver Thunder Wolf had gone on a rampage, so he planned to go back to Shi Family in half a month since he assumed that he wouldn’t be able to find Shi Yan alive. He couldn’t believe that Shi Yan walked out of the Dark Forest unscathed.

It was so intense in the Dark Forest that even experienced warriors had been killed. But Shi Yan, who was a nerd, had somehow managed to survive. This completely surprised Han Zhong.

Han Zhong didn’t really like the former master of Shi Yan’s body.

That guy didn’t train in martial arts and was very old-fashioned; he loved to look into things that no one else in the Shi Family liked. Han Zhong couldn’t understand that.

Now, if it weren’t for Shi Jian’s order and the fact that he happened to be in Silent Town, he wouldn’t have been here waiting for Shi Yan.

“Yes, you certainly did have good luck.”

Shi Yan nodded as he smiled naturally, then he asked indifferently, “Uncle Han, when are we returning home?”

“It’s up to you, Young Master Yan. Actually I’m desperate to leave, for I have something to report to the family head. I would have returned days ago if it weren’t for you.” Han Zhong paused and answered boldly.

While he was talking, Han Zhong couldn’t help but begin to examine Shi Yan. He didn’t notice it at first, but after a careful examination, he realized something was different about him...

Shi Yan was much skinnier than before, and his round face had become angular and more masculine.

Sitting there naturally, Shi Yan’s kept his back upright and his body was like a sharp sword which made him seem quite hard-edged.

That wasn’t the only change in his appearance.

The former Shi Yan only lit up when he was researching historic relics. He was often listless on an average day.

But now, the guy before Han Zhong had deep bright eyes and seemed to be deep in thought all the time, sending out the impression that he knew everything.

“Uncle Han, may I ask you something?” Under Han Zhong’s gaze, Shi Yan continued easily, “It is surprisingly quiet in the Stone Woods these days, do you know what’s happening?”

“Well, the Beiming Family sent people there. It is said that they were meeting someone in the Stone Woods, therefore the warriors who were wandering in the Stone Woods all left upon hearing that.”

“The Beiming Family! Who was in the lead?” Shi Yan realized something.

“Beiming Ce.”

Han Zhong began to curse after he answered Shi Yan, “That guy is said to have reached Disaster Level half a year ago. Damn! He is only twenty seven years old! And he has twin Martial Spirits! Madness! I’m already forty five and still at The Second Sky of Disaster Level! It’s unfair!”

Twenty five years old, First Sky of Disaster Level, twin Martial Spirits...

Shi Yan stiffened as he suddenly realized that Beiming Ce was the person Mu Yu Die had planned to introduce him to.

That man has a rare talent and reached that level at such a young age. In addition, he came from the number one family in the Merchant Union - the Beiming Family. No wonder Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan chose him.

Silently, Shi Yan smirked to himself and an icy glint could be seen in his eyes: twenty five years old, Disaster Level, twin Martial Spirits, that’s very unbelievable?

Not exactly!

He was someone who had reached The Third Sky of Nascent Level from the First Sky of Elementary Level in mere two months!

Despite the Petrification and Immortal Martial Spirits, he also possessed another vicious and mysterious Martial Spirit. In comparison, he had much more potential than Beiming Ce!

“Time! I only need some time to surpass Beiming Ce!” Shi Yan thought to himself.

“Young Master Yan, you, you’ve got Profound Qi in your body?”

Han Zhong’s eyes lit up and he gazed at Shi Yan seriously, “I can feel that there is Profound Qi flowing in your body, and it is incredibly dense! Young Master Yan, what on earth happened to you?”

Shi Yan took a deep breath, trying to suppress his indignation,

“Yes, I’ve got Profound Qi, so I’m a warrior now.”

“Which Level?” Han Zhong couldn’t wait.

“Nascent Level.”

“What!”

...

The Merchant Union. Tianyun City. The Shi Family. The training field.

The training field of Shi Family extended tens of miles and was covered with ancient trees and odd rocks...

There were also water pools, sand fields, earth fields and wooden rooms within the training field...

With complicated refuges and barriers everywhere, the members of Shi Family were able to conduct live combat exercises.

And they could also learn to adjust and fight in all sorts of topographies.

At the time being, in the center of the training field, stood a huge, diamond shaped testing jade. The third generation of Shi Family were in a queue, walking towards the jade. They put their hand on the testing jade and sent out Profound Qi to test their level.

“Shi Tianluo, twenty-one, the Second Sky of Nascent Level!”

“Shi Tianxiao, twenty-five, the First Sky of Nascent Level!”

“Shi Tianling, twenty-seven, the Third Sky of Elementary Level!”

“Shi Tianke, twenty, the Second Sky of Nascent Level!”

“Shi Tianyun, nineteen, the Third Sky of Nascent Level!”

“...”

Han Feng, who was standing beside the testing jade with his eyes narrowed, yelled out after every young member finished his test.

Everytime Han Feng announced the result, the members of the

first and second generations changed their expression accordingly; either happy or disappointed.

“Second Brother, your Tianyun is really something! He managed to advance to a higher stage!” Shi Kuo was a little angry as he grunted, “Tianke has been too lazy recently! I have to do something!”

“Third Brother, Tianke trains really hard. I saw him training in the Gravitational Room at midnight. Don’t pressure him too much, or it could go the opposite way.” Shi Gang comforted him.

“Tianyun, work harder. Advance to Human Level as soon as possible.” Shi Tie’s sound was like a great bell as he said proudly.

Shi Tie was Shi Jian’s brother, and Shi Gang and Shi Kuo were his sons. Shi Tianyun was Shi Gang’s son and thus Shi Tie’s grandson. Shi Tie was delighted as he saw that Shi Tianyun had advanced.

The position of family head was decided by one’s Martial level. Many years ago Shi Tie lost to his brother, so he was rather unhappy and hoped that his grandson, Shi Tianyun, could transcend Shi Jian’s grandson, Shi Tianxiao.

The Petrification Martial Spirit was very special and only went to the first two children of a couple.

The third child would rarely have the chance to inherit it.

That’s why every small family of Shi would generally only have two children.

Even the head of the Shi Family, Shi Jian, only had two children: Shi Yang and Shi Qing.

Shi Yang had a daughter - Shi Tianling, and a son - Shi Tianxiao.

Shi Qing and Yang Hai only had one son and that was Shi Yan.

Thus, Shi Tianling, Shi Tianxiao and Shi Yan were Shi Jian’s grandchildren, while Shi Tianyun, Shi Tianluo and Shi Tianke

were Shi Tie's grandchildren.

The members of Shi Family all got along well with each other. They stuck together and worked hard to increase the influence of their family.

But no matter how close they were, they still competed with each other. Such as Shi Tie, he always wanted to surpass Shi Jian through his grandson.

As his sons, Shi Gang and Shi Kuo, were not comparable to Shi Jian's son, Shi Yang, he had given up passing his dream onto them.

Luckily, his grandsons, Shi Tianyun and Shi Tianke, were more talented than Shi Tianxiao. He was rather proud every time they did the test, although it was without any bad intentions.

Yang Hai was standing next to Shi Yang, as he was explaining the state of their quarry to the latter. Hearing Shi Tie's yell, Shi Yang got serious, "Well, second uncle is about to show off again." After a pause, he glanced at Shi Tianxiao who was standing beside him and scolded, "You little bastard! You only cause me to lose face!"

"Er...I'm not that bad..." Shi Tianxiao drew his head back and looked miserable.

Yang Hai's face became bitter as he sighed, "You should be satisfied. Think about my Shi Yan. At least Tianxiao is a warrior. But that bastard fools around all day and hasn't come back yet. Who knows how much trouble he will bring back this time."

"Ha, that's true." Shi Yang laughed.

...

The descendants of Shi Family were all gathered together on the training field and were discussing lively.

Just then, an eagle appeared in the sky and settled down on Shi Jian's shoulder.

Shi Jian picked up a little gray bag from the eagle's claw and took

out a letter. Opening the letter casually, he began to read and he frowned.

They were all his relatives, so he didn't intend to hide anything.

“Huh?”

After merely one glance, Shi Jian couldn't help but cry out with an amazed look on his face.

The people on the field were surprised and became quiet. They looked at Shi Jian and wondered why he was acting so weird.

“Big Brother, what's up?” Shi Tie frowned and asked loudly, “Is the Mo Family making a fuss again? Damn! They won't quiet down if we don't give them a good kick!”

“Nope.” Shi Jian put down the letter excitedly as he said in surprise, “Han Zhong found Shi Yan!”

“How is that bastard?” Upon hearing that, Yang Hai finally settled down. He asked with an annoyed face, seemingly planning on giving Shi Yan a lesson when he returned.

“That kid, is a warrior now...” Shi Jian looked shocked as his mouth trembled. He was trying to hide his excitement.

“What?” Shi Tie couldn't help but cry out, “He is seventeen! Why did he begin to train at such an old age!”

After thinking, he sighed lightly as he really felt sorry for Shi Yan, “It's too late, starting at seventeen. I guess he won't achieve anything in his life. What was that little bastard doing before now! If he had been training since he was born, he could have reached the Second or Third Sky of Nascent Level, even if he doesn't possess the Martial Spirit of Shi Family.”

“That kid, is now at the Third Sky of Nascent Level!” Shi Jian answered firmly with sharp eyes.

Chapter 46 - A Glance

Half a month later, in Tianyun City.

Shi Yan and Han Zhong, as well as a troop of warriors from the Shi Family, were entering the city at a leisurely pace. A ground dragon was carrying the goods they had purchased from Silent Town.

Shi Yan and Han Zhong were at the head of the troop and had talked all the way.

“Old Han, it’s getting late. Let’s continue for home tomorrow. We should rest somewhere in the city today, okay?” Shi Yan said leisurely.

“Well, where does Brother Yan want to stay?” Han Zhong smiled with an ambiguous look on his face, “Tianyun City is the biggest city in the Merchant Union, with a large population of several millions. The recreation centers in this city are much better quality than those in the small cities we passed.”

“Well Old Han, since you are familiar with this area, you lead the way. ”

“I’m afraid my remaining crystal coins are not enough. Hmm, we will spend cost a lot at some places.”

“Old Han, you want to take advantage of me again? Last time in the Scent Pavilion you pretended to be drunk and made me pay for everything. Now you want to do that again?”

“Hehe...I was truly drunk that time. You are treating me unjustly!”

“I don’t care. You have to pay this time! Or I will tell Uncle Han Feng everything you did on the way.”

“No! Brother Yan, it’s my treat! My treat, okay?” Han Zhong faked a miserable face and sighed, “You know my brother’s temper

too well! If he knows what I did, he will kick me to death. Oh My! I'm so miserable! I work so hard for the family and earn so little money that I can barely even afford my recreation time..."

"Deal! It's your treat tonight." Shi Yan looked back and shouted to the warriors behind him, "Fellows, you all heard that right?"

"Yes, we heard it!"

All seven warriors of Shi Family yelled excitedly at the same time.

"Let's go!"

...

Shi Yan mingled well with Han Zhong and those warriors in that half a month.

Shi Yan was not pretentious at all as he ate and interacted happily with the warriors. And he was very open when it came to women, for he never chickened out in brothels, sometimes being even more audacious and horny than Han Zhong once he met a lovely girl.

The two of them went to a lot of brothels together along the way. They paid in turns and never let the warriors use any money.

In a very short time, Shi Yan won the trust of Han Zhong and his escorts.

Han Zhong thought they shared the same interests and complimented Shi Yan on the fact that he had grown up. As his level increased, Shi Yan had become a totally different person.

Shi Yan concealed most of what had happened to him in the Dark Forest. He told Han Zhong that he found a certain type of red fruit in the ancient cave he was studying. After eating three such fruits, he got Profound Qi and awoke the Petrification Martial Spirit of Shi Family.

He didn't mention a word about the blood pool, the Immortal

Martial Spirit or the mysterious Martial Spirit, nor the story between him and Mo Yanyu and Mu Yu Die.

Though Han Zhong was very surprised by Shi Yan's magical story, he didn't keep asking, but thought that Shi Yan was incredibly lucky to find that fruit which made him stronger.

And during these days, Shi Yan learnt all he could about the Shi Family through Han Zhong.

The former master of his body had left him many memories, though it was mostly about the historic relics and ancient language that he had studied.

But Shi Yan couldn't recall many memories about the Shi Family. Luckily Han Zhong was not on guard against him. During their together time in brothels, Han Zhong had already told him all he wanted to know.

After hanging out together several times, Han Zhong began to like this young master; so he told Shi Yan not only about the business and power distribution of Shi Family, but also common sense about martial training, which Shi Yan wasn't aware of before.

For example, when a warrior reached Nirvana Level, the Conception Sea would form in their mind, which could connect and combine the Martial Spirit magically with their Profound Qi to activate a secret skill and release an amazing power.

Also, he told Shi Yan a lot about the features and weakness of all sorts of Martial Spirits; about the most powerful Martial Spirit in the Merchant Union, the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire, and their weaknesses and disadvantages.

Although Han Zhong was very lustful, he was quite diligent in training Martial Arts.

Han Zhong possessed a lot information about warriors, therefore, through him, Shi Yan gained a thorough and comprehensive

understanding about warriors, as well as the differences among the Levels below Disaster Level.

Han Zhong was a Disaster Level warrior, so he couldn't tell Shi Yan much about the levels above it, but he told Shi Yan everything he knew about the lower levels.

This information was exactly what Shi Yan needed most right now.

...

The Dream Pavilion.

Shi Yan and Han Zhong, along with four Shi family warriors, were drinking and having fun in a large room on the third floor.

In the center of the simple and unsophisticated room, on some soft carpet, stood a one-meter high square table, which was loaded with delicate food and drinks.

Shi Yan and Han Zhong were sitting on the carpet with hot young girls in their arms, yelling and playing dice happily.

“Old Han, drink!” Shi Yan yelled.

Han Zhong was downcast as he had lost numerous times. He drank up the wine in his cup at once and rubbed the girl's in his arms breasts. Then he raised the dice and grunted, “This hand's got some luck, this time I will definitely win!”

“Aww, if that is luck, both of my hands have it!” Shi Yan's grin widened and he put both of his hands underneath the girl's coat, “Qiu Xiang, you really got big things here, say, I will always be bigger than him!”

Qiu Xiang had delicate white skin and plump breasts. Her watery eyes were filled with shyness, “Young Master Yan, you are so bad! Why do you tease me all the time?”

“You can tease me too.” Shi Yan smiled, drank his strong drink, and urged, “Old Han, what are you waiting for? Cast the dice!”

“Yin Kui and Jiu Shan are nearby. Too much Yin Qi is coming forth. I can feel it clearly.” Han Zhong frowned, released the girl in his arms, and quietly walked to the window.

He opened the window and looked out of it with the help of the light of a big red lantern, “Sure enough, there is Beiming Ce. Yin Kui and Jiu Shan never leave his side. Wherever Yin Kui and Jiu Shan are, you will find Beiming Ce.”

As Han Zhong mentioned Beiming Ce, Shi Yan suddenly remembered Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan.

After a little hesitation, he too walked to the window and opened it a little wider, coldly gazing at the troop on the street.

This troop consisted of around thirty people. Beiming Ce was riding on his snow white Ling Xiao Horse at the head of the troop. Smiling lightly, he was talking to someone in the sedan on a ground dragon beside him.

As the curtain on the sedan fluttered in the wind, Mu Yu Die’s fairy-like face could be seen.

Di Yalan was riding a war horse with black armor on it, her hot body moving up and down with the pace of the war horse. She looked in low-spirits and a slight, sorrowful frown could be seen between her eyebrows.

She barely smiled when Beiming Ce talked to her, not showing too much interest.

The two old men, who were sending out heavy Yin Qi, were both riding black-armored war horses behind Beiming Ce silently.

Shi Yan opened the window a little more. When he looked at the troop who were still dozens of meters away, the two old men seemed to notice as they looked in his direction immediately.

Shi Yan felt two streams of cold Yin Qi gush out of their eyes from so far away, making him shudder with fear.

The two old men seemed to know Han Zhong, as when they came near the window and saw him, their cold air decreased.

Under the two men's gaze, Han Zhong became a totally different person. Instead of behaving in a noisy, flamboyant and boisterous manner, he looked rigid, as he gave a salute to them, holding his fists in front of his chest.

The two old men nodded and didn't look at Han Zhong anymore. They turned back and narrowed their eyes, focusing again towards Beiming Ce's back.

The troop from the Beiming Family didn't stop, but continued their leisurely steps along the street.

There were several warriors who were out seeking fun on the narrow street. They stepped to the side of the road in respect when they saw the Beiming troop.

A small path was thus suddenly formed in the middle of the crowded street for the Beiming troops to move by smoothly.

Chapter 47 - Tianyun City

In that simple room, Shi Yan looked lost. He stood stunned at the window for quite a while before closing the window.

Going back to his seat, he was in rather low-spirits. He merely focused on drinking and didn't put his hands on the girls anymore.

"Young Master Yan, was that the Beiming Family troop?" Karl, a Shi Family warrior, asked him casually.

"Yes." Shi Yan answered bluntly and kept drinking.

Standing by the window, Shi Zhong looked at Shi Yan, frowning with an odd look in his eyes. After some hesitation, he asked, "Brother Yan, the woman on the war horse, you... do you know her?"

Shi Yan nodded and finished the wine in his cup, "Yes, we walked out of the Dark Forest together. As you heard, the demon beasts were everywhere. It was better to be accompanied than be alone."

Han Zhong was an experienced man. Seeing Shi Yan's apathetic response, he blinked his eyes and assumed that something must have happened between Shi Yan and Di Yalan.

Moving near Shi Yan, Han Zhong waved his hand to the girl next to him, "Leave us alone. We need to talk."

The foxy girls stood up smiling and quickly left the room.

When there were only the warriors left in the room, Han Zhong said, "Brother Yan, I don't know who that woman is. But it seems that Beiming Ce is quite into her. If she accepts Beiming Ce as well, you should forget her."

"Han Zhong is right. There are so many women in the world. It's unwise to offend Beiming Ce for a woman. The Beiming Family is the number one family in the Merchant Union, and they are too influential. Beiming Ce is Beiming Shang's beloved son. It's unwise

to offend him.” Karl reminded Shi Yan earnestly.

Karl, who was at the Second Sky of Nascent Level, was the leader of the warriors. He tried to comfort Shi Yan as the latter had left a very good impression.

“Old Han, who were those two old men?” Shi Yan didn’t reply to Karl’s statement, but looked to Han Zhong.

“Yin Kui and Jiu Shan have the same teacher, and they are at the First Sky of Nirvana Level now, but no one knows where they came from. They used to serve the family head of Beiming Family, Beiming Shang. After Beiming Ce was born, and considering how he possesses twin Martial Spirits and agile movements, Beiming Shang assigned them to protect Beiming Ce.”

The First Sky of Nirvana Level! Shi Yan was astounded.

Shi Jian, the family head of the Shi Family, was only at the Third Sky of Nirvana Level.

There were millions of residents in the Merchant Union, among which were numerous warriors who trained Martial Arts. But only a small part of them, barely more than ten people, could step into the Nirvana Level.

The two Nirvana-Level warriors stayed by Beiming Ce’s side without doing anything else. The world was his oyster.

“In the Merchant Union, the Beiming Family is much more powerful than the other two biggest families combined. There are many skillful warriors among the Ministers, and talented descents pop up now and then. Plus, Beiming Shang himself is at the Sky Level. It is really unwise to offend the Beiming Family.”

Seeing that Shi Yan wasn’t responding, Han Zhong hastily explained in case Shi Yan acted abruptly.

“Ok, got it.” After being silent for a while, Shi Yan nodded. His expression turned back to normal as he smiled to Han Zhong, “Don’t worry about me, Old Han. I know what to do and when to

endure.”

“That’s good for you.” Han Zhong said feeling relieved, “Let the girls in again?”

“No. Not interested. Let’s drink.”

“Great! Let’s drink! Come on!”

...

The Merchant Union was a very special country which was co-governed by the big families, warriors, mercenaries, merchants and all sorts of NGOs.

There were no formal army, no officers, and no governmental structure.

Instead, there were many big families, hundreds of mercenary unions, tens of thousands of merchants, vagrants and civilians who hated wars...

The Merchant Union never got involved in the wars between the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire, therefore it was a peaceful country.

However, once it was invaded, all the forces in the Merchant Union would unite to fight against the enemy.

Over the history of the Merchant Union, the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire had both attempted to invade it for its wealth, but they were smashed every time by the united army of the big families and mercenary unions in the Merchant Union.

On average days, there were no governors in the Merchant Union, but once it was in danger, its people would fight together to drive back their mutual enemy.

Those big families, hundreds of mercenary unions and wealthy merchants could form an extremely powerful force which could defeat the God-blessed Empire and the Fire Empire easily.

It’s lucky that the forces in the Merchant Union only came

together when the country was in danger, or it could swallow any other country at any time!

The Merchant Union was in a crucial position. The Dark Forest was to its south, the Dead Swamp to its north, continuous Cloud Mountain to its west and the enormous Endless Sea to its east.

No matter if it was the Dead Swamp, the Cloud Mountain, or the islands in the Endless Sea, there hid all kinds of abundant resources, such as minerals and magical medicines. As a big trading nation, the Merchant Union took advantage of its geographical location.

However, despite the exuberant resources in the Dead Swamp, the Cloud Mountain and the Endless Sea, there was also incredible danger.

Demon beasts, poisonous fog, miasma, hideous tribes, and disasters...

That's why one needed to be very capable to travel in these areas. Luckily, the Merchant Union never lacked skillful mercenary unions and warriors.

There were seventeen cities in the Merchant Union, and the Tianyun City was the biggest among them.

Tianyun City was located in the center of the Merchant Union, with eight small cities around it. It covered a large area which almost equaled the eight small cities combined, as did its population.

Therefore, Tianyun City was like the capital city of the Merchant Union, which was the main territory of those biggest families.

The Shi Family was amongst them. Though they had properties and gardens in every main city, the Shi Family was rooted in Tianyun City.

The Shi Family was located in the northern part of Tianyun City. It covered one hundred miles and had thousands of buildings in it.

Artificial lakes, rockeries, gardens and brooks were everywhere. The Shi Family descendants lived in the serene back garden, where there was an artificial lake in the middle, with beautiful pavilions surrounding it. Behind the pavilions were the training fields, gravitational rooms, and suffering palaces...

There were not many direct Shi descendants, but its branches and ministers could easily reach one hundred. Considering those servants and escorts, there were almost one thousand people in Shi Family.

Early every morning, the Shi Family members, ministers and warriors would train hard in within the training grounds.

On that day, just as the rooster crowed and the sky began to turn bright, many warriors had already gotten up and started to train.

Shi Jian walked out of the Rock Room and shouted below into Yang Hai's pavilion. Then they walked toward the gate together.

During their walk to the gate, the warriors bowed to them. Shi Jian nodded indifferently without slowing his steps.

A short time after they reached the gate, Han Feng appeared behind them. He began to observe the corridor out the gate as he stood next to Shi Jian silently.

"According to Han Zhong's message, they should have arrived home last night. Since they didn't, they must arrive today." Shi Jian frowned and mumbled, "I waited till dawn to see if that boy has really reached the Third Sky of Nascent Level. But that bastard didn't come home..."

"Maybe they were held up by something on the road." Though Yang Hai was cursing in his mind that Shi Yan was too impolite, he still explained for him.

"Dammit. Is it possible that Han Zhong sent the wrong message?"

Shi Jian looked back to Han Feng in confusion, "I have met

someone whose Martial Spirit awoke as a teenager, so I'm not skeptical about that. However, that kid has never trained in martial arts before turning seventeen, but now he is suddenly at the Third Sky of Nascent level, that is just unbelievable! I have been pondering upon it for several nights but I still can't figure it out. What do you think?"

Han Feng pouted, narrowed his eyes and said, "Though Han Zhong is not a serious man most of the time, he is quite cautious on major things, so I don't think he would dare to lie about this. I can't explain it either, but I think it might be true."

"Well, I can only hope so. That bastard has let me down these past seventeen years, I hope this time he will be different."

Many warriors came out after them in curiosity after they had breakfast, as they heard that the family head was waiting at the gate. They gathered together and were discussing boisterously.

No one knew who was coming. The most likely people were those of the Beiming Family or Zuo Family, or Shi Jian wouldn't be there.

Yet, after a long long time, no one showed up. The warriors turned impatient and began to curse amongst themselves at the arrogant person who had made Shi Jian wait for so long.

As the sun rose higher and higher, they still saw nothing. Shi Jian was becoming worried as well, as he said to Yang Hai next to him, "It's been so long. What happened?"

Yang Hai shook his head with a bitter smile implying he didn't know either, while he sighed secretly to himself.

Though Shi Jian mentioned Shi Yan now and then, he never really cared for him.

He remembered Shi Yan only after Yang Hai's reminder that Shi Yan had disappeared in the Dark Forest.

Upon hearing Shi Yan had reached the Third Sky of Nascent

Level, Shi Jian asked about him every day, and even came out early and waited for him...

Shi Jian's attitude switched too much, which made Yang Hai a little uncomfortable.

Hours later, it was approaching noon as the sun was directly above them in the sky., a fat ground dragon slowly appeared from the corridor.

Two persons were leisurely leading while chatting happily. They were Shi Yan and Han Zhong.

Chapter 48 - The Test

At the gate of Shi Family.

Shi Jian, Han Feng and Yang Hai all saw Shi Yan in front of the ground dragon at the same time.

Yang Hai took a quick glance at Shi Yan and frowned, thinking to himself that the boy must have suffered a lot, as he had become much skinnier.

However, Shi Jian and Han Feng's eyes brightened soon after they saw Shi Yan. They were totally surprised.

Yang Hai didn't train martial arts, so he didn't know that one getting skinnier didn't necessarily imply weakness.

Sometimes there was much more explosiveness hidden in a skinny body, than in a robust one.

However, Shi Jian and Han Feng were both experts, therefore they realized just from a glance that Shi Yan had become much stronger, and was even stronger than those third generation descents who had trained hard for more than ten years.

They looked at each other and were amazed.

They couldn't understand what had happened to Shi Yan in the past half a year that could have changed his bone structure.

A few minutes later, the troop, including Shi Yan and Han Zhong, arrived at the gate.

"Hi Big Grandpa, Uncle Han, Father." Shi Yan walked up to the gate with steady steps and greeted them.

Han Zhong came over as well, greeting Shi Jian and Han Feng, and nodded at Yang Hai, then he stood silently beside Shi Yan.

Shi Jian and Han Feng's bright eyes moved over Shi Yan's body.

After a long time, Shi Jian's eyes trembled. He took a deep

breath, and said to Shi Yan, "Follow me." Then Shi Jian turned and headed to the back yard light-footedly.

Everyone who knew Shi Jian understood that he was in high spirits.

"Kid, put on a good show!" Han Zhong made a face at Shi Yan, implying that he was going to see better days.

Shi Yan gracefully acknowledged him and nodded softly. He turned to Yan Hai, "Father, are you especially waiting for me?"

Though Yang Hai had a rigid face, a light smile appeared around the corners of his mouth, "No one is waiting for you specifically. I just wanted to see what happened to your body and whether you really reached the Nascent Level or not."

"Han Zhong, come over here. I have a question for you." Han Feng threw a look at Han Zhong and left in the opposite direction to Shi Yan.

Han Zhong hung his head, with a worried look on his face, and followed after his brother reluctantly.

"Well, go. Don't keep your Big Grandpa waiting for too long." Yang Hai mumbled as he pulled Shi Yan's jacket and asked in a low voice, "What the hell happened to you?"

"Big Grandpa will also ask about it later. So, I guess I will explain then." Shi Yan smiled, not showing much respect for his father.

Yang Hai was a little surprised. He gazed at Shi Yan and asked in confusion, "Kid you are different now. You never beat around the bush, and always answered my questions straightforwardly. But now... you do not seem to be afraid of me. Kid, seems like you've grown up and don't take my concerns into account anymore."

"You are my father, why would I be afraid of you?" Shi Yan was astounded as he asked, "What is there to be afraid of?"

"This isn't like you. You never talked to me like this." Yang Hai

frowned. After a careful examination, he shook his head and said to himself, “Little bastard! You became really audacious after becoming a warrior!”

“I’m gonna go. I can’t keep Big Grandpa waiting for too long.” Shi Yan smiled.

Those Shi Family warriors who had crowded the gate all got confused and started another boisterous discussion.

“Was the family head waiting for Young Master Yan? Is it true?”

“I don’t know. I’m confused too. The family head has never appeared with Young Master Yan before, nor was he interested in his matters. What happened now?”

“Who knows? Has Young Master Yan created trouble again? Not likely, because master Yang Hai was the one who always cleaned up his mess. Although Young Master Yan makes trouble in the Merchant Union now and then, it was not to the extent that the family head had to solve it.”

“Maybe Young Master Yan got into huge trouble this time. Who knows.”

“Stop your idle talk. You’d better be respectful to Young Master Yan from now on. He is not the book nerd you knew any more. Don’t blame me once you offend him and kick up a breeze.” Karl was making arrangements for the ground dragon and couldn’t help but yell when he saw that people were still gossiping.

“Karl, what’s up? You came back with Young Master Yan, do you know the details?” asked a warrior who was familiar with Karl.

“You will know it in no time.” Karl smiled proudly, “Young Master Yan will definitely surprise you guys!”

“What is it?”

“What on earth happened?”

Their curiosity was even stronger as they circled Karl and

couldn't stop asking.

“Not now. But I guess that you will know soon enough.” Without giving them an exact answer, Karl squeezed his way out of the crowd and left with the troop of warriors.

...

In the backyard of Shi Family.

At the center of the huge training field, the diamond-shaped test jade was glinting in the sunshine as if it was a small sun.

Shi Jian was standing beside the testing jade. As Shi Yan and Yang Hai came over, he patted the jade and suddenly, a ball of light flew into the jade from his hand.

The dazzling testing jade dimmed at once and returned to its original color.

“Inject your Profound Qi into the testing jade.” Shi Jian announced with firm eyes.

Shi Yan confidently walked up to the testing jade, stretched out his hand, and pressed on the jade. He operated his Profound Qi and injected it into the testing jade.

Complex patterns showed up on the silver testing jade and a vague orange light shone from it. Gradually the light got brighter and the color deeper.

“Ok now.” Shi Jian’s mouth trembled as he focused his eyes on Shi Yan, “I heard that the Martial Spirit of Shi Family also awakened in your body, did it?”

“Yes.”

“Show me.”

“OK.”

Shi Yan stretched out the other hand and rolled up his sleeve.

As he operated the Martial Spirit according to his will, his arm

gradually petrified and became dark brown.

“Dark brown!”

Shi Jian and Yang Hai cried out at the same time with great amazement on their faces, while gazing at Shi Yan’s brown arm in astonishment.

“Is it because of the light?” Yang Hai blinked his eyes and rubbed them, then looked directly into the sun, and mumbled, “Am I dazzled?”

Upon hearing that, Shi Jian also got confused . He grabbed Shi Yan’s arm and demanded, “Come up here! Go into the shadow of that rock so the color can be seen clearly .”

Shi Yan didn’t attempt to refuse and peacefully walked after him to the back side of the rock.

“It is dark brown!”

Shi Jian shouted loudly and his breathing got heavier. His bright eyes stared at Shi Yan as he asked in a dignified tone, “Little bastard, what the hell has happened to you? Why? Why is your Martial Spirit dark brown? Is it at the second stage of Petrification?”

“Absolutely. It is at the second stage. Though I’m a mere Nascent Level warrior, my Martial Spirit reached the second stage!”

“Give us a reasonable explanation! We Shi Family, from the far ancestors to my generation, had never come across this situation! Our Martial Spirit never reaches the second stage before we reach Human Level. You are the first one! What happened? What on earth happened to you?!” Shi Jian was almost mad.

“Well, the thing is...” Shi Yan repeated what he had told Han Zhong for a second time.

After he finished his story, Shi Jian kept his position and stared at him with a weird expression.

"Big Grandpa, what do you mean by that look? I explained it."

"You mean three magical red fruits awoke your Martial Spirit? And made your Martial Spirit so odd? And gave you Profound Qi and helped to advance to the Third Sky of Nascent Level?" Shi Jian's face got more and more twisted as he yelled, "Just because of three fruits?"

"Yes, that's it."

"Where is this fruit? I will send people to see if we can plant more of it."

"Don't bother, there were only three. I searched for a very long time but never saw it again."

"Little bastard! You are not fooling me, are you?" Shi Jian showed obvious suspicion.

"Of course I'm fooling you."

Shi Yan thought to himself but looked serious as he reassured, "I really have no idea. Anyway, I ate the fruits, and that's it. Nothing else. Even I don't know the reason why my Martial Spirit is different from others'."

He insisted without any reluctance.

Shi Jian kept asking a few more times and tried to test him, but the only response he got was "I don't know either."

Finally Shi Jian gave up. After another thought, he said, "Since your Martial Spirit turned dark brown, hmm, well, has the feature of the Martial Spirit changed? I mean, Did it merely change its color but still kept the intensity of the first stage?"

"If my sense is accurate, it is the second stage."

"I will try." Shi Jian hurried to press his hand on Shi Yan's chest, "Kid, cover your body with petrification! Don't worry, I will increase my power little by little so it won't hurt you."

"Ok."

Gradually, a ball of dark light appeared in Shi Jian's palm and the energy in it grew stronger and stronger, striking on his chest.

Suddenly, Shi Jian withdrew all the dark light like a sponge by the other hand.

Shi Jian was so excited that he couldn't help but nod and say joyfully, "Amazing! It really is the second stage! Bastard, I don't know how you managed this, but from this day on, you can't be lazy! Whether you like it or not, I will push you to be a warrior!"

Chapter 49 - The Sky Gate and the God Area

In the Gravity Room.

Beside a huge mace at the center of the room, Shi Yan was striking it heavily as his body operated Petrification and sweated all over.

That mace was seven meters tall and three meters wide, which was deep rooted at the center of the stone ground in the Gravity Room. The sharp tips on it were like short rods shining with a dark light.

Shi Yan's body had already turned dark brown and he was breathing heavily. Moving around the mace, he kept slamming into it with his shoulders, arms, waist and thighs in turns.

Endless blunt thunderous sounds came out from the Gravity Room.

To trigger the potential of the Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi Family, one must train themselves in a ruthless way. Only by slamming against hard objects, could the power of Petrification be used to the fullest.

And only by ruthlessly tormenting one's body, could his Petrification Martial Spirit adapt to any kind of attacks from his opponents.

There were seven dark Gravity pillars erected in the Gravity Room, which increased the gravity in the room to seven times normal gravity.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

With his upper body naked, Shi Yan wore a serious face, while he was training his body to the limit in order to activate the potential of his Petrification Martial Spirit.

Everytime he slammed into the mace with his body, it would

send out a thin layer of brown light.

The light flashed for a short moment. It would explode the moment Shi Yan's body touched the mace, and would disappear soon after the touch.

After about five thousand repetitions with different parts of his body, Shi Yan collapsed, unable to use his energy anymore. With his limbs spread out, he laid down in the center of the room letting his sweat flow like a stream over his skin which wet the green stone ground.

It had been half a month.

In the past half a month, Shi Yan ate and slept in the Gravity Room. He never left the room even to go to the restroom.

That was Shi Jian's plan.

As soon as Shi Jian found out that Shi Yan's Martial Spirit had reached the second stage, he made Shi Yan stop his other training and focus on refining his body.

Shi Jian meant to trigger the entire potential of Shi Yan's second stage Petrification Martial Spirit at the fastest speed, and to strengthen his body structure to the extent that it could bear the attacks from a Human Level warrior.

During the past half month, Shi Jian, Han Feng, Yang Hai, and other elders came to watch him now and then.

Shi Jian, for example, would come to see him every three days. He would examine the changes on Shi Yan's body carefully and give him some advice on the training intensity for the next stage.

Lying on the ground with fatigue, Shi Yan began to adjust his breathing slowly. After feeling more strength in his arms and legs, he managed to sit up and began to operate his Profound Qi.

Though he was exhausted, his Profound Qi circulated even faster than before. During this process Shi Yan closed his eyes, and tried

to calm his heart clear his mind.

Everytime he went to this state, he found that his blood, flesh, cells and bones were all nourishing his body in a way he couldn't understand.

His broken body would soon recover from his extreme fatigue and gain strength.

This was the self-recovery of the Immortal Martial Spirit!

Shi Yan knew it well.

Not knowing how much time had passed, he woke up gradually with his eyes as bright as the stars. After meditating, the fatigue in his body disappeared and his Profound Qi became active. There seemed to be a strong explosiveness in it which was about to break out.

At this moment, the stone door of the Gravity Room opened a little.

Han Zhong walked in with a big smile and seven bamboo baskets in his hands.

He put down the bamboo baskets and took out the delicate dishes one by one, "Today's dishes: bird's nest, sea cucumber, turtle, bear's palm, glossy ganoderma. Brother Yan, you are too gluttonous! One meal for you is even more than five meals of what the other young masters of Shi Family eat. If you were in a small family, everything would be eaten by you."

Han Zhong laughed as he put down the plates and secretly took out a jar of wine, "This jar of wine called 'Flame' is part of my collection. Drink it up quickly and I will dispose of it."

Shi Yan didn't try to refuse as he walked over to Han Zhong quickly and began to swallow the food. After wolfing down the rich dishes which only wealthy families could afford, he took up the jar of 'Flame', raised his head, and drank.

Wiping his mouth and putting the empty jar down, he chuckled, “Old Han, you should bring me two jars of it next time. One jar is not enough!”

“Brother Yan, the wine ‘Flame’ is from the Spring Pavilion, costing five hundred purple crystal coins!” Han Zhong squeezed out a bitter smile, “I saved this one last time I went there. I will bring you ‘Knife’ tomorrow, which only costs one hundred blue crystal coins. I can even bring you four jars of it!”

“They are only crystal coins!” Shi Yan didn’t care at all, “Bring me ‘Flame’, I will give you the crystal coins next time!”

“Then it’s ok with me.” Han Zhong smirked, “Brother Yan, the family head kept it confidential about you being a warrior. Most warriors and escorts in the family don’t know about it. Do you know why?”

“Why?” Shi Yan asked lazily.

“The Martial Competition that occurs every five years is going to happen in three months. You know, in the last competition, we were surpassed by the Mo and Ling Families, so the family head roared for days after that. This time...”

“He wants me to attend the Martial Competition?” Shi Yan responded in surprise before Han Zhong finished his speech.

The Martial Competition was a big event co-held by the five biggest families in the Merchant Union which every warrior could attend.

The competitions happened according to five levels: Elementary Level, Nascent Level, Human Level, Disaster Level and Earth Level. Warriors of every level could compete for the first three places of their respective levels.

The five big families would offer a lot of training materials as rewards; such as medicine pills, treasures, Martial skills and so forth for the winners.

The five big families co-held the Martial Competition for two reasons. On one hand, they needed to pick expert warriors to strengthen their power. On the other hand, the competition would be motivation for warriors in this country to train hard to enhance the power of the country.

Those individual warriors who weren't attached to any big family longed for the medicine pills, treasures and Martial Skills. Some of them were also looking for an opportunity to attach themselves to a big family.

Therefore, every Martial Competition would attract thousands of warriors and would be very energetic.

Apart from those individual warriors, the five big families would send out their descendants to compete in the competition.

That way, they were able to show their strength and attract outstanding warriors to choose them.

Therefore, the Martial Competition was not only an opportunity for the big families to attract warriors, but also a stage for them to secretly fight.

Thus, both the warriors and mercenaries in this country and the five big families attached great importance to the Martial Competition.

Sometimes, the ownership of controversial properties among the five families will be decided through the competition.

For example, in the last competition, the Shi Family and the Mo Family staked the ownership of three mines.

Unfortunately, in the battles among the third descendants, except Shi Tianyun, the other Shi Family descendants, Shi Tianluo and Shi Tianke, were beaten by the Mo Family descendants. So in the end, the Mo Family won two mines and the Shi Family only won one.

“You may not know, but we fought a lot with the Mo Family over

disputes on some properties recently. So the same thing may happen again in the Martial Competition this year. They may stake the ownership of some properties.”

“Which means, I’m going to have a chance to perform?”

“Sure! The family head must be hopeful that you will win for our family. That’s why he is so strict with you and comes to watch you every three days. You don’t know how busy he is recently, but he still makes time to check on you, which shows how much he cares about you.”

“Ok, I got it.”

...

In the Rock Room.

Sitting upright on a huge rock, Shi Yan’s bright eyes had a serious look in them, seeming to be in deep thought.

“On the auction in the Misty Pavilion, there was a fragment picture of The Sky Gate...” Han Feng was reporting the latest news to Shi Jian who was standing next to him.

The Sky Gate was a magical portal leading to the God Area, a mysterious space. The God Area may exist in the Grace Mailand, or may not. It was an independent space.

No one knew how the God Area was formed, or its structure, or where would it appear.

Only through the Sky Gate, could one enter the God Area.

There were various versions of the legends about the God Area.

It was said that there were all sorts of mysterious things in different God Areas. Martial Skills of Spirit Level and even God Level, bizarre drugs, rare treasures...

“Four months ago, the Medicine King Mu Xun’s disciple Karu stole a fragment picture from his teacher. Maybe the two fragments come from the same picture. And are they two separate

fragments or just the same one? Maybe the one in the Misty Pavilion is the one Karu had stolen.” Shi Jian had a quick thought when he recalled the news from four months ago.

Han Feng shook his head, “That Karu had disappeared a long time ago. But the fragment in the Misty Pavilion was provided by a woman. Seeing it is a serious matter, the Misty Pavilion didn’t sell it directly but kept it in the name of ‘authenticating’.”

“That broken picture is still at the Misty Pavilion?” Shi Jian asked firmly.

“Yep.” Han Feng nodded, “The Beiming Family, the Mo Family, the Ling Family and the Zuo Family had all contacted the Misty Pavilion to purchase that fragment after they got the news. But the Misty Pavilion won’t put it up for auction before they authenticate it, so the four families merely showed their strong interest without taking any secret actions.”

“It is only a mere fragment. If it was a complete picture, the Beiming Family would have stolen it.” Shi Jian sneered.

“Do we need to take action?”

“Keep an eye on it but don’t get involved for the time being. Remember to exchange information with the Zuo Family. We can’t act bluntly before the second fragment appears.”

“Ok.”

Chapter 50 - A Cut

In the Gravity Room.

Shi Yan was leaning against a gravity pillar while feeling pain all over his body.

His naked body was so strong that the lines of his muscles could be clearly seen. They looked like they were moulded from metal and looked full of explosiveness.

While being provided with abundant food, Shi Yan spent another month intensely training his body. During this time he had not only gotten stronger, but he had also become taller.

Abruptly, the door was pushed open.

Shi Jian, Han Feng and Yang Hai showed up at the door.

Shi Jian's torch-like eyes glanced at Shi Yan from afar before nodding, "It seems you haven't been idle."

"Of course." Shi Yan answered whilst exhausted, and didn't change his position, "I guess I have refined my body enough. I need to choose a Martial Skill to train with."

"Well, you are not the one to decide that." Shi Jian swaggered up to him and said with a rigid face, "Give me one of your hands."

Shi Yan stretched out his left hand in response and focused. Immediately, his left arm petrified into a dark brown colour.

Under scrutiny, wisps of shining dark light could be seen on the surface of his arm, forming what looked like a thin transparent layer covering his arms.

"Wow!"

Shi Jian exclaimed with excitement and observed happily, "Ha! You really are something! There turns out to be dark light! You trained really hard! So great! Great!"

Yang Hai was delighted as he walked up as well, “Step-father, is this state equivalent to the Human Level? Years ago when Qing reached the Third Sky of Human Level, her skin also sent out dark light after Petrification. Is this the same thing?”

“Yes.” Shi Jian nodded calmly with a little muscular spasm in the corner of his mouth, “The kid is really promising! He improved so much in a mere half a month. This is amazing!”

Although Shi Jian didn’t want to make Shi Yan overly prideful, he couldn’t help but praise him with a surprised face, “Kid, how on earth did you manage that?”

“I trained how you told me to. I kept at it, and this is the result.” Shi Yan shrugged indifferently.

“How long do you train for each day?” Even Han Feng, who was rarely talkative, couldn’t help but ask.

“About fifteen hours.”

“Fifteen hours?!”

Han Feng and Shi Jian cried out at the same time. They looked at each other and found astonishment in each other’s eyes.

“It’s impossible! You bastard! You must be fooling us!” Shi Jian yelled and said firmly, “Your body needs at least eighteen hours to be fully recovered before the next intensive slam training. And you need time for meals. It’s more than enough for you to train for five hours a day! Where did fifteen hours come from?”

Han Feng was skeptical as well, as he shook his head softly.

“Little bastard, tell us the truth. Don’t be naughty in front of your big grandpa.” Yang Hai grunted and reproached.

“Who says I need eighteen hours to recover?” Shi Yan said light-heartedly, “I just need four hours.”

“That’s impossible!”

Shi Jian and Han Feng yelled in surprise at the same time.

“Your body won’t recover so soon after such intensive training! I have managed the Shi Family for so many years and have never seen anyone who could recover in such short time! Shi Yang was the most talented kid I’ve seen and even he needed about fifteen hours to recover when he did slam training at the Human Level!” Shi Jian shook his head and grunted, “You mean to say that you recover four times faster than him? Do you even think that is possible?”

“Nothing is impossible.” Shi Yan smiled and stood up immediately. He walked to the corner of the room and took out a dagger from the bag on the ground. “Big Grandpa, something has confused me for a long time. Now that my father is here, I want to ask for your permission to do a test.”

“What test?” Shi Jian frowned.

“Uncle Han, I want to cut your arm.”

“Bastard!” Shi Jian shouted, “Kid, what are you talking about!”

“Just a slight cut.” Shi Yan kept calm, “And for an accurate comparison, I will also cut my father’s and my own arms as well.”

“Family head, Maybe Young Master Yan had some plan. Why not have a try.”

“What the hell do you want to do?” Shi Jian was confused.

“You will know.” Shi Yan walked to Han Feng in an easy manner, “Uncle Han, please don’t operate your Profound Qi, even if it bleeds, ok?”

“Got it.”

“So I will do it now?”

“Ok.”

Shi Yan walked up and made a cut on Han Feng’s left arm. Crimson blood gushed out at once.

“Father, it’s your turn.” Shi Yan walked toward Yang Hai.

“Little bastard! What are you going to do? Your father is not a warrior! Be gentle!”

“Ok. I know it.” Shi Yan stepped up and made a cut as fast as lightning on Yang Hai’s arm.

Seeing his bleeding arm, Yan Hai screamed and yelled, “Little bastard! You are so cruel! I wasn’t ready!”

Under Han Feng and Shi Jian’s gaze, Shi Yan then casually cut on his own arm and watched as it started to bleed.

“Bastard, what do you want to show us? What do you mean by this? I can’t see anything!” Yang Hai clamored.

“Wait, wait for a moment.” Shi Yan was quite serious now and his expression became more rigid.

Han Feng and Shi Jian were full of suspicion as they couldn’t figure out what was going on and moved their eyes over to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan smiled but didn’t give them an explanation. He covered his bleeding arm with his jacket, not letting them see it.

Ten minutes later.

“What?”

Han Feng noticed something strange first as he gazed at Yang Hai’s arm in astonishment, “Family head, look!”

Shi Jian was focusing on Shi Yan, and upon hearing Han Feng, turned to Yang Hai.

He also noticed the strange thing, “Hai, why did the blood on your arm freeze and turn into a blood cocoon?”

“Ahh!” Yang Hai cried out as soon as he noticed the cocoon, “I don’t know!”

“But my arm is still bleeding...” Han Feng stretched out his arm and showed it to Yang Hai.

“What’s up?” Yang Hai asked in surprise, “You trained with Martial Skills for so many years and your body quality is higher than mine. You should have stopped bleeding earlier than me! What happened!”

“Look at my arm.”

Shi Yan smiled and unbuttoned his jacket to show them his arm, and wiped the frozen blood away.

The cut on his arm turned to be as thin as a needle and the flesh on the both sides seemed to be moving toward each other and recovering quickly.

Shi Jian and Han Feng were aghast and quivered.

“Bastard, wha..what on earth is going on?” Shi Jian asked after a long astonishment.

“This is a type of Martial Spirit! My father possesses it as well. But he doesn’t train in Martial Arts and hasn’t been severely hurt before, so he never noticed it.” Shi Yan spilled out this secret calmly.

Shi Jian kept silent with his eyes shining brightly and hands clenching. After a long while he burst into wild laughter, “Haha! Martial Spirit! Self-recovery Martial Spirit!”

“I call it the Immortal Martial Spirit.” Shi Yan explained, “I assume that this Martial Spirit could recover lost limbs and heal internal organs at its highest stage. Which means, one would be immortal.”

Han Feng and Shi Jian were stunned, but after some careful thought, they both realized the power of this Martial Spirit. They couldn’t suppress their excitement anymore as their breathing became faster.

“Bastard, so you possess twin Martial Spirits now?” Yang Hai wasn’t able to contain his joy either as he realized this and couldn’t help but cry out.

“Of course it’s twin Martial Spirits! Absolutely!” Shi Jian laughed wildly. He patted Yang Hai’s back so hard that the latter fell to the ground. “Hai, I can’t believe you possess a Martial Spirit as well! Haha! I’ve never thought of that! I should have cut your body when you were still a kid! Haha!”

“Now do all of you believe I can recover in four hours?” Shi Yan smiled.

“Definitely! Completely! Haha!” Shi Jian couldn’t be happier. Ignoring Yang Hai who was still sitting on the ground, he declared, “Kid, come with me! Let’s go to the Martial Spirit Palace! All the secret Martial Skills are kept there. You can choose any you want!”

“Great.”

Chapter 51 - The Martial Spirit Palace

There were five floors in the Martial Spirit Palace of the Shi Family.

Every floor was named after the cultivation levels and each floor held the Martial Skill books corresponding to that cultivation level.

On the first and the second floor were Martial Skills of the Mortal Level. Generally, Elementary Level warriors would choose from the Martial Skills on the first floor, while Nascent Level warriors would choose the books on the second floor.

On the third and fourth floor were the Martial Skills of the Profound Level. Human Level warriors would go to the third floor and Disaster Level warriors to the fourth floor.

The fifth floor of the Martial Spirit Palace held the sole Spirit Level Martial Skill of the Shi Family.

But this floor was exclusively for the family head, Shi Jian, who occasionally went up there.

The Spirit Level Martial Skill was so special that even the Ministers of the Shi Family didn't have a chance to look at it. Only the Shi descendants who reached the Earth Level would have the chance to train with it.

However, among the Shi descendants, Shi Yang had reached the highest level, but was only at the Third Sky of the Disaster Level. He was still one step away from the Earth Level.

...

Shi Jian led Shi Yan directly to the Martial Spirit Palace.

In front of the Martial Spirit Palace, an old woman with wrinkles all over her face bowed as she saw Shi Jian, "Family head."

This old woman was named Yun Luo, an old Minister of the Shi

Family. Like Han Feng, she was also a Nirvana Level warrior of the First Sky. It was said that she was even older than Shi Jian. She was already a Minister when Shi Jian was a little boy.

She had stayed in the Shi Family for decades and was trusted by Shi Jian, so she was assigned to guard the Martial Spirit Palace.

“I will help Shi Yan choose his Martial skills.” Shi Jian strode to the door, turned and ordered Han Feng and Yang Hai, “You two wait here for a moment.”

Han Feng and Yang Hai nodded together.

Yun Luo stepped away for Shi Jian and Shi Yan to enter the palace. And as soon as they entered it, she stood at the door and nodded at Han Feng with a weird expression.

During the past few days, Shi Yan was closely protected by Shi Jian and stayed in the Gravity Room day and night.

Not to mention Yun Luo, even the relatives of Shi Family didn't know much about Shi Yan's latest achievements.

And now Shi Jian had taken him to the Martial Spirit Palace to choose Martial skills in person, which means Shi Yan was officially a warrior!

Yun Luo knew about Shi Yan. She knew that this young master didn't possess a Martial Spirit and was not into Martial Arts as a kid. Now he was seventeen and turned out to be a warrior. This was too abnormal!

Thus, Yun Luo was confused.

As she couldn't figure it out, Yun Luo looked to Han Feng in suspicion, but Han Feng shook his head, implying that he couldn't explain.

Yun Luo was even more confused, but didn't ask anymore. She stood at the door and began to think.

If it was a normal day, she would have closed the iron door and

followed the visitor into the Martial Spirit Palace, in case they went into an unsuitable floor.

But this time Shi Jian took Shi Yan there in person, so she didn't need to be too cautious.

...

"There are eighteen Mortal Level Martial Skills on the first and the second floor, eight Profound Level Martial Skills on the third floor, and four Profound Level Martial Skills on the fourth floor. Now that you are at the Third Sky of Nascent Level, you can go up to the second floor directly."

Shi Jian briefly explained to Shi Yan and took him directly to the second floor.

On the walls of every floor of the Martial Spirit Palace, there were several stone grooves. In each of these grooves, there was a book on Martial Skills.

The grooves were covered with green crystals, at the center of which was a small key hole. A piece of paper beside the keyhole briefly introduced the Martial Skill located in each groove.

After walking around the second floor, Shi Yan found that at least ten Martial Skills of the eighteen Martial Skills were ordinary and were trained by many Mercenaries and warriors, such as Kinmo's 'Star Fist'.

The other eight Martial Skills were rarely seen outside, but their power and training process seemed quite simple to Shi Yan.

Deep down, Shi Yan was someone who loved a challenge, who loved the process in solving a problem.

Therefore, after walking around on the second floor, Shi Yan shook his head, "Big Grandpa, the Martial Skills on this floor are too boring. Let's go upstairs."

If it was one year ago, Shi Yan couldn't have talked to Shi Jian

like this.

But Shi Yan had demonstrated his Immortal Martial Spirit, which gave him the right to do what he wanted.

To him, only the mysterious Martial Spirit was important to him, so he wouldn't say a word about it to anyone.

But the Immortal Martial Spirit was far from a secret, and only by showing it to others could he gain more privileges in Shi Family and receive more training from Shi Jian.

As he possessed twin Martial Spirits, Shi Jian would tolerate anything.

As expected, Shi Jian didn't show any disagreement. He was a little hesitant as he grunted, "You are a mere Nascent Level warrior. It's not a good thing to train in Profound Level Martial Skills."

"Am I an average person? You see, though I've just reached Nascent Level, my Petrification has already reached the Second Stage. Beside, I possess the ability to quickly recover which others don't have. The average person may be not suitable to train in Profound Level Martial Skills as my level, but maybe I am."

Hearing upon this, Shi Jian was surprised and he nodded, "Well, you have a point. Let's go upstairs."

One after another, mysterious Martial Skill were laid in the grooves. If Shi Yan showed any interest in a Martial Skill, Shi Jian would patiently explain its features and training process to him.

"Great, the Martial Skills on the third floor are much more interesting!" Shi Jian kept nodding his head, and he quickly noted all the Profound Level Martial Skills on the third floor in his heart. After a while, he said, "Let's go to the fourth floor now."

"Ok, I will give you a detailed explanation of the four Martial Skills on the fourth floor. You are different from those common people, so I can explain them in advance."

Shi Jian then took Shi Yan to the fourth floor.

As they got to the fourth floor, Shi Jian walked to a groove directly. “This is ‘Star Net’, which can turn one’s Profound Qi into light and weave it into a star net. This star net can directly restrain the enemy’s Profound Qi so he can’t use it at all.”

“That’s amazing!”

“Well. It’s currently beyond your ability. This Martial Skill requires very dense Profound Qi and complete control of your Profound Qi. You are too far away from it!”

Shi Jian was very strict. He sneered and walked to another groove, “This is ‘Desert Prints’, which can produce thousands of hand prints from all directions and block the enemy’s movement, pushing them to fight you directly. We of the Shi Family have a special Martial Spirit, and used in conjunction with ‘Desert Prints’, we can release our ability to the fullest. This ‘Desert Prints’ is the perfect match for our Petrification Martial Spirit!”

“This is great too.”

“Well, it’s also beyond your ability. You can’t train with it before you reach Disaster Level, for the same reasons as before. How can you block people from all directions if you can’t even release a hand print?”

“What’s the next one?”

“It’s ‘Dark Moon Shadow’. When trained to the highest state, your body would turn into an untouchable shadow. It’s not easy either. It requires a high level and the help of the energy of Disaster Level. So just forget about it.”

“This is the last groove.”

Shi Jian exclaimed as he seemed to find something. His eyes brightened and then he paused, “This Martial Skill trains one’s fingers. Once you complete it, your fingers will be as sharp as knives and can pierce the enemy’s body easily. It’s very easy to

defeat an enemy and completely shatter him after training in this Martial Skill. Combined with our Petrification Martial Spirit, it has an extremely strong power.”

“I’m intrigued about this one!” Shi Yan was surprised, “Any special requirements?”

“There are. But it seems you are very suitable for it.” Shi Jian said after hesitation, “To train with the Finger Gun, one needs to reach the second stage of Petrification and have the dark light first. Thus he won’t break his fingers while training. Hmm, you can train with it.”

“Then I choose this one.” Shi Yan said decisively.

Shi Jian gazed at Shi Yan with a weird look and sank in deep thought.

“What’s wrong? Anything else?” Shi Yan felt a little anxious.

“Kid, you really want to train with this Finger Gun?” Shi Jian took a deep breath and looked abnormal.

“What’s the problem?”

“You can train with it at a very fast speed and your Immortal Martial Spirit would be used to its fullest.” Shi Yan paused then continued speaking, “But it’s a hideous process to train the Finger Gun! It’s much harder than slamming your body into the mace! It’s complete torture! You really want to try it? Not those Elementary Martial Skills?”

“Yes!”

“Ok, then I will tell to the process to train the Finger Gun. Your fingers will become very sharp after you finish the training process. But it’s torture to get there...”

...

A day later, in the Gravity Room.

Out of seven gravity pillars, six were covered by the skins of a

fifth-level demon beast, the Silver Snake. The skin could negate the gravity, so the gravity was currently two times normal.

Beside the only pillar not covered by the snake skin, Shi Yan was positioned upside down, supported by the index finger of his left hand.

This thin index finger was supporting his whole body weight, which was twice as heavy due to the increased gravity.

His index finger was trembling slightly and seemed about to break at anytime.

Shi Yan's face was as red as a lobster. The muscles on his left arm were quivering and the veins were shaking like small snakes which were trying to force their way out of his skin.

Extreme pain came from his fingertip to his heart!

It felt like numerous needles were stabbing into his finger. The pain stroked his nerves like waves and he was about to break down.

Endure it!

Shi Yan gritted his teeth and blood was about to gush out of his face. As he was positioned upside down, his blood had flowed down into his head which was intolerable.

Five minutes.

Shi Yan was about to break down after only five minutes.

The pain from his finger almost made him give up. It would have broken if it wasn't petrified.

Carry on!

Six minutes! Seven minutes!

When it came to the eighth minute, Shi Yan was at the edge of breaking down, and his consciousness began to dim...

Just then!

All sorts of negative emotions exploded in the meridians of his head all at once.

All the negative emotions gushed into his mind crazily!

‘Rampage’ had been triggered.

Chapter 52 - The Mysterious Area

“Bang!”

Shi Yan couldn't hold himself up anymore and he fell to the ground while breathing heavily.

Wisps of invisible but odd negative energy secretly poured out of his meridians and into his mind like silk.

The negative energy intertwined in his mind and seemed to have combined with his nerves.

A piercing pain suddenly invaded his mind .

The pain was like a electric current which struck out from his mind and flew across his whole body, activating all of his meridians.

It lasted for only three seconds!

A dense negative energy dispersed from all of his meridians.

The negative energy expelled from his meridians didn't stop, but kept moving through his veins, flesh, blood, bones, cells, and entrails.

There seemed to be electric currents flowing through his body. While his head was still hurting severely, his limbs began to contract.

Thin white smoke poured out from every single one of his pores...

A layer of pale smoke rapidly wrapped around him. Combined with the smoke was a murderous, bloody smell which encouraged people to kill!

As all the negative energy escaped from his meridians, his body contracted by one third!

Standing there with his skinny body, Shi Yan was surrounded

with the desire for blood, which also filled his body.

Suddenly, the pain in his mind disappeared all at once.

Opening his eyes, Shi Yan found his nerves had become more acute and he could even think and calculate faster.

His mind could maintain a very calm state!

The wisps of negative energy in his head seemed to combine with his nerves and had made his body extremely sensitive!

Standing there, he could even feel the changes the negative energy had made in his flesh and blood and how much power it had brought him.

Now he had become an unfeeling machine without any human emotions. The only thing left in his mind were methods to kill. How to kill quickly and efficiently.

He was a most hideous creature right now!

All other thoughts other than murder were disposed of. The only thing he could think of was how to kill his enemies.

No kindness. No concerns. Nothing but killing.

“Hoohoo!”

Shi Yan was breathing heavily like a murderous monster in the bloody Gravity Room. There wasn't any mercy left in his eyes and it seemed that he could kill at any time.

“Stop!”

A sound echoed in his mind. With the strength of will, Shi Yan withdrew the white smoke into his meridians.

Sitting down cross-legged, he closed his eyes and composed himself. He cleansed the thought of murder from his mind and let the odd negative energy slowly gush back into the meridians in his head.

After a very long time.

Shi Yan began to breath evenly, although he was still extremely fatigued. Then he slowly opened his eyes.

The clarity in his eyes had returned and there was no trace of any coldness or bloody desire.

The First Sky of 'Rampage'!

At that moment Shi Yan realized the real state of the First Sky of 'Rampage'.

Apart from the change to his body, the change to his mind was more horrifying!

He believed that in that mindset, he would be the coldest killing machine and would be able to trigger all of his potential.

In that state, he had no emotions, only the need to kill! All he could think about was how to kill faster and more efficiently. Too cold blooded!

Horrible!

Shi Yan couldn't help but shout in his mind after he recovered and remembered that weird state.

And at that moment, he realized that maybe the direction of his training was wrong.

The training of 'Rampage' should start from the head and the whole process would be led by the head. Once 'Rampage' started in his head, his whole body would change with it.

But he had begun to train from his hands and feet and then his whole body. When he finally trained with his head, his whole body would change and then the recoil would strike the meridians in his head.

Apparently he was training in an incorrect way, thus he fainted during several trainings.

Now the last step of 'Rampage' was finally complete...

Exhausted, Shi Yan didn't have any energy to train his 'Finger Gun'. He had to sit where he was and drive out the side effects of 'Rampage' using the Immortal Martial Spirit.

After a full circulation, his Profound Qi had as recovered by a lot and so he tried to strike the blood ring.

Recently, he was often trying to strike the blood ring and break another shield to see if there were other secrets.

But every strike ended in failure. Although he was at the Third Sky of Nascent Level, he couldn't break another layer in the ring.

His sharp Profound Qi was always blocked when touching that shield.

The Profound Qi bounced back in waves. Shi Yan stood up and went to the corner of the Gravity Room and took out the Spirit Level Martial Skill book 'Gravitational Field' out of his bag.

Sitting in the corner, Shi Yan was frowning as he was turning the pages one by one.

He was very grateful to the previous master of his body now. He could read the ancient book all because of that boy's knowledge.

And apart from that boy, no one else in the Shi Family could read the ancient language.

Luckily that boy passed the ancient language to him. Or he would have had to find a special person who could read the ancient language and translate it for him.

This was a book was a Spirit Level Martial Skill.

He didn't say a word about this book even to Shi Jian or Yang Hai. It would be much too troublesome if his translator spread it.

...

He slowly read out those ancient characters secretly in his mind.

The book was not thick at all as it only had twenty seven pages.

He quickly finished reading all the content.

Closing the book, Shi Yan looked weird as he mumbled, “This book on the Spirit Level Martial Skill is too much fun. One needs to possess different types of power to train with it.”

Though this Martial Skill wasn’t strict about one’s cultivation level, it had strict requirements on one’s power.

Though it was a type of Spirit Level Martial Skill, Elementary Level and Nascent Level warriors could also train with it.

There was only one requirement for training it; one had to possess at least two types of power.

Only when the two powers clashed against each other would a Field be created. The space in the Field would twist and thus, create attraction.

Once the Field was created, it would drag everyone but its creator into it.

Under its power, anyone who was dragged into the Field would automatically spin and their blood and flesh would be squeezed. Their Profound Qi would be suppressed and they wouldn’t be able to operate their Martial Skills.

According to the author of the book ‘Gravitational Field’, the more types of power the trainer possessed, the more powerful the Field would be.

If the trainer had three or four types of power, the Field he created could directly kill Disaster Level warriors!

Once there were five types of power in the Field, even an Earth Level warrior would definitely die!

Holding the book and thinking for a while, Shi Yan chuckled softly as his eyes turned bright.

Common warriors had only one type of Profound Qi in their body. Only those who possess special Martial Spirits could have

another type of power, such as Di Yalan's Blue Magic Flame.

Apparently most warriors couldn't train with this magical Spirit Level Martial Skill, because very it was rare for people to possess two or three types of powers in their body.

Luckily Shi Yan was among the minority. The negative energy from his meridians was very different from Profound Qi.

He could train with it directly.

Chapter 53 - Visitors from the Zuo Family

ED Note: The notation for Martial Skills has been changed from single quotes ‘ to square brackets []. The previous chapters will be updated to reflect this.

In the Gravity Room.

Shi Yan leaned against the Gravity Pillar, standing upside down while balanced on the middle finger of his left hand, all of his veins popping out.

A quarter of an hour later, he switched to his ring finger. Every fifteen minutes, he would shift to the next finger and repeat the process all over again.

After one complete cycle, Shi Yan sat on the green stone ground covered in sweat. He stretched out his left hand and released some of the negative energy from the meridians in his arm.

Wisps of white smoke sprawled over his arm and stealthily flew in front of him according to his will.

Profound Qi was being operated in his fingers, then it quivered and was injected into the white smoke which was floating in front of Shi Yan.

The Profound Qi then wriggled like a snake in the white smoke...

The white smoke and the Profound Qi slowly combined, forming into one after some small swirls, in which, a magical attraction suddenly erupted.

As the attraction occurred, that space seemed to collapse and contract at once.

The nearby air was sucked in and the surrounding space seemed to decrease sharply, feeling rather heavy.

His eyes shining brightly, Shi Yan focused on the small Field and

tried to feel the magical power, injecting more Profound Qi into it.

Strangely, the Field didn't get any stronger. On the contrary, the magical power in it became weaker.

“Eh?”

Shi Yan was stunned and confused.

After pondering for a long time, he seemed to figure out the trick. He stopped injecting Profound Qi and pushed some of the negative white smoke surrounding his arm into the Field.

The Field which was previously getting weaker, suddenly began to strengthen as soon as the white smoke was added.

Gazing at the Field for ten seconds, Shi Yan was thinking on the details. Eventually he withdrew the two types of power out of the Field.

The Field disappeared at once.

Through this training, he drew the conclusion that in order to strengthen the Field, the two types of power should be balanced. Only by doing this could the Field remain powerful.

If one of the powers surpassed the other one, it wouldn't strengthen the Field, but break the balance and decrease its power.

There needed to be an accurate balance between the two powers, or the power of the Field could not be released to the fullest extent.

During these days, Shi Yan devoted himself to his two Martial Skills: [Finger Gun] and [Gravitational Field]. Apart from having three meals a day, he spent almost all of his time on his training.

After a month's torment, Shi Yan had made significant progress in the [Finger Gun].

Now he could stand on each of his fingers for fifteen minutes.

His ten fingers became harder and harder, and would even make the sound of metal when struck after Petrification.

Every time he finished training the [Finger Gun], he would delve into the Spirit Level Martial Skill book [Gravitational Field].

He didn't exhaust his negative energy in his meridians every time he trained. Instead, he just released a little part of it from his arms and combined it with his Profound Qi to explore the effects of [Gravitational Field].

Though the Field he formed was small, it had the the same mechanism as the big ones.

After endless repeated use, he gained a deeper understanding about [Gravitational Field], and knew more about it after a period of time.

The deeper he probed the [Gravitational Field] skill, the more profound he found this Spirit Level Martial Skill to be. There were many more truths hidden in it.

While training in this Spirit Level Martial Skill, Shi Yan was also in the process of trying to understand the truth of this universe.

Sitting there upright covered in perspiration, Shi Yan sank deep into thought.

“Creaakkk”

The door of the Gravity Room opened, as Han Zhong walked in and yelled, “Brother Yan, the family head has asked for you to come to the living room.”

“Living room?” Shi Yan glanced at him and frowned, “Didn't he forbid me from leaving the Gravity Room? Are there important visitors?”

“Zuo Xu came with that little girl Zuo Shi.” Han Zhong explained while standing at the door, “Zuo Xu just brought Zuo Shi back from her teacher, Chi Xiao, in the Cloud Mountain. So they came to visit us on the way and discuss the Martial Competition with the family head.”

The Zuo Family was one of the five big families in the Merchant Union, and was quite close to the Shi Family.

The Zuo Family possessed the Shadow Martial Spirit. During fights, there would be clones beside them. Many skilled Zuo family warriors could even create seven or eight clones during a fight. These clones could move and make different actions in order to confuse the enemy.

As the Zuo Family members possessed the Shadow Martial Spirit, they would be in a beneficial position from the very beginning. The opponents would mistakenly attack the clones, so the Zuo warriors could kill them easily.

The Shadow Martial Spirit was not only beneficial for fights, but also made a big difference when one needed to escape.

Once the Zuo warriors were threatened, they would create several clones of themselves and run in different directions. If they had only one enemy, that person could only choose one direction to chase them in.

After he caught up, he would find out that it was just a clone, and their real body had already ran off somewhere else.

If the real body was chased, they could create more clones and make the enemy guess again.

One would break down if he came across a Zuo Family warrior and had to find the real body to chase.

“Ok, got it.” Shi Yan nodded and casually picked up a green warrior uniform from the ground and put it on. He strode out of the Gravity Room, “Let’s go.”

“Err...Brother Yan, aren’t you going to take a shower first?” Han Zhong covered his nose with one hand and waved with the other, “You stink like sweat!”

“Nope. I will be back soon anyway.”

“You don’t want to leave a good impression on Zuo Shi?” Han Zhong looked weird, “Zuo Shi is well known for her talent in the Merchant Union. Tian Xiao, Tian Luo, and some other young masters are all around her these days. Aren’t you going to try and impress her?”

“Zuo Shi?” Shi Yan was stunned when a bright flash crossed his mind. Unexpectedly, he felt a slight sorrow in his heart, and he shook his head, “Well, there is something between this girl and me...”

“Exactly!”

Han Zhong smirked, “You were born on the same day! What a coincidence! So your grandpa and Zuo Xu nearly got you two engaged. But on the third day after her birth, she turned out to possess the Shadow Martial Spirit, while you didn’t. Hmm, then no one brought your engagement up, when the two sides both chose to be silent about it...”

Han Zhong paused and sighed, “It’s natural. Zuo Shi inherited a Martial Spirit, but you didn’t show yours at the beginning, which, to the Shi Family and the Zuo Family, meant that you wouldn’t be successful. The Zuo Family wouldn’t marry a real warrior like Zuo Shi to some commoner. And the Shi Family can’t take advantage of it. So that is it.”

Memories hidden deep within Shi Yan’s mind were awoken by Han Zhong’s speech. Standing there stunned, Shi Yan slowly sorted out these memory fragments and mumbled after a long time, “That guy was really sentimental...”

“Zuo Shi is incredibly talented and intelligent, but it is also said that she is rather lazy, and not into Martial Arts. Her accomplishment was the result of her family pushing her. Even so, she trains much faster than average warriors. Seventeen and the Second Sky of the Human Level! Another miracle in the Merchant Union.”

Han Zhong shook his head, and sighed, “That bastard Beiming Ce has also reached the Second Sky of Human Level at seventeen, but he kept training so hard. While Zuo Shi kept sleeping and fooling around... I guess Zuo Shi is more talented than Beiming Ce.”

Shi Yan didn't reply but frowned.

He could feel that slight sorrow in his heart which was triggered by Zuo Shi...

As he focused on the memory, Shi Yan realized that the previous master of his body was deeply in love with Zuo Shi, while she never felt anything for him.

Zuo Shi was very lazy. She didn't like hard training, but was into art, nature, tea ceremony, astrology and so on...

Her hobbies varied. Though she didn't train hard, she could easily break the levels, and managed to reach the Second Sky of Human Level with the help of her incredible talent.

Apart from her incredible talent, she also had an extraordinarily delicate face.

The previous master of this body fell for Zuo Shi at the first sight. But he wasn't good with words, and knew he was at a disadvantage, so he never expressed his admiration for her.

Typical unrequited love.

“Well...” after his mind wandered for a while, Shi Yan smiled, “So... that girl is a genius?”

“Absolutely!”

Han Zhong nodded and affirmed, “Otherwise, Chi Xiao in the Cloud Mountain wouldn't have insisted on teaching Zuo Shi and taken her to the Cloud Mountain after seeing her for the first time three years ago. Chi Xiao is an expert of the Sky Level, which is very rare in the Merchant Union, Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire. It is said that even Beiming Shang has been beaten by

him.”

“Okay.” Shi Yan looked indifferent, “Shall we go now?”

“Errr... you are not moved by what I said? You are not going to clean yourself and suit up?” Han Zhong smiled bitterly.

“Now that this girl is so popular and she is protected by Chi Xiao and Zuo Xu, I don’t think I will have a chance with her. So why waste my time.”

Chapter 54 - Zuo Shi

In front of the living room, there was a mid-sized garden which contained all sorts of rare plants. There were flowers that bloomed during every season, sending out intoxicating fragrances.

Shi Yan walked to the front of the garden and saw Zuo Shi at once, who was crowded by several boys.

Among the fresh flowers, Zuo Shi was standing in a beautiful position. Her long, straight legs looked sexy.

In the sunlight, her porcelain-like skin was shining elegantly. On her small, delicate face, her two big eyes were as clear as crystals.

Although Shi Yan knew Zuo Shi was pretty, he was still amazed after seeing her in person.

Zuo Shi was as beautiful as Mu Yu Die, and she was even taller, with longer and more delicious legs.

These youths crowded around Zuo Shi like stars that circled the moon. Zuo Shi was holding a watering can and was leisurely watering the flowers, though there was a sign some helplessness in her eyes.

It seemed that she didn't like to be treated like she was special.

Shi Yan took a glance at her from afar and turned away. He entered the garden and directly headed towards the living room behind the garden.

“Shi Yan!”

A young man's loud shout came, and many youths around Zuo Shi turned their eyes to Shi Yan.

“Yes Brother?” Shi Yan paused, turned and asked.

“Where have you been these days? I heard you came back months ago, but why didn't I see you?” Shi Tianxiao yelled and waved at Shi Yan, “Come, Shi Yan, Little Shi has a piece of turtle shell with

her and there are some odd characters on it. Aren't you an expert on these things? Come and help us check."

Zuo Shi, who was among these youths, was interested after hearing that. Her lake-like eyes crossed over the ten meters and settled upon Shi Yan.

"I'm busy now. Big Grandpa is asking for me. Talk to you later."

Shi Yan looked indifferent and refused at once, then walked towards the living room without any hesitation.

"Hmm."

Shi Tianxiao felt weird and was stunned. He smiled and explained embarrassingly, "Shi Yan is bad tempered, wordless and not into Martial Arts at all. All these years he has been running around all over the place. Even I don't know what he was doing. Don't worry, I will get him to read it for you."

There was suspicion in Zuo Shi's eyes. She gazed at Shi Yan's disappearing back and asked, "He is not interested in Martial Arts? Then why is his cultivation level even higher than yours?"

"Wha... what?"

Shi Tianxiao was shocked as he hurried to ask, "Little Shi, are you serious? I have never seen him train Martial Arts for one second in the last seventeen years! Cultivation?"

Zuo Shi's pretty face showed some surprise too. She asked earnestly after some thought, "He has reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Level, how couldn't he have trained in Martial Arts? That old man taught me his [Magical Eyes], through which I can tell anyone's cultivation. His cultivation is not higher than mine, so my estimation must be correct."

"The Third Sky of Nascent Level!"

Shi Tianluo, who was standing beside them, shook his head and shouted, "No way! It's impossible! For the past seventeen years,

Shi Yan literally hasn't trained Martial Arts for even one second! How could he reach the Third Sky of the Nascent Level in one night? Don't be ridiculous!"

Seeing them unconvinced, Zuo Shi shook her head slightly without further explanation, and went to the other side with the watering can.

...

"Big Grandpa, what can I do for you?"

Shi Yan walked into the living room, bowed to Shi Jian, Han Feng, and Zuo Xu one by one, and asked Shi Jian.

Shi Jian nodded, stepped up, grabbed Shi Yan's arm and dragged him to the front of Zuo Xu, "Brother Zuo, look at him carefully, and check how on earth he has his Martial Spirit. Your Zuo Family has collected so many classic books on Martial Spirits, you must know more about it than me. I can't figure it out. I believe you can."

Zuo Xu was around sixty years old with white hair along the two sides of his forehead. He didn't look arrogant or proud at all, but was extremely learned and refined.

He didn't look like a family head from a big family, but rather a teacher at the school.

Shi Jian and Zuo Xu had been close friends for many years, and the Shi Family and the Zuo Family were solid allies. Therefore, Shi Yan's latest news might be still a secret to most Shi Family members, but it wouldn't be a secret to Zuo Xu.

Zuo Xu frowned slightly as he stretched out one of his skinny dry hands and put it on Shi Yan's wrist, "Petrify your body first."

Shi Yan did as Zuo Xu asked.

Suddenly, thousands of wisps of energy seemed to come out from his wrist like silk.

The wisps felt alive as it nimbly floated to every corner of Shi Yan's body, but didn't cause him any pain, despite some itchiness.

The wisps passed through his veins, probed his bones, entered his entrails, and moved over every corner of his body, and finally it went back and disappeared at his wrist.

Zuo Xu released his hand and frowned deeply. After a long silence, he said, "Nothing strange."

Shi Jian was so joyful that he said in haste, "You mean, this boy has a normal Martial Spirit? And it will also improve in the future?"

"Should be." Zuo Xu was in deep thought while his face showed a weird expression, "Brother, is there another Martial Spirit in his body?"

"How do you know?"

Shi Jian was too happy to contain himself, and he couldn't help but laugh, "Brother Zuo! You are really something! Yes, there is another Martial Spirit in his body which can provide self-recovery! Haha! I intended to tell you later, but you detected it so soon!"

A light flashed Zuo Xu's eyes as his mouth trembled. After a long while, he nodded heavily and greeted happily, "Congratulations Brother!"

"Haha, you too, you too." Shi Jian was delighted as he laughed, "Your little girl is so talented that she has already reached the Second Sky of the Human level. Even that old Chi Xiao insisted on teaching her. I bet her accomplishments will be much greater than that boy in the Beiming Family."

Zuo Xu shook his head with a bitter smile, and sighed with fondness, "That girl is really talented, but she is too lazy! She won't train until I force her to. Her cultivation would be much higher if she was as diligent as Beiming Ce."

Zuo Xu looked a little proud as he mentioned Zuo Shi's talent.

“Your girl advances really fast. But Shi Yan advanced to the Third Sky of the Nascent Level in a very short time too! He never trained in the past seventeen years. To mention this speed, I have never seen anyone who advances faster than him.” Shi Jian replied with a smile, raising his head.

Another light crossed Zuo Xu’s eyes. He looked at Shi Jian, and nodded with a smile, “Twin Martial Spirits are really amazing. The Shi Family will definitely win the Martial Competition this time.”

“Sure!”

Shi Jian wasn’t modest at all, as he said loudly, “I kept this guy in the Gravity Room for so long so that he could teach a lesson to the Mo Family.”

“Brother, since Shi Yan possesses twin Martial Spirits, it’s understandable that his Petrification could directly advanced to the second stage.”

Zuo Xu thought for a while, and said, “As far as I know, there is a small possibility that the two Martial Spirits in one body could change after coming into contact with each other. And that variation is harmful in most cases. The two Martial Spirits may influence each other in a negative way and decrease their power. But there is a small chance that some twin Martial Spirits could nourish each other. Shi Yan is lucky, apparently his twin Martial Spirits are compatible, therefore his Petrification could directly advanced to the second stage when he is still at the Nascent Level.”

“Yeah, this guy is really blessed! Or he wouldn’t have given me such a surprise at the age of seventeen!” Shi Jian nodded with a broad smile.

Then the two old men started to talk about other trivial things, seeming to forget that Shi Yan was still beside them.

“Hmm, may I go back to the Gravity Room if there is nothing else I can do?” Being ignored, Shi Yan suggested helplessly.

“Well, go! Hurry up! Don’t be lazy!” Shi Jian urged seriously.

“Oh, by the way, you are an expert on ancient characters right?” Zuo Xue remembered something and added, “Little Shi got a piece of turtle shell which has some ancient characters on it. She wants to know what it says, please help her read it when you pass by her.”

“Okay.”

Chapter 55 - The Weirdo

In the garden in front of the living room.

Some Shi family boys were fawning over Zuo Shi passionately with modest smiles. Every time Zuo Shi asked about something, they would answer quickly in order to create a good impression of themselves.

Some of them were from the branches of the Shi family and some, such as Shi Tianxiao and Shi Tianluo, were from the direct line.

Walking slowly among the fresh flowers, Zuo Shi looked a little absent-minded, though her steps didn't falter. She shook the watering can in her hand, bored and detached, like a spirit among the flowers.

Shi Yan walked out of the living room, thought for a while, and directly went into the flower garden towards Zuo Shi. He then stretched out his hand and said, "Please show me the turtle shell."

"You stupid guy. Now you come to make up to Little Shi! Where have you been just now?" Shi Tianxiao grunted in discontent.

"Big Grandpa wanted to have a word with me." Shi Yan explained casually, "I promised Grandpa Zuo to help Zuo Shi read the shell. We have different intentions."

"Intentions? What's the difference?" Shi Tianxiao was a little embarrassed. Suddenly he covered his nose with his hand and cried, "Shi Yan, what is that smell coming from you?!"

A sour smell was wafting out from him.

The crowd didn't notice it in the beginning as they were busy fawning over Zuo Shi. As they heard Shi Tianxiao's cry, they finally noticed and quickly covered their noses, complaining that Shi Yan was too shameful.

Unexpectedly, the only girl there didn't even take a step back, but stood there carrying the watering can, seemingly not caring about the smell at all.

Zuo Shi stared at Shi Yan in surprise, while confusion overtook her mind.

Every man, including Shi Tianxiao and Shi Tianluo, would suit up and put some perfume on before they saw Zuo Shi, using flower essence to ensure they didn't leave a bad impression on her.

But this boy was too different! His warrior gown was wrinkled and dusty; apparently he had been wearing it for a very long time. There was the strong smell coming from him indicating that he had just finished training his martial arts.

This guy obviously doesn't take me seriously!

Zuo Shi was stunned and soon drew this conclusion, which triggered her interest in Shi Yan.

Seeing the crowd turned off but Zuo Shi still standing there, Shi Yan was a little happy, as he asked softly, "Where is the turtle shell?"

"It's at the living room, I will get it right away." Zuo Shi replied in a very melodious voice. She then moved her beautiful legs and thin body and disappeared in an instant.

The girl moved as fast as lightning. Even Shi Yan could only see her shadow pass by, unable to follow her movement.

The crowd, including Shi Tianxiao, were astounded.

They realized that not only was Zuo Shi pretty, but also a warrior one realm higher than them.

By the time Zuo Shi had returned, the crowd were still drowning in amazement as only six seconds had passed.

Zuo Shi appeared in front of Shi Yan with a basin-sized turtle shell in her hand and handed it to him, "Here you are."

Shi Yan nodded and took the shell, only to find his body dragged down by a massive weight and he almost fell to the ground by the heavy turtle shell.

He operated his Profound Qi and was barely able to stabilize his body. He exclaimed, "So heavy!"

He looked to Zuo Shi in discontent and assumed she was deliberately trying to make a fool out of him!

However, he found that Zuo Shi's eyes were crystal clear and devoid of any malicious intentions.

"Yes, I don't know what this shell is made out of. It's about four hundred kilograms." Zuo Shi didn't notice that Shi Yan had secretly cursed her, instead she fingered the short hair beside her ears and added, "I was surprised when I first got it."

"Four hundred kilograms!" Shi Tianxiao rubbed his temples and felt his head go numb.

Zuo Shi held the turtle shell with one hand and could still move that fast! This made him realize the distance between him and Zuo Shi and he was a little disappointed.

Shi Yan was holding the turtle shell firmly after he recovered, which also improved his understanding of Shi Yan, and he now believed what Zuo Shi had previously said.

"Shi Yan, you, you bastard..."

Though Shi Tianxiao was not a gifted boy, he was clever enough. He realized that Shi Jian had kept this a secret, so he stopped himself before he announced Shi Yan's latest shocking news.

Shi Yan remained indifferent. Without replying to Shi Tianxiao, he examined the turtle shell carefully and nodded to Zuo Shi, "This is one of the oldest languages, so I need to read it with the help of some books. Follow me to my room."

At once, Shi Yan headed to his own house with the turtle shell in

his hand.

“Okay.” Zuo Shi nodded and stepped up leisurely.

“Big brother, um, are we following them?” Shi Tianluo showed a strange face, and asked quietly after the two had moved far away.

“Hmm, good idea.” Shi Tianxiao couldn’t suppress his curiosity. Seeing no one was walking out of the living room, he also followed to Shi Yan’s house.

...

Shi Yan lived in a three storey stone house.

The first floor held various trivial stuff, the second floor was for resting, and the third floor was filled with huge book shelves where Shi Yan kept all sorts of ancient books.

After leading Zuo Shi to the house, Shi Yan saw that the crowd had also followed them. He shouted at them from the door, “I need quiet. Don’t come into my house.”

Then he closed the door and said to Zuo Shi, “Let’s go upstairs.”

Zuo Shi nodded obediently and followed him to the second floor.

“Well, you go up and rest on the third floor for a while. I need to take a shower and change my clothes. I will catch up with you shortly.” He handed the turtle shell back to Zuo Shi and pointed at the stairs leading to the third floor, “This way.”

“Why shower now?” Zuo Shi rolled her eyes at him, and grunted with her delicate nose.

“I want to feel comfortable, it’s not out of consideration for you. Don’t think too much of yourself little girl.”

“You think too much!”

“Don’t waste my time. Go to the third floor! I’m taking off my clothes.”

Not bothering to care, Shi Yan took off his warriors gown and

threw it onto the hanger. He was only in his underwear and almost naked. He glanced at Zuo Shi indifferently, “Why are you still here?”

After a long period of intense training, Shi Yan had become much stronger. Every muscle looked shiny and hard, as if moulded by iron, emitting a strong sense of masculinity.

As Zuo Shi saw him take off his clothes without any shame, she panicked. She cursed, “Bastard!” and quickly took the turtle shell up to the third floor with her face blushing.

This guy... had some figure. Zuo Shi thought to herself as she was walking upstairs.

The third floor covered two hundred square metres.

Apart from the book shelves, there were many bizarre jars, bottles, pots and wine glasses on the expanded third floor.

Zuo Shi took out an ancient book randomly, flipped it open and realized she couldn't read it.

Zuo Shi shook her head and thought to herself, “What a weirdo!”

Zuo Shi had various hobbies as well.

She studied plants, tea ceremony, astrology, medicine and weapons, each for a short time. But she was too lazy so she couldn't focus on one thing for too long. She would switch to a new thing shortly after.

These ancient books on the third floor were mostly about ancient history and ancient.

Zuo Shi was not interested in them at all, so she found them all boring and difficult to understand. Now she was sure Shi Yan was officially a weirdo.

Why are you interested in ancient life? What does it have to do with you? What can you do with it?

Zuo Shi curled her lips, and thought that Shi Yan was more

ignorant and incompetent than her.

Chapter 56 - Basalt Scriptures and the Dragon Turtle Armor

Zuo Shi strolled around on the third floor, feeling very bored, so she went and stood next to the turtle shell on the ground, waiting for Shi Yan to get back.

After half an hour, Shi Yan slowly walked up the stairs. Wearing a light green long garment, he looked fairly handsome.

But Zuo Shi only glanced over him once, then retracted her gaze, and continued staring at the turtle shell. She spoke, "If you're done then let us take a look at it quickly, I've been waiting for so long."

Zuo Shi had seen too many attractive men, and the men of the Zuo family were all good-looking. So Zuo Shi was nearly immune to all the different types of handsome men.

"Girl, you're used to making people wait for you, aren't you? If you don't try waiting for someone else, how would you know how hard it is?"

Shi Yan sneered, he didn't rush to approach her, but first he went around the bookshelves, and using the memories deeply rooted in his head, took out a heavy ancient book that was covered with dust, then moved to Zuo Shi's side.

Zuo Shi stared in a daze, as she had unexpectedly blanked out due to Shi Yan's words. She nodded lightly, and spoke in agreement, "You're right, it has always been others waiting for me. I've never waited for anyone. So this is how it feels to wait for someone... Why is it that those people waited so long for me, yet they never made a fuss, and still talked to me with a face full of smiles?"

"That's because they're low!" Shi Yan commented bluntly.

"Ha!"

Zuo Shi chuckled, her bright eyes scanning Shi Yan, and she

spoke while smiling, “You’re so wicked. So how are they low?”

“I think you shouldn’t be named Zuo Shi, you should instead be called Zuo Xin Xin.”

“Why?”

“From where I come from, they name children based on what they lack. Like how the name Zhao Xin (鑫 meaning gold) means lacking wealth and Wang Miao (淼 meaning flood/water) means lacking water, so you should be called Zuo Xin Xin (心 meaning wits)...”

“You lack wits! Asshole!”

“So you’re not stupid?” Shi Yan said indifferently, “If you weren’t so slow-witted, how could you not know what they were thinking? They wanted to flatter you so of course they wouldn’t show any discontent. All men, before they obtain a wonderful thing, act incredibly low. After they obtain it, they become even lower!”

“Are you talking about yourself?”

Zuo Shi’s eyes brightened, and she smilingly as she looked at him.

“Cough cough, I said normal men are like that, but I’m an exception.”

Shi Yan shamelessly stated, then crouched down, moving closer to the piece of turtle shell on the ground. With one hand, he quickly flipped through the pages of the thick ancient book. Whenever he flipped to a certain page, he would pause, his finger pointing to a specific ancient character.

On the back of the basin-sized turtle shell, aside from the complex old moire pattern, was actually eight lip-sized ancient characters. Those eight ancient characters didn’t seem to look like they were forcefully carved on, instead they looked like they were naturally formed by the moire patterns on the turtle shell; it was

extraordinarily magical.

The eight ancient characters were arranged in two lines and each character was about the same size, and gave off a cold feeling when touched.

Shi Yan felt the surface of each character with his left hand, his right hand constantly flipping through the ancient book in his hand. Sometimes he wrinkled his eyebrows in thought, other times, his eyes would brighten and a smile would appear at the corner of his lips, as if he came to an understanding. He engrossed himself in deciphering the ancient characters on the turtle shell.

As focused as he was, it seemed as if he didn't noticed there was a beautiful young girl nearby.

Zuo Shi's dainty figure knelt down, her delicate face pointed towards him, constantly paying attention to the changes in expression on Shi Yan's face.

It was to say, when Shi Yan was deeply concentrating on something, he displayed the unique charms of a man.

Zuo Shi somewhat admired this kind of concentrated dedication, and she nodded silently in her mind, thinking, "Although he has a big attitude, and rants a lot, when working on things, he's pretty serious about it."

"Rustle! Rustle!"

In the silent room, there was only the sound of Shi Yan rapidly flipping through his book. Zuo Shi had quietly kneeled down next to him, not interrupting.

After a long while, Shi Yan suddenly shut the book in his hand and with a serious face he said, "Done."

"What do these eight characters mean?" Zuo Shi's eyes brightened, and she asked delightedly.

"Dragon Turtle Armor! Basalt Scriptures!" Shi Yan shouted with

a deep voice.

“Hey!”

Zuo Shi whispered, pointing at the turtle shell, and spoke in surprise, “The turtle shell is glowing because of your voice!”

Shi Yan was surprised, and hurriedly looked down. The meticulous moire pattern on the turtle shell was indeed releasing a faint green glow.

It was as if the eight ancient characters were brought to life, slowly shifting on the turtle shell, reforming altogether.

Staring, both Zuo Shi and Shi Yan were stunned.

The eight ancient characters, after shifting for a while, formed a hand-shaped indent.

On the turtle shell, there was a light green glow that was swirling, and strange continuous pulses escaped from the turtle shell. The air in the room seemed to be attracted to the turtle shell, as it quickly flowed into the shell, making it hard for Shi Yan and Zuo Shi to breathe.

“Zuo Shi, I’ll stay right here, you go into the living room right now and call both of our grandpas over! Now!” Shi Yan was dazed for a moment, then shouted.

“Okay!”

Zuo Shi was also stunned by the change to the turtle shell, so she didn’t dare to hesitate. Her tall figure shook for a second and she disappeared from Shi Yan’s view.

Shi Yan’s expression was serious, his eyes steadily fixed upon the turtle shell.

After staring at the turtle shell for a while, Shi Yan’s heart skipped a beat, suddenly realizing the strange conditions of the turtle shell was as if it wanted someone to put their hand in.

As soon as the thought surfaced in his mind, Shi Yan could not

resist, and wanted to place his hand onto the turtle shell.

Yet, right after his hand reached out, he realized what he was doing.

“No, this turtle shell belongs to Zuo Shi, I shouldn’t be the one to do it.”

Thinking this, Shi Yan stopped, took a deep breath, and he made himself take a few steps away from the turtle shell, waiting patiently.

After a short moment, Zuo Shi, Zuo Xu, and Shi Jian rushed to the room, and the three surrounded the turtle shell, watching the continuously shifting turtle shell.

“So this is what happened...” Shi Yan explained the situation briefly, and then said, “The hand print that’s shown on the turtle shell should be the key to opening it. Just place your hand onto it and you should be able find out the secret of the turtle shell. Since it was Little Shi who brought it, I’m not going to mess with it.”

“Could it be dangerous?” Zuo Xu’s wondered aloud. At this moment, he was a little unsure of what to do.

“I don’t know.” Shi Yan shook his head, and he hesitated for a second, then stated his thoughts, “The reason why I called you guys over was because I don’t know whether it’s dangerous or not. Since you’re all here, even if the turtle shell turns out to be dangerous, you’ll be able to stop it.”

“So you’re saying that we can give it a try?” Zuo Xu’s eyes brightened. ‘Dragon Turtle Armor’ and ‘Basalt Scriptures’ were obviously connected to secret treasures and martial skills, so no wonder they grabbed Zuo Xu’s interest.

“Of course we can give it a try.” Shi Yan smirked, and said lightly, “Grandpa Zuo, if you’re worried about Xiao Shi, I can do it for her, how’s that?”

“I’ll do it.”

Zuo Shi heard what Shi Yan said, and without asking for Zuo Xu's opinion, held out her glistening hand and pressed it into the deep indent on the turtle shell.

“Boom!”

A low, exploding sound came from the inside of the turtle shell.

Five thin needles shot out and embedded themselves into Zuo Shi's five fingers that were placed into the indent.

Bright red blood immediately dripped out of Zuo Shi's fingers. Like rubies, the blood rolled around in the indent as if it was solid, and was finally absorbed by the turtle shell.

Bright green light suddenly burst out from the turtle shell, and the blazing green light was blinding to everyone's eyes.

Strange ancient symbols formed by the green light suddenly flew out, went along Zuo Shi's arm, and it flew straight into her head.

Chapter 57 - In My Hands!

(TL's note: "fragment picture" from previous chapters is now corrected to "fragment map.")

In the stone tower.

Zuo Xu, and Shi Jian looked serious, their eyes glistened in the light, as they stared intensely at Zuo Shi, who was pressing one hand on the turtle shell.

As the head of the Zuo family, Zuo Xu actually felt excited, his fingers kept clenching together, and the corner of his lips occasionally twitched.

Zuo Shi was the future hope for the Zuo family. Whether The Zuo family could rise to power in the future, and whether they could hold their status in the business league, was directly connected to how strong Zuo Shi became!

If Zuo Shi were to become strong, the Zuo family would keep their powerful influence. If she was weak, the Zuo family might decline.

There were countless families whose rise and falls were tied to an important figure. A family had to have a powerful central figure in order to keep their remarkable position.

The reason why Beiming Shang put Yin Kui and Jiu Shan close to Beiming Ce's side, was to prevent any mishaps that may happen to Beiming Ce before he became powerful. Their main objective was the future prosperity of the family.

Shi Yan looked indifferent, and at this moment, he was secretly observing Zuo Xu's reaction.

Through the slight change in Zuo Xu's expression, he realized that Zuo Xu really did see Zuo Shi as the most important treasure of the Zuo family. He also realized just how much importance a future strong figure holds to these elders!

...

A strange green symbol flew out of the turtle shell, and disappeared into Zuo Shi's body.

Zuo Shi's eyes were now closed, and there was a thin layer of green light covering her delicate face.

Tiny little spots of light jumped across Zuo Shi's face, like lively fireflies, passing their thoughts to Zuo Shi.

Zuo Xu's expression changed, and nearly exclaimed out loud. He instinctively wanted to step forward and protect Zuo Shi, afraid that she might be in danger.

“Stop!”

Shi Yan stepped forward suddenly and held back Zuo Xu, and spoke lightly, “It's okay, Grandpa Zuo, you shouldn't be too tense.”

Zuo Xu stared for a second, then looked at Shi Yan in surprise, “Are you sure it's okay?”

“Yes, nothing will happen to her!” Shi Yan nodded with certainty, “The little strange lights in the turtle shell should be a type of memory communication. If I guessed correctly, it could be the way to cultivate the Basalt Scriptures, so you don't need to worry, this is just a memory transfer.”

When Shi Yan obtained [Rampage] from the Blood Vein Ring, the scenery was quite similar.

At that time, there was also many memory lights flowing out of the Blood Vein Ring, drilling into his mind, forming the memory imprint in his head.

After having that experience, and looking at Zuo Shi now, his heart settled down.

“Brat, don't speak nonsense, this is very serious!” Shi Jian shouted with a straight face.

Shi Jian was also unsure, he was scared that Shi Yan's careless

plans might cause harm to Zuo Shi. If that happens, the Shi family and the Zuo family could turn against each other!

Ever since the Zuo family was connected to Chi Xiao because of Zuo Shi, they secretly began to have what it takes to compete with the Beiming family. To the Shi family, having such a strong ally could only be to their benefit, no matter if it's against the Beiming family, or the Mo family.

Shi Jian doesn't want to become enemies with the Zuo family.

"It's okay, Little Shi will definitely be fine, you can relax." Shi Yan said, and comforted Zuo Xu, "Congratulations Grandpa Zuo, this time Zuo Shi will surely gain a great benefit, you can get ready to giggle."

"You brat." After hearing his words, Zuo Xu actually loosened up, and he laughed, "If it really turns out to be like what you said, I'll owe you a big favor little brat."

"Grandpa, you really do owe him a big favor."

Zuo Shi suddenly opened her eyes, and smiled, joyfully she said, "Those strange lights are the cultivation info of the [Basalt Scriptures]. Now in my mind, I've obtained the complete cultivation method of the [Basalt Scriptures]."

"What level of Martial Skill?" Zuo Xu impatiently asked, he was so excited he could jump.

Shaking her head, Zuo Shi said, "I don't know. All I got was the cultivation method of the [Basalt Scriptures], and it didn't say which level of Martial Skill it is."

"The writing's on the turtle shell are very ancient! This should be a Martial Skill cultivated by prehistoric warriors. At that same time, their skills were not as meticulously ranked as ours are." Shi Yan smiled, and casually explained, "But the Martial Skills of that time are much more mysterious than the ones we have now. This time Xiao Shi really got lucky."

“Haha!”

Zuo Xu laughed, delightfully patted Shi Yan’s shoulder, and said, “You little brat, I can’t help but like you! The Shi family has such a clever boy as you. Why worry about rising to power in the future?”

Shi Jian’s eyes brightened, he glanced over at Zuo Shi. Thinking of something, his face brightened up into a smile.

“Crack crack crack!”

Once Zuo Shi removed her hand from the turtle shell, it cracked open, separating into pieces of turtle armor.

These turtle armor pieces turned very thin, and shone with a strange green light. One of the pieces showed the shape of a dragon head, and another piece had the shape of a dragon tail. They looked like a pair of shoulder armor, and were very strange.

In the middle of the armor, there were three walnut-sized medicinal pills, shining with green light. These pills had a silly Dragon Turtle shape, with a dragon’s head and turtle’s body, as if it was alive.

A refreshing medicinal aroma spread from the three pills. The scent was very strong. Just by breathing in a little bit, everyone suddenly felt alert.

“These three are the Dragon Turtle Pill, especially made to go with the cultivation of the [Basalt Scriptures]. This set of armor is the Dragon Turtle Armor, supposedly it has very strong defense abilities.” Zuo Shi reached to pick up the three Dragon Turtle Pills and pocketed all of them, and said, “When cultivating the [Basalt Scriptures], I will need the Dragon Turtle Pills. Three of these are just enough to help me cultivate this skill.”

Zuo Xu’s expression brightened even more, and he clapped and laughed in excitement.

It was Shi Jian who actually felt slightly low spirited. He saw Zuo Shi taking all of the Dragon Turtle Pills, pressing his lips into a

line, he finally couldn't help but murmur, "Shi Yan helped too..."

"He can have the Dragon Turtle Armor." Zuo Shi lightly kicked the set of armor on the ground, adorably she furrowed her brows, and chuckled, "I don't want to wear this heavy-ass Turtle Shell! Take it as you please."

Shi Jian jolted, and impatiently stared at Shi Yan, urging him to take the Dragon Turtle Armor.

"Is it okay to do that? Everything is a full set." Zuo Xu clenched his teeth, looking reluctant. Although he liked Shi Yan, he still didn't want to give away the Dragon Turtle Armor.

Shi Yan stood still and shook his head, "I don't want it, the Shi family's Martial Spirit specializes in defense, I don't need to suffer with this heavy set of Turtle Armor."

"You!" Shi Jian was upset, he stomped and shouted, "Ungrateful!"

"You don't want it, but can't you give it to someone else? Stupid!" Shi Jian cursed in his mind.

"Boy! I like you!" Zuo Xu laughed, and wiggled his eyebrows at Shi Jian, "It's not that I'm unwilling to give it up, but Shi Yan himself rejected the offer. Now you can't blame me for this." He said, and immediately picked up the pieces of turtle shell, his smile becoming even wider.

"Grandpa, if you were to wear this Dragon Turtle Armor I bet you would look like a big old turtle, do you want to try it on?" Zuo Shi chuckled.

"Yes, the girl is right, Brother Zuo, why not try it on?" Shi Jian said with great pleasure, and secretly felt delighted.

"Disrespectful! You brat, what kind of nonsense are you talking about?" Zuo Xu's face turned dark, he glared at Zuo Shi, "If you keep bullshitting like that, next time I'm not going to pick you up from Cloud Mountain, and you can die from boredom at Chi Xiao's

place!”

“I won’t do it again.” Zuo Shi stuck out her tongue, and chickened out.

“Cough cough, Brother, alright then, we should get going.” Zuo Xu smilingly looked at Shi Jian, and said, “Don’t worry, people from our family are going to keep watch by the Dark Forest. If there’s any news on Karu, I’ll send people to tell you. Same thing with you guys, communicate with us once something comes up.”

“Of course, sigh, I can’t believe a figure as little as Master Karu can steal the treasure map of Mu Xun. Now Misty Pavilion has another piece, whoever is able to get both pieces of the map would be able to open the ‘Gate of Heaven’ with no difficulty, it’s really unfortunate...” Shi Jian’s expression was full of lament.

“Master Karu?”

Shi Yan furrowed his brows and whispered, he thought for a second, then asked, “That Karu guy, was he a Level 5 Mortality alchemist?”

“Hmm, you know about Master Karu?” Zuo Xu was curious.

“Is he important?” Shi Yan didn’t answer the question, and asked in response.

“He’s not important. However, the treasure map indicating the ‘Gate of Heaven’ that’s on him, is extremely important!” Zuo Xu said.

“I killed him a long time ago, and that treasure map, hmm, just happens to be in my hands.”

“What?!”

Zuo Xu, Shi Jian, and Zuo Shi all opened their eyes wide, simultaneously they exclaimed out loud.

Chapter 58 - The Plot

In the Gravity Room.

From the bag at the corner, Shi Yan took out a yellowish broken picture and handed it to Shi Jian, “Here, this is it.”

Shi Jian, Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi all looked at him with faces full of suspicion.

Shi Jian took that broken picture, and started to scan it carefully, when his eyes gradually lighten up, “Good, this picture doesn’t look fake. It is quite old, as some of the patterns on it have already blurred.”

“Let me have a look!” Zuo Xu was a little hasty, as he quickly took the broken picture. After touching it, he cried, “It can’t be fake! We have the same paper in the Zuo family which is made of the soft skin from the belly of a demon beast from remote ages. It’s fire, water and wear proof; basically indestructible.”

“Tell me in detail about what happened between you and Karu. And how many people know about this?” Shi Jian looked rigid as he took a deep breath, but he couldn’t hide the happiness in his eyes.

“You, weirdo, are really strange.” Zuo Shi’s beautiful eyes were also focused on Shi Yan. She was becoming more interested in him.

“Well, this is the thing...”

Shi Yan noticed the seriousness of it after seeing Shi Jian and Zuo Xu’s reaction, therefore, he quickly explained how he got that picture and how he escaped from the ancient cave.

“So the Mo family knows about it too?”

Zuo Xu’s face changed. After a pause, he sneered, “No wonder the people from the Mo family are still lingering in Silent Town. They

must be searching for you.”

“The Mo family!”

Shi Jian grunted and said angrily, “Thank goodness Shi Yan is fine. If he was hurt by them, I would destroy Mo Tuo even by sacrificing myself! The Mo family has done too many evil things! They are going to look down upon the Shi family if we don’t teach them a lesson soon.”

“Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were taken away by Beiming Ce, and they don’t know who you are?” Deliberating for a while, Zuo Xu asked again.

“No matter if it is Mu Yu Die, Di Yalan, or the people from the Mo family, no one knows who I am. I told the two girls that my name was Ding Yan.”

“Good boy! Cautious enough! Or it would be very tough!” Zuo Xu complimented.

“Now that we got this half of the picture, we should get the other half!” Shi Jian said firmly to Zuo Xu, “Brother Zuo, we can take the risk. Once we got the other half of the picture from the Misty Pavilion, we two families can open the Sky Gate and enter the God Area to search for treasures!”

Narrowing his eyes, which were blinking brightly, Zuo Xu sank deep into thought. He then said, “There are many experts in the Misty Pavilion. We have to make a good plan if we want to grab the picture from them.”

He added after a pause, “I will write a letter right away to Chi Xiao and let an eagle take it to Cloud Mountain. Chi Xiao is at the Sky Realm. We will be safer if he is here with us. After all, that old man Beiming Shang is eager for the picture too, and was already planning on getting it.”

“Great! We have larger chance of winning if Chi Xiao attends too!” Shi Jian was joyful.

Chi Xiao was Zuo Shi's teacher, and close to the Zuo family. As a Sky Realm Warrior, he could help a lot once he came to Tianyun City and allied with the two families.

Zuo Xue didn't fear that Chi Xiao would keep the secret of the Sky Gate to himself. Though there were many treasures in the God Area, this was also accompanied with incredible dangers. The journey would be much more secure if a Sky Realm Warrior was with them.

The most important thing was; Chi Xiao was an individual!

However greedy he was, he couldn't possess everything in the God Area. On the contrary, a big family like the Beiming Family would take all the advantages.

"Kid, you'd better not attend this year's Martial Competition." Zuo Xu said after some deliberation, "If the Mo family recognizes your face, they would know that we already have half of the picture. Once the other half in the Misty Pavilion is stolen, they will know it was us. Then our two families would be assaulted by everybody."

"Well, this..." Shi Jian hesitated, but at last he nodded helplessly, "Hmm, for the Sky Gate's sake, we have to do this."

"Not exactly; He can attend the Martial Competition once he changes his appearance. No one from the Mo family has seen him before. Just change his face. Who would know that he was the boy who killed Karu." Zuo Shi suggested with a big smile, blinking her eyes.

"Hey! Good idea!" Shi Jian's eye's blinked. After examining Shi Yan for a while, he said, "His appearance has changed a lot in the past few months, and the people from the Mo family won't identify him if we put a little makeup to him."

"And you better take action during the Martial Competition. Han Zhong said the Misty Pavilion will also send some people to the

competition. During the Competition, if you send some experts with Chi Xiao to the Misty Pavilion to steal the picture, you may not be suspected.”

Shi Yan thought for a while, and also uttered his opinion.

“We can take action in the middle of the Martial Competition...”

Zuo Xu mumbled something and then replied loudly, “Sounds great! Let’s do it during the Martial Competition! We will also be present then, and no one will know it was us who robbed the Misty Pavilion! Hmm. Once Chi Xiao helps us, we will have an eighty percent possibility of getting the other half of that picture.”

“Will Chi Xiao help us?” Shi Jian was not sure.

“Don’t worry. He definitely will. That old guy is very interested in the Sky Gate, thus he will come right away from Cloud Mountain as soon as he gets the news.” Zuo Shi didn’t worry at all, “I know him too well. He is more curious than anyone about unknown things.”

“Then it’s fixed!”

Shi Jian was assured, he then took the picture back from Zuo Xu, and put it into his own pocket happily, “Brother Zuo, it’s time for you to go back and make preparations. I’ll be waiting for Chi Xiao to get the other half and come to complete mine. Hahahahaha!”

“Great!” Zuo Xu nodded with satisfaction. He pulled Zuo Shi, “Let’s go, we should plan on it.”

“Let me keep the picture. You should do nothing but training! I will find someone tomorrow to come and change your appearance. You should beat the Mo descendants hard!” Shi Jian yelled.

“Okay.”

...

In the Mo family.

Mo Tuo was strolling around the Thunder Palace with a rigid

face. Beside him stood Mo Chaoge and Mo Yanyu.

Mo Yanyu's pretty face was full of bitterness, so was Mo Chaoge, as he lowered his head.

“Why can't we find him? Are you so useless? You can't even find a boy who has no background! We have so many people in every city! Do they only know how to waste our resources?” Mo Tuo berated loudly. He pointed at Mo Chaoge and Mo Yanyu and yelled furiously, “You two! You have made so much trouble over such a small task! You are more like two rice buckets!”

[TL note: a 'rice bucket' is a chinese slang term for a useless person]

“Father, I've sent people to search, and our people in Silent Town never took a single day off. But the Merchant Union is too vast. Who knows where that boy has gone? I did my best!”

“Useless! All useless!”

Mo Tuo cursed loudly for about ten minutes, before finally tiring, and he sighed helplessly, “Seems I have to pay a visit to the Beiming family in person.”

“Father, will we not receive anything if Beiming Shang knows about it?”

“Do you have any better ideas?” Mo Tuo looked so gloomy that he could swallow a monster, “Do you think I want to? If you hadn't let that guy escape, I wouldn't need to visit Beiming Shang! Only Mu Yu Die knows who that young boy who killed Karu is! Only her! And only she may know where that boy is now. Do you think I would need to do this if you weren't so useless? Crap!”

“Father, sorry, I was wrong.” Mo Chaoge pleaded miserably. Then he turned and stared at Mo Yanyu hard, “If you can't win the Martial Competition, your father can't help you either!”

Mo Yanyu nodded hastily with her face full of fear.

...

In the Beiming family.

At the centre of an artificial lake, there was a medium sized island covered with bamboo houses.

In the garden of one of the bamboo houses, Mu Yu Die was sitting, feeling soft breeze on her skin and focusing her nimble fingers on the zither.

The melodious zither melody rippled out slowly, attracting the birds on the clear lake, which gathered in the garden and forgot to leave.

Di Yalan was in the training field of another garden. With a long sword in her hand which was splashing fire, she was training with a certain Martial Skill. Her hot figure was sending out intoxicating charisma in the sunlight.

At the bank of the lake, every passing warrior would stop and stare, gazing at the island with eager eyes and a captured face.

“Sister Lan, how is this Fire Cloud Sword?” After a piece of music, Mu Yu Die approached Di Yalan with a big smile, “The Beiming family is known for its expertise in making weapons. Even in our Fire Empire, no one is better at it than the Beiming family.”

“The Fire Cloud Sword is a Mystery Level weapon, which can really help me release all of my strength when accompanied with the Fire Cloud Formula. More specifically, it can bear the fire from my Blue Magic Flame. It’s really good.” Di Yalan nodded. Apparently she was very satisfied with her new weapon.

“So, are you still regretting coming with me?”

“Alas...”

Di Yalan shook her head and an image appeared in her mind again. She barely smiled, “It’s useless to say these things now. I’m afraid I won’t see him again in this life. For revenge, for our

family's prosperity, I have to do this. It's just... just can't..."

"Can't let it go?"

"Yeah."

"Sometimes, I miss him too..."

Mu Yu Die let out a rare sigh as well, "I feel that I owe him. But what could we do? We are only two girls who have lost their family and are saddled with a heavy mission. We have to be realistic and choose a powerful party. Or we will spend our whole life as a commoner and live a boring life."

"He is not common at all! Sometimes I feel he is more horrifying than Beiming Ce! He won't be any worse off than others if he has the opportunity."

"Unluckily God didn't give him an opportunity. If he wants to succeed, he needs to advance step by step since he doesn't have a big family supporting him. We can't wait for too long."

"I know. That's why I'm here with you, and not with him."

...

"Miss Mu, the family head has invited you and Miss Di Yalan to the Ice Pavilion. It is an important talk!" At the centre of lake, a warrior was standing on a boat and shouting at the island.

"Okay." Mu Yu Die replied, as she frowned in puzzlement, "Why does he ask for us? We never made an appearance since we arrived at the Beiming family. This unexpected invitation is very strange..."

"He is going to talk about your marriage with Beiming Ce?" Di Yalan assumed.

"I won't marry Beiming Ce if they don't help me get my revenge!" Mu Yu Die humphed coldly, "I came to the Beiming family for their ability to help in my revenge. I feel nothing for Beiming Ce at all. Even if I fall in love with him in the future, I will

leave sooner or later. Humph!”

Chapter 59 - The Situation Surges

Beiming family, Ice Pavilion

The Ice Pavilion was made of Snow Ice Stones which were naturally gelid stones, even on a hot summer day, it would still be radiating freezing cold energy.

The Ice Pavilion was made up of nine levels, each as tall as ten zhang. Overflowing with freezing air, it looked like a frigid ice mountain.

[TL note: one zhang 丈 is approximately ten feet]

This was where Beiming Shang usually trained at.

The Beiming family's Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit, was cold in nature. Cultivating in an Ice Pavilion made of Snow Ice Stones was incredibly beneficial to the Beiming family's Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit.

Usually, unless tempering himself with a secret treasure, Beiming Shang would never leave the Ice Pavilion.

Everyone who wished to meet the Beiming family head had to endure the cold energy of the Ice Pavilion in order to see him.

Beiming Shang would never take into account the feelings of others, he would only make others accommodate him.

As you go up levels in the Ice Pavilion, the cold energy gets worse, even when the ordinary sons of the Beiming family come to visit, they would only wait at the third or fourth level. If they kept going up, it would be too much for their body to handle.

Level six of the Ice Pavilion.

In the middle of the erect ice pillars, sat the hulking Beiming Shang, his body was shrouded by lingering cold energy. On the ice pillars of the sixth level, strange ice flames were burning bright, making the freezing energy even more chilling to the bones.

Mo Tuo furrowed his eyebrows, and stood across from Beiming Shang. Next to him was the handsome Beiming Ce.

Yin Kui and Jiu San were like two ghastly shadows, sitting behind two ice pillars. They lowered their heads, as if already asleep.

Lead by one of the warriors in the Ice Pavilion, Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan entered the sixth level of the Ice Pavilion.

The cold energy of this level had twice the strength of the fifth level!

The two girls took one step into the sixth level, and their delicate bodies shook, as if stepping into an ice pit, while their limbs began to slowly stiffen.

“You’re here.” Beiming Ce stepped forward, and shot a meaningful glance at Mu Yu Die, “This is my grandpa, and this... is the head of the Mo family,”

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan’s faces simultaneously changed, the two of them looked at Mo Tuo, as their expressions became stiff as stone.

The death of Luo Hao and Hu Long was described very clearly. Aside from the intervention of Bernard and the Crescent Emissaries of the Dark World, there were also strikes of lightning from the sky.

Afterwards the two girls had seen Mo Chaoge, they knew that Mo Chaoge definitely had something to do with Luo Hao’s death.

Unfortunately the Mo family held a great amount of power in the Merchant Union, and they also had connections with the Beiming family. When Beiming Ce simply shouted at Mo Chaoge to go away, he clearly didn’t want to get into a difficult situation with the Mo family, and he had no intention of speaking out for the girls.

Now they suddenly encountered the head of the Mo family with

the Beiming family, Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan felt displeased. However, in front of Beiming Shang, there was nothing they could really do, so they only sulked in secrecy.

“Nice to see you Grandpa Shang.” Together Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan bowed to Beiming Shang, purposely ignoring Mo Tuo.

Mo Tuo looked as usual, with a slight smile on his lips, as if he didn’t mind the disregard at all.

“I heard the two of you were in the Dark Forest, you stayed with some boy for a while? I want to discuss certain things about this boy, would you happen to know his background?” Beiming Shang lightly nodded, his long thin eyes expressionless, and asked straight to the point.

Mu Yu Die’s heart shuddered, she hesitated, then said, “Only an insignificant little warrior, how did Grandpa Shang come to know about such a person?”

“He has something I want.” Beiming Shang furrowed his eyebrows, and said: “Do you know where he comes from?”

Shaking her head, Mu Yu Die responded, “I don’t know, we met him along the road. We only travelled together because we were afraid of the beasts killing people. As for this person’s background, I have no idea. All I know is that his name is Ding Yan, I think he’s some ordinary warrior from the merchant union.”

“Ding Yan...” Beiming Shang nodded, then paused for a moment and said, “Do you know which city he is from, or which region he goes around?”

“I don’t know.” Mu Yu Die shook her head again.

Beiming Shang suddenly became silent, after a moment, he spoke faintly, “Okay, there’s nothing else. In some time, the Martial Competition is going to be held. You two and Ce should go and watch. If you stay here all the time, I think you all will get bored. Your grandpa and I had some friendship back in the day, and now

that he's gone, of course I will take care of you. Don't worry, the people of the Dark World can't touch you here in the Merchant Union."

"Thank you, Grandpa Shang." Mu Yu Die's eyes moistened, her voice sobbing lightly, "Whenever I think of what happened to our family, I want to burn those people alive! Hundreds of people in the Mu family, all slaughtered in one night, Grandpa Shang, you have to help me!"

"You can't rush such things, we'll talk about it later." Beiming Shang nodded, waving his hand as he said, "You can go rest, this level is too cold, with your capability it will be too hard to bear."

"Yes." Without further ado, Mu Yu Die bowed and lightly pulled on Di Yalan's clothes. The two exited together.

"Could that girl have hidden the truth?" After the girls left, Mo Tuo spoke with furrowed brows: "With only a name, it would be very difficult to search."

"Ce, what do you think?" Beiming Shang looked at Beiming Ce.

"Doesn't look like she's lying, I can keep asking her some other time. Since the other fragment is still at Misty Pavilion, we don't need to rush" Beiming Ce responded.

Beiming Shang nodded, and said, "Okay, you keep an eye on those two girls, remember don't get manipulated, I don't want you to become someone else's weapon. Do you understand?"

"I know, Grandpa." Beiming Ce smiled.

"Brother Mo, you don't need to be so anxious, I'll notify the Shi and Zuo families, and let them both look for Ding Yan. Don't worry, I'll use my name to search for him, you won't get involved." Beiming Shang said unyieldingly, "Together with the five great families of the Merchant Union, I do not believe that we can't find a mere commoner! Humph. Remember, send someone to bring that brat's portrait. As long as he still lives, there's no way he

can hide.”

“Okay, then I will leave now.” Mo Tuo nodded, and left without any further ado.

“Ce, keep an eye on Zuo Shi from the Zuo family. Now that she has connections with Chi Xiao, if you can take Zuo Shi as your wife, it will be much less troublesome for us.” After Mo Tuo left, Beiming Shang glanced over at Beiming Ce, and said, “That girl’s natural gifts are quite extraordinary, and she’s also Zuo Xu’s little sweetheart, quite a capricious one. If you can rein her in, that old man Zuo Xu won’t be able to do a thing, they’ll be bound to the Beiming family.”

“No need to worry, one at a time.” Beiming Ce said with confidence.

Nodding, Beiming Ce continued, “That Mu Yu Die girl is also quite talented, but although her Musical Martial Spirit is strong, it’s not of much assistance to the Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit of our Beiming family. However, that Di Yalan has the Blue Martial Flame Martial Spirit, it could be complementary to our family’s Martial Spirit, so you have to keep a close watch on that girl, and if you can, bond with her. She might be able to give birth to an outstanding offspring of our Beiming family.”

“Don’t worry Grandpa, the things I have my eye on can never escape from me.”

“Alright, since they entered into our Beiming family, they can’t even think about leaving.”

...

The Zuo family.

Zuo Xu was in his room, leisurely drinking tea. Behind him, a dark shadow suddenly knelt down and reported, “Beiming Shang sent a messenger, he requested us to find a boy named ‘Ding Yan’, saying that he stole something from the Beiming family, and they

will give us five Mystery Level weapons for the boy.”

“Five Mystery Level weapons.” Zuo Xu took a sip of tea, and smiled, “Beiming Shang is as stingy as usual, using five Mystery Level weapons he wants to get the other half of the map to the ‘Gate of Heaven’, he’s sure playing it well.”

“Master, what should we do?”

“Search for him, of course. Let our people spread the word in some cities, but don’t put too much effort into it, just finding some random dude named ‘Ding Yan’ will do, just so that guy doesn’t get suspicious.”

“Understood.”

...

The Shi family.

Shi Jian received the same message, he held the envelope and sneered: “So Mo Tuo has found Beiming Shang. Hmph! Luckily that little brat Shi Yan told me the truth, or else I’d be in the dark about this too. Beiming Shang oh Beiming Shang, you would never believe that Ding Yan is Shi Yan. Asking me to search him out, hehe, then I’ll sure help him look!”

“How?” Han Feng said faintly.

“Find a few people connected to the Mo family, make them mute, just say that they’re all called Ding Yan and send them to the Beiming family.”

“Yes.”

...

The Beiming, Zuo, Mo, Shi, and Ling families, as the Merchant Union’s five great families, started to both openly and secretly search for a guy named ‘Ding Yan’ in the nearby cities.

In a short time, the name ‘Ding Yan’ quickly became widespread.

Many of those named ‘Ding Yan’ were doomed, all taken by the five families. And many who were not named ‘Ding Yan’ but were related to the Mo family, also encountered unexpected calamities, they were beaten and crippled, forcibly muted, and escorted to the Beiming family.

Since the Martial Competition was about to start, the warriors in the Merchant Union had been grinding their fists, and those warriors from far away, were traveling thousands of miles to come to the Martial Competition.

What was funny was that a lot of these warriors who came, because their name was ‘Ding Yan’, were immediately taken by the five families.

After one night, ‘Ding Yan’ became the street villain, and everyone wanted to beat him up.

And the person who started all of this, Shi Yan, had been staying in the Shi family’s heavy weight room, jabbing his hand into a metal sand bag tens of thousands of times a day.

“Puchi!”

Shi Yan jabbed his five fingers straight in, arm deep, into the centre of the metal sand bag. He pulled out his arm, and those five fingers actually glinted with strange chilly light, as if they were blades made of steel, which was very frightening.

“Hmm, the Martial Competition is about to start, and the storm from the Misty Pavilion is coming. My [Finger Gun], is finally having some success.”

Chapter 60 - The Endless Sea

At the Misty Pavilion.

The Misty Pavilion was a mysterious power which primarily held auctions, selling all sorts of rare training materials for warriors. It had opened its only shop in Tianyun City in the Merchant Union.

It was rumoured that the Misty Pavilion was supported by warriors from the Endless Sea. The Endless Sea, a vast ocean, was located to the east of the Merchant Union.

There were thousands of islands in the Endless Sea, which were scattered like stars. Some large islands were even vaster than the Fire Empire and the God-blessed Empire combined.

Warriors from the Endless Sea rarely came to the Grace Mainland, for they looked for higher things. There were numerous experts there, and they all had a powerful family or power behind them.

It was said that there were even expert warriors who were above the Spirit Realm.

On that day, at the entrance of the Misty Pavilion, stood the manager. Ku Luo was a warrior of the First Sky of the Nirvana Realm, and had been in charge of the Misty Pavilion for many years.

For many people, Ku Luo was the master of the Misty Pavilion.

But today, Ku Luo was standing with several important members of the Misty Pavilion, seeming to wait for someone important.

Time passed.

It was dusk. Though Ku Luo had waited for a whole day, he didn't show any impatience on his face.

“Father, how long do we have to wait? Who are we waiting for?” Ku Luo's only son Ku Ban grunted in discontent, “This guy is too

pretentious! He is making us wait for so long!”

“Kid, you were born in the Merchant Union, so you have no idea how big the world is! Don’t think that the Beiming Family is the biggest family oin the mainland. Compared to the prominent families in the Endless Sea, the Beiming Family is nothing!”

Ku Luo stared at his son and said coldly, “I am from the Endless Sea. And it was the Xia Family who sent me here to take charge of the Misty Pavilion. The person we are waiting for is Xia Xinyan of the Xia Family. She is my master. If it weren’t for the fragmented map of the Sky Gate, she wouldn’t even spend her precious time visiting us from thousands of miles away.”

“Father, aren’t we at the center of the Grace Mainland?” Ku Ban was stunned. After a long while, he asked in surprise.

“Here? The center of the Grace Mainland?” Ku Luo sneered as he shook his head, “The Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire, and the Merchant Union are on the outskirts of the Grace Mainland. How would they be at the center of it? Remember! The Grace Mainland is far more vast than what you imagined. Well, the so-called experts here, are merely considered low level warriors outside this country!”

“What?” Ku Ban couldn’t believe what he heard.

As the sun faded gradually, the moon climbed up the dark sky. Under the bright moonlight, Ku Ban was still waiting patiently.

At midnight, three shadows appeared from the long street.

Under the red lanterns on the road side, the three shadows looked like hideous ghosts, swaying spookily.

“Here they are! Listen, don’t utter a single word!” Ku Luo announced in a low voice.

The person in the lead was a slim woman wrapped up by a black gown and a broad bamboo hat, so her face could not be seen.

Beside that woman were two giant men who were about two meters tall, and looked exactly the same; they were twins.

The two huge tower-like men had dark skin and a masculine aura, but they moved really fast, giving the impression that they weighed nothing.

“Miss, you have finally arrived.” Ku Luo bowed and said respectfully, “Ku Luo has been waiting for you for a long time.”

“Let’s get inside first.”

A melodious voice came from under the bamboo hat. That woman didn’t waste one more word, as her slim body passed Ku Luo, and directly headed inside the Misty Pavilion. It looked like she could be the master wherever she was!

“Yes, Miss.” Ku Luo nodded with a smile, then he followed her at her pace, feeling relieved.

In the inner garden of the Misty Pavilion, in a quiet room.

The woman in the black gown sat down on the seat at the center of the room, which was prepared for the Master. After the two huge men found their positions to stand behind her, she waved her hands, “Ku Luo stays here. Everyone else is dismissed.”

“Leave us alone.” Ku Luo announced to those men loudly, and specially stared at his son, Ku Ban.

Ku Luo was the manager of the Misty Pavilion, so after his announcement, they quickly left the room.

Ku Luo entered and gave a salute to the woman, then quickly took out an account book from his chest pocket, handing it to the woman with two hands, “This is the accounts for the past ten-some years. Miss, please check.”

“Well, put it away. I haven’t come for the accounts.”

Then she leisurely waved her hand and took off the bamboo hat. An extremely beautiful face appeared. She frowned with her pretty

eyebrows, and said softly, “Show me the fragmented map.”

“Yes.” Ku Luo immediately took out the fragmented map of the Sky Gate from underneath his clothes and handed it to her respectfully.

Xia Xinyan picked the map with her jade like fingers, glanced at it once, and nodded softly, “Good, from its old look it seems to be authentic.”

“Miss, there are also three Nutrition Pills and one Blood Magical Crystal, which were sent by the Immortal Yang Family through Empty Strategy. They said it’s for you.”

Ku Luo took out those things mentioned before and handed them respectfully to Xia Xinyan, “Miss, it’s enough for you to handle the situation here with the three Nutrition Pills. You will be heavily hurt every time you operate the Incarnation Martial Spirit; but with these, you will be fine.”

“Well, the Yang Family is literally generous, and pretentious!” Xia grunted, “The Misty Pavilion doesn’t belong to the Xia Family exclusively. The Yang Family is also a heavy stockholder. They don’t even send a man here but three Nutrition Pills? Haha. They trust me so much.”

As she spoke, Xia Xinyan put away the three red longan-sized Nutrition Pills. Stroking the Blood Magical Crystal, she asked, “And what about this Blood Magical Crystal?”

“The Yang Family has requested you to look for a person. The family head of the Yang Family, Yang Qingdi, said his grandson Yang Hai is still alive in this place, as he perceived through the [Blood Search] skill. So he has asked you to find him. The three Nutrition Pills are payment.” Ku Luo lowered his head as he answered in a low voice, not daring to look at her.

“What?” Xia Xinyan exclaimed in indignation, and she said coldly, “Hehe, I wondered why they were they so generous! They

want me to do this difficult thing for them for three Nutrition Pills? Too bossy!”

Ku Luo kept his head lowered, not daring to say anything.

“Miss, fifty years ago, Yang Qingdi and his experts entered the Fourth Demon Area, where his son, Yang Xiao, died in a battle. Moreover, Yang Xiao’s wife gave birth to an infant there. After Yang Qingdi killed a Demon King in the Fourth Demon Area, the other three Demon Kings allied to chase him out, and his daughter-in-law died soon after. Yang Qingdi assumed he was about to die, so he broke the space with [Blood Escape] skill and threw that infant out of the Fourth Demon Area.”

One of the huge men explained with his rusty voice.

“And then?” Xia Xinyan frowned slightly, and asked nonchalantly.

That huge man paused, thought for a while, and continued, “After he threw out that infant, Yang Qingdi stayed in the ‘Fourth Demon Area’ for another twenty years, encircled by the other three Demon Kings. But luckily he escaped and came out of the Fourth Demon Area alive, though he was badly hurt. Recently, Yang Qingdi finished his secret training and came out as a Spirit Realm Warrior. He had saved one drop of blood from the infant when he threw him out of the Fourth Demon Area, so he perceived through [Blood Search] skill that his grandson is in the Merchant Union. That’s why he sent the three Nutrition Pills as the payment. He cares about the Yang descendent.”

“The three Demon Kings in the Fourth Demon Area seemed to have a big plan recently, so I guess Yang Qingdi has been too busy to search for the infant in person.” The other huge man added.

“Yes, they sent a message that one of the three Shura Kings, Xiao Hanyi, had already set off from the Immortal Island with fifty Shura escorts. They will arrive in at most one month, and hope that you could find the infant before they arrive.” Ku Luo said

slowly with deference.

“Shura King, Xiao Hanyi! Fifty Shura escorts!” Xia Xinyan sneered, “Seems like Yang Qingdi really cares about that infant!”

“The Yang Family is so domineering in the Endless Sea, thus they offended a lot of people. For the past few years, they were busy fighting with the Fourth Demon Area and lost a lot of descendents who possess the Immortal Martial Spirit. That infant is Yang Qingdi’s direct grandson left by Yang Xiao, sure enough, he takes it to heart.” One of the huge men responded.

“Ku Luo, from now on, I will take charge of the Misty Pavilion, and you will go look for his grandson discreetly. The Shura King, Xiao Hanyi is coming. I can’t take the three Nutrition Pills if we can’t find Yang Hai before he arrives. You understand?” Xia Xinyan looked at Ku Luo indifferently.

“Yes, I got it.” Ku Luo nodded.

“I will keep the Blood Magical Crystal. After you find all those men called Yang Hai, bring them to the Misty Pavilion and then with Yang Qingdi’s Blood Magical Crystal, we will know who is the Yang Hai we want.” Xia Xinyan said with an indifferent face as she stroked the Blood Magical Crystal.

“Okay, I will go right away.” Ku Luo bowed and left, while sighing to himself bitterly, “The five big families are looking for Ding Yan, and I have to go look for Yang Hai. It’s so boisterous in the Merchant Union.”

Chapter 61 - Leaders of the Third Generation

The Merchant Union was becoming quite lively.

The five families were still trying to find a guy named ‘Ding Yan’, when the Misty Pavilion also stepped in, searching everywhere for someone named ‘Yang Hai’. But the Misty Pavilion was not as outrageous in their search, they adopted the bribing method. As long as you can prove that your name is Yang Hai, you can come to the Misty Pavilion to receive a thousand purple crystal coins.

Since the Martial Competition was about to be held, there was an endless stream of people in the Merchant Union. Although the actions of the five families and the Misty Pavilion confused many, most people still came for the Martial Competition.

Quickly, the restaurants and inns of Tianyun City were packed.

The warriors and mercenaries that come from the Dark Forest, Dead Swamp and Cloud Mountain were all hardened fighters. Even in Tianyun City they were restless, often causing conflicts, and killing each other.

Be it day or night, there were more than enough fighting warriors in Tianyun City. Every morning, the cleaning staff would often find new corpses in the ditches.

Three more days remained until the Martial Competition.

Early in the morning, Zuo Xu was resting with his eyes closed, when he heard Zuo Shi speaking outside, “Huh, old man you came?”

“How many times did I tell you, don’t call me old man in front of others!” From outside came Chi Xiao’s frustrated voice.

“You are just a little old man, it’s an old habit, I can’t change it.” Zuo Shi wasn’t afraid of him, as she laughed outside the doors.

Zuo Xu was suddenly excited as he suddenly stood up and rushed

out to greet the guest. “You’re finally here!” he thought.

...

The Shi family

In the heavy weights room stood a wrinkled old crone. She held a paintbrush, and was putting a few heavy marks on Shi Yan’s brows.

Shi Yan stood in silence, carefully watching the old crone’s actions.

After a long while, the crone took back her hand. She stared closely at Shi Yan for a while, and then nodded in satisfaction, “During my visit every day, I have been changing his appearance slightly each time. Even those who are close to him wouldn’t notice such slow changes. His appearance now is much different from how it was a month ago, and nobody would be able to recognize him.”

Shi Yan’s skin was a lot darker now, his brows thick, and his figure looked quite a bit sturdier.

From how he had looked before, he now looked less fierce and more rugged. Whether it be appearance or temperament, there was a significant change.

Especially after coming back from the Dark Forest, he had grown taller and became more robust. Plus he got fixed up by the disguise artist. Compared with the time when he was in the Dark Forest, he truly looked like another person.

Shi Jian stared at Shi Yan for a moment, then nodded and said, “Good, there should be no problem.”

Shi Yan observed himself in the mirror, and was also quite satisfied: “Alright, hmm, isn’t the Martial Competition starting?”

“Three more days, so you don’t need to train hard these three days, just relax a little bit.” Shi Jian finally let go, but suddenly he

thought of something, and then rebuked with a straight face, “Relaxing does not mean fooling around! Don’t think for a moment that I don’t know what you and Han Zhong did together! Hmph, if you waste your energy on women, I’ll skin you alive!”

“Stop nagging.” Shi Yan looked annoyed and said, “I’ll go take a shower, then go drink a little with Han Zhong. Is that okay with you?”

“Okay.”

...

Spring Pavilion

This was a very well-known restaurant in Tianyun city. Here not only was the food delicious, but they had the famous ‘Flame’ wine that was popular throughout the Merchant Union.

Aside from that, the Spring Pavilion was also close to the Moon Lake. Sitting in the open third floor of the Spring Pavilion, eating delicacies, drinking fine wine, and enjoying the beautiful view, was a great pleasure in life.

If you could hold a beauty in your arms at the same time, then that would be called perfection.

However, not just anyone can get to the third floor of the Spring Pavilion. Even if you were rich enough, without status, you’d only be allowed up to the second floor.

The third floor of the Spring Pavilion was usually reserved for guests from the five families. Only those from the five families could head straight to third floor when they came in, normal merchants would not have such an honor.

Han Zhong led Shi Yan to the Spring Pavilion. After they arrived, a cute receptionist immediately came over smiling, “Mister Han, please step upstairs.”

Han Zhong squinted as his eyes circled the girl, and

complimented: “Xiao Feng, your thing got a lot bigger!” Then he stopped, and lasciviously stared at the girl’s breasts.

“You’re the worst, Mister Han, always staring at that place.” The girl smiled shyly, having a style of her own. She pointed up and said: “There are other guests up there, they are the young masters and mistresses of the Mo and Ling families. Mister Han, you should be prepared.”

“No worries.” Han Zhong smiled, and stopped teasing the girl. He grabbed Shi Yan and brought him straight up the third floor.

“Hey!” A tall lad wearing a navy warrior outfit sat at a good seat on the third floor, and squinted at Han Zhong, and sneered, “Here I was thinking who could it be, and it’s the Shi family’s dog.”

That seat faces right towards the Moon Lake. There sat four people, two men and two women, all looking quite attractive.

One of the group looked aloof and arrogant, and that was Mo Yanyu, but she wasn’t looking this way, her motionless eyes was only staring into the sun-blazed Moon Lake, and looked like she was in a daze.

“Oh, so these are the worms of the Mo family, how fucking unlucky.” Han Zhong shook his head, stopped paying attention to them, and dragged Shi Yan to find a good spot. He yelled, “Mr. Long! Bring four jugs of ‘Flame’, and a nice course of dishes, hurry up.”

“Coming right up!” A hearty voice answered from the second floor.

At this time, Mo Yanyu, who was staring at the Moon Lake looked like she finally woke up. She turned her head around and glanced at Han Zhong and Shi Yan. She threw a look of disdain, then turned her head back and continued staring at the lake water. Nobody knew what she was thinking.

Across from Mo Yanyu sat a handsome young man.

The young man had an amiable smile. While talking to one young master of the Mo family, he was also secretly paying attention to Mo Yanyu, as if trying to grab her attention with his words. However he was unsuccessful.

“Shao Feng, Xiao Yu was recently punished by my father, she’s been in a bad mood lately, don’t mind her.” Mo Zhan toasted him, and then said, “Don’t care about him, let us drink more. The Martial Competition is about to start, so these few days we can slack off a bit, treat yourself well.”

“Brother Zhan, when have you mistreated yourself?” Ling Yue Yue shrewdly looked at Mo Zhan, with a cunning smile on her face “I heard that Brother Zhan is great at going to those ‘Pleasure Quarters’! When would you enrich me a little on your experience?”

“Cough cough cough!” Mo Zhan choked on his wine, and said awkwardly, “Yue Yue, trust me, I’m innocent! I’m not familiar with those places! That was the only time I went was because I was tricked, Yue Yue, you have to trust me!”

“Teehee, who knows if you’re lying or not.” Ling Yue Yue was still smiling, but her eyes showed some other expression, “A while ago, I was praised by my sisters. They said my fiancé already has dozens of mistresses before marrying me; they said I would have so many maids to serve me in the future. Oh, just thinking of it makes me happy.”

“Cough cough cough!”

Mo Zhan’s expression was a little stiff, his face darkened and said, “Who is talking bad about me behind my back? If I find out who it is, I will skin him alive!”

“Alright, Yue Yue!” Ling Shao Feng glared at his sister, “Brother Zhan is a man, sometimes treating people with courtesy is inevitable. I trust Brother Zhan’s conduct!”

“Of course you’d trust him.” Ling Yue Yue lightly snorted, and

murmured quietly, “Everyone knows that you guys always go there together, of course you would trust him.”

Upon hearing this, Mo Yanyu glanced over at Ling Shao Feng, and her brows slightly furrowed, as if she was irritated. However she didn’t say much, and again turned her head towards Moon Lake, her expression growing colder.

“I’ll deal with you when we get home!”

Ling Shao Feng glared at Ling Yue Yue, as he anxiously changed the topic, and said to Mo Zhan, “Brother Zhan, that Shi Tianyun is also in the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, he’s even better than Shi Tianke, and I heard he has been training very hard lately. At the last Martial Competition, he didn’t show up, but this time he’ll definitely be there. Even though you won against Shi Tianke that time, you shouldn’t let down your guard this time around.”

“Don’t worry, those guys from the third generation of the Shi family can’t be placed in my eyes!” Mo Zhan smiled with arrogance, coldly glancing over to where Han Zhong was, and said, “Just watch, this year’s Martial Competition, I’ll cripple whoever comes in my way!”

“Yeah, sure enough, Brother Zhan has the heroic spirit!” Ling Shao Feng laughed. He held up his cup and said, “Come on, Brother Zhan, cheers!”

...

“Those four over there, are Ling Shao Feng, Ling Yue Yue, Mo Zhan and Mo Yanyu. They are all the leaders of the third generations of the Mo and Ling families, and they might become your opponents in the Martial Competition. Among them, Ling Shao Feng and Mo Yanyu are engaged, and that Mo Zhan and Ling Yue Yue are also engaged. Mo Zhan and Ling Shao Feng are both at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. Mo Yanyu is slightly worse, but still has a cultivation of the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm.”

Han Zhong lowered his voice, and explained the situation to Shi Yan. He paused and then said, “But, the one you should least underestimate is that Ling Yue Yue! We got the news a while ago that this girl broke through to the Human Realm half a year ago, and now she’s the strongest one in the third generation of the Ling family. This year’s Martial Competition, the Ling family might arrange to have Ling Yue Yue fight against Zuo Shi. Apparently, to make Ling Yue Yue win, the Ling family have spent a hell lot on her, not only buying the most expensive medicines, but they also gave her a few secret treasures to defend herself. Zuo Shi might be in a lot of trouble this time.”

“Not necessarily.” Shi Yan smiled, casually glancing at Ling Yue Yue, and spoke in a low voice, “Zuo Shi is much more fierce than she is, just watch, she’s going to lose really badly.”

Zuo Shi had now obtained the Dragon Turtle Pills and the [Basalt Scriptures], plus the ‘Dragon Turtle Armor’, which Han Zhong did not know about.

With all these things to rely on, Zuo Shi had a nine out of ten chance of winning, and besides, Zuo Shi’s realm was a little higher than Ling Yue Yue’s.

“That kid, what are you talking about?”

At this moment, Ling Yue Yue suddenly stood up and sneered, “Are you saying that I’m not as good as Zuo Shi? You think I didn’t hear that? I’m telling you, my hearing is clear as ever! Talking about people behind their backs, people from the Shi family, are you all this dirty?”

Chapter 62 - Unrecognized

“Well, Zuo Shi is superior to you. You will definitely lose in the Martial Competition. You are doomed.” Shi Yan glanced at Ling Yue Yue indifferently, without getting angry.

“I’m doomed?” Ling Yue Yue was furious as she sneered, “Who do you think you are? Are you a prophet?”

Shi Yan shook his head and didn’t talk to her again, showing no care for her.

With a rigid face, Mo Zhan stood up from the table and strode toward Shi Yan. As he approached him, he yelled with his head high, “Kid, who are you? I haven’t seen you, you are from the Shi Family too? You want to be ruined before the Martial Competition?”

Shi Yan turned serious as he lowered his voice and asked Han Zhong, “Can I kill him?”

Han Zhong was totally frightened as he quivered suddenly, and asked in haste, “Brother Yan, what are you trying to do?”

Though he had been with Shi Yan for a long time, they had just sought out ‘entertainment’ together. He only knew that Shi Yan recent got Profound Qi and reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm.

Yet he hadn’t seen him fight with others, so he had absolutely no idea how Shi Yan would react to the provocation.

The fact that Shi Yan wanted to kill for such a trivial dispute totally frightened Han Zhong.

He had never thought that this young master, who was the best at ‘entertaining’, would be so brutal in front of his enemies!

Shi Yan glanced at the man, suggesting that he was going to take action.

“Nooo!” Han Zhong hurried to stop him with a face full of terror. He thought to himself, “Though you are at the Nascent Realm, your opponent is an expert too! If you fight bluntly, I can’t help you either. But if you get hurt and can’t attend the Martial Competition, the family head will kill me.”

“No?”

“Definitely no!” Seeing Shi Yan not persuaded, Han Zhong quickly explained, “They are the hopes of the Mo Family and the Ling Family. If they were killed, the two families will sacrifice everything to get revenge! It will be tough as hell then. So cool down.”

“Then, can I cripple him?”

Han Zhong froze, rolled his eyes and smiled bitterly, “Brother Yan, please! If you really want to, then you can vent your frustrations in the Martial Competition. Who knows, you might also win back a mine for the Shi Family. But for now, please don’t be impulsive.”

“Fine.”

Shi Yan didn’t talk anymore, instead he stared at Mo Zhan in front of him, and shouted loudly, “What do you want?”

“Kid, who are you?” After he approached, Mo Zhan didn’t fight, instead he gazed at Shi Yan coldly, “You made my fiancé unhappy! Don’t blame me for my rudeness if you don’t tell me who you are!”

Seeing Mo Zhan there, Ling Yue Yue sat down at the table, looking in this direction with cold eyes and felt surprised.

Her hearing was superior to others, hence even though Shi Yan and Han Zhong lowered their voices, she was still able to hear the words “kill” and “cripple”.

Who on earth is that arrogant guy?

Ling Yue Yue was bewildered. Since she didn’t know who Shi

Yan was, she decided to be cautious. As the Martial Competition was around the corner, she guessed that he was some expert invited by the Shi Family, so she couldn't do anything now.

“Young masters, please don't fight in my Spring Pavilion. I beg you, ok?”

Just then, the stout Manager Long of the Spring Pavilion bowed, as he came up to the third floor. Behind him, several pretty young girls were holding the dishes and wine ordered by Han Zhong.

“You will know who I am in the Martial Competition.” Shi Yan didn't bother to respond to him, but waved at those shy girls and said, “Come here! Display my dishes. I want to have a good meal!”

The girls were frightened. They didn't dare walk up but pleadingly stared at Manager Long.

After Manager Long made an eye contact to them, the girls hurried to serve the dishes on the table and dashed away immediately like frightened birds.

Shi Yan looked indifferent as he opened a jar of wine by himself, filled his wine cup, and drank it up at once. He began to eat, not paying any attention to Mo Zhan who was still standing beside him.

“Young Master Mo, it's not the first time you've been to the Spring Pavilion. I am always good to you. Please, don't make a fuss, okay?” Manager Long bowed as he persuaded Mo Zhan with a miserable face.

“Well, Manager Long. For you, I won't fight today.” Mo Zhan grunted and sneered at Shi Yan, who was eating happily, “Kid, be prepared in the Competition!”

“Okay, I can't wait.” Without raising his head, Shi Yan kept drinking, and filled another cup for Han Zhong, “Come on, Old Han, let's drink.”

Mo Zhan stared at Shi Yan angrily and then left for his own table.

Mo Yanyu was paying attention in this direction for quite some time. Her bright eyes wandered over Shi Yan curiously. After Mo Zhan came back, she withdrew her gaze and looked to the Green Moon Lake, forgetting the episode entirely.

“Deng! Deng! Deng!”

Just then, heavy footsteps sounded from the stairs, which was followed by Beiming Ce’s voice, “Xiao Die, Yalan, the courses in the Spring Pavilion are famous in Tianyun City. You two should have a good taste this time. Well, the Flame Wine is strong, but it’s really different. You can’t afford to miss it!”

Then Beiming Ce showed up, closely followed by Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan.

“Well, it seems I must have a try at the Flame Wine. Hehe, I can just drink a little.” Mu Yu Die was in a white dress, which made her look extraordinarily fresh. She came up slowly to the third floor.

Di Yalan was behind her, looking a little gloomy, seemingly lost in her worries.

Shi Yan, who was drinking, showed a panicked expression on his face as he heard that voice, but quickly went back to normal. Without taking a look at them, he kept drinking with Han Zhong with his head lowered.

Han Zhong was astonished as he saw Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan, for he was a little worried Shi Yan would make trouble again.

“Oh, customers here?” Beiming Ce glanced over the two tables, and continued indifferently, “And all acquaintances.”

The four people including Ling Shao Feng and Mo Zhan became perturbed, as they saw Beiming Ce. They barely smiled and nodded to Beiming Ce as a greeting.

Ling Shao Feng and Mo Zhan also glanced over Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan secretly after they nodded at Beiming Ce, and showed a

surprised face at the same time.

Han Zhong stood up, and nodded at Beiming Ce as well with a smile, “You are not occupied today, Young Master Ce? Hehe, I heard that you rarely stepped out of your home recently?”

“Well, two beauties came and brightened my home, I found it hard to leave.” Beiming Ce smiled slightly, took a look at Shi Yan who was still drinking, and turned to Mu Yu Die, “Let’s take a seat first.”

“Yes.”

“Young Master Ce, this way please!” Manager Long dashed up suddenly with a fat face full of smiles, as he chose a seat for Beiming Ce and shouted downstairs, “Old Guo, Young Master Ce is here today! Prepare the best dishes and wine! Be careful!”

“Haha! Needless to say!” Loud laughing sounds came from downstairs.

Smiles went up from Beiming Ce’s mouth, as apparently, he was satisfied with Manager Long’s attitude. He said softly, “Well, good enough Manager Long. Mind your own business now, I can take care of myself.”

“Great! Well I will cook one or two dishes for you personally. But I haven’t cooked for a long time, so please forgive me if it doesn’t taste good.” Manager Long laughed.

“I’m too lucky.” Beiming Ce laughed as well, “I’m so flattered to have dishes made by you! No matter how it tastes, I will eat it up gratefully.”

“I’m too flattered. So I will go downstairs now?” Manager Long bowed and asked.

“Sure.”

Manager Long then bowed to leave.

...

“I’ve finished.” Mo Yanyu stood up suddenly.

Ling Shao Feng and Mo Zhan looked at each other and stood up as well, so did Ling Yue Yue. The three followed Mo Yanyu and went toward the stairs.

Before he left, Mo Zhan greeted Beiming Ce, “Brother Ce, take your time. I’m afraid we have to leave first.”

“Yeah, take care.” Beiming Ce turned to him casually and continued to chat with Mu Yu Die.

Immediately, the four people from the Mo Family and the Ling Family disappeared from the third floor.

While drinking, Shi Yan was also listening to Beiming Ce and Mu Yu Die chatting, and got a little annoyed. So he yelled at Han Zhong, “Old Han, I’m done. You?”

“Long ago.” Han Zhong knew he was unhappy, so he stood up immediately, and said to Beiming Ce, “Young Master Ce, we got to go.”

“Okay.” Beiming Ce responded indifferently without raising his head, and continued to talk with Mu Yu Die.

“Let’s leave.” Han Zhong pulled Shi Yan, then they walked toward the stairs.

Before he went down stairs, Shi Yan paused at the corner, glanced over at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan coldly, and then disappeared.

Beiming Ce didn’t feel that glance as he sat with his back to Shi Yan. Neither did Mu Yu Die, for she was talking with Beiming Ce.

Only Di Yalan raised her head randomly, and happened to see Shi Yan’s glance. Out of it, she saw some familiar coldness, and scorn.

Di Yalan was surprised and dumbstruck.

After a very long time, she shook her head softly and sighed to herself: Why am I so stupid? How could that guy be him? Except

the eyes, they resemble by nothing! They were two different people! What am I thinking about? What's wrong with me?

Chapter 63 - The Martial Competition

Tianyun City, the God Stone Square.

A small hill-sized, diamond-shaped meteorite stood tall in the God Stone Square. More than half of the meteorite was sunk deep into the ground, and the part that was visible was hundreds of meters tall, making it look very magnificent.

Legends say that this was a piece of the meteorite that fell from the sky thousands of years ago. It crashed right here, where at the time there was no Tianyun City, but merely a piece of wasteland.

It was said that after the meteorite fell from the sky, in the beginning, every night under the glistening moonlight, the meteorite would emit a bright silver light. Later on, this silver light started to dim day by day, and in the last ten years, the meteorite has never shone, appearing just like a normal rock.

The people of the Merchant Union treated this meteorite as a God Stone, and established Tianyun City around it. (天陨 means sky meteor).

It has been many years since then, and now Tianyun City has become a big city and the center of the Merchant Union.

However, even though the meteorite stopped shining in silver brilliance, for the warriors of the Merchant Union, it was a blessing from God, and thus the meteorite was zealously treated as a God Stone.

The God Stone Square was also built from that meteorite.

In the Merchant Union, many couples would come to the God Stone Square and make their vows, with the God Stone as a holy witness to their love.

Every Martial Competition in the Merchant Union, was held in the God Stone Square.

On this day in the God Stone Square, there was an endless stream of crowds. Outside the Square there were countless vendors, many of whom were warriors selling mostly items that were associated with cultivation.

In the God Stone Square

In front of that enormous meteorite were sixteen battle arenas. Each one was about a hundred square meters and was made out of solid green iron. Even warriors in the Human Realm wouldn't be able to break it using all their strength.

Around these sixteen battle arenas stood five tall stone towers.

One of the towers was fifty meters tall, while the other four were forty meters tall. These five towers were equally spaced a hundred meters apart in distance, and on those towers stood the people from the five families, who were able to view all sixteen arenas below.

On one of the stone towers, Shi Yan stood next to Shi Jian, condescendingly looking down upon all the participants around the God Stone Square who came to compete in the Martial Competition.

This stone tower belonged to the Shi family, which was forty meters tall. The other four were for the Beiming, Ling, Zuo and Mo families.

The stone towers belonging to the Ling, Zuo, and Mo families were also forty meters tall, just like that of the Shi family. However, the Beiming family was an exception. Their tower was fifty meters high, a whole lot taller than the other four families' towers.

Just from the height of the stone towers, it could be seen that the Beiming family held an absolutely strong position in the Merchant Union!

This was the first day of the Martial Competition.

The direct descendents of the Shi family; Shi Jian, Shi Tie, and Shi Dang, were all on the stone tower by this time.

The Han Brothers, Han Feng and Han Zhong, were also in the stone tower, plus a few other strangers that Shi Yan didn't know. Through Han Zhong's introductions, Shi Yan learned that those were the loyal subordinates of the Shi family. They usually worked in the city, but were called here because of the Martial Competition.

However, Yang Hai was not in the stone tower, and that was because Yang Hai did not practice Martial Arts. When the Martial Art masters of the other cities were called here, Yang Hai had to go and take charge in case any problems come up while the Martial Competition was being held.

Every year's Martial Competition was separated into five categories: Elementary, Nascent, Human, Disaster, and Earth. However, in the category of Earth Realm there would usually only be one figurehead.

Usually, even the warriors who were unaffiliated to any power, when they managed to reach the Earth Realm, they would have certainly gained their own cultivation opportunities. It was unlikely for them to covet the prizes given by the five families.

An Earth Realm warrior, whether in the Merchant Union, the Fire Empire, or the God-blessed Empire, would be considered a master.

Such warriors wouldn't need to compete in the Martial Competition to obtain a nice cultivation environment. They can just go to any powerful force to become a dedicated warrior.

Even if an Earth Realm warrior didn't join any power, the major forces would still reach out their arm, hoping to recruit the warrior.

Because of this, even though the Martial Competition set a

competing category for Earth Realm warriors, but the warriors that actually came to participate, were nearly nonexistent.

Even the warriors who reached the Disaster Realm would rarely come to the Martial Competition. Every year, there would only be a few warriors that would show up.

The ones who really came for the Martial Competition were mostly at the Elementary, Nascent, or Human Realms.

These three kinds of warriors with lower capabilities were the majority, as they often couldn't find their own cultivation opportunities. Therefore they would have to participate in the Martial Competition in the hope to win some precious cultivation materials, or to obtain a nice position in one of the five families.

The Martial Competition usually lasted for five days.

The first four days were generally for the warriors who came for the prizes. These people would be watched by the five families. Throughout the four days of fighting, the families would choose their favorite warriors and reach out to them.

The last day, however, would be the highlight of the Martial Competition.

On this day, the five families would send their best dedicated warriors and descendents to go compete with the masters of the other families. The five families would test each other's power on the last day of the Martial Competition.

This day, was also the day when the five families would show their strength to others!

And on this day, the fighting was often accompanied with the enormous conflicts of interests and profits, and earth-shaking gambles would often happen.

Mines, commercial streets, treasures, and even bizarre Martial Skills could become the stakes of the five families!

Just one Martial Competition, could lead to one family gaining the most extravagant riches, and could also reduce a family's savings to nothing. The last day of the competition would become a topic that people would talk about for years to come.

This day, the masters from the different families would expose their true capabilities, showing rare Martial Spirits. Also in the intense fighting, different secret treasures might also show up.

Most warriors who came from the outside were also here for the last day of the Martial Competition.

From the fights on last day of the Martial Competition, they could find out the difference between them and the warriors of the five families. Through watching the fierce battles, they could understand their own inadequacies, and find the ways to improve their standards and capabilities.

And they might even be able to raise their own strength through the battles from the Martial Competition.

This was why the Martial Competition attracted so many people!

Shi Yan stood on the stone tower serenely, condescendingly looking down upon the arenas and the many warriors who came to participate.

Two hundred meters away on the tower of the Beiming family, two beautiful figures followed Beiming Ce up the high tower.

On the high tower, Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan stood side-by-side with Beiming Ce. Together they were looking over all of the arenas.

Mu Yu Die wore a white dress, her hair flying in the wind. On the tall tower, her beautiful posture made her look like a fairy on the mainland.

Di Yalan was still in that crimson armor, her hot body was visible underneath the coverage of that armor made her figure look very seductive. Only her eyes looked troubled.

From two hundred meters away, Shi Yan slightly raised his head and shot a glance at the two girls, secretly smiling in disdain.

“Kid, these four days you better carefully watch. You lack experience, so you need to watch how the others fight; don’t just mess around.” As Shi Jian caught him staring at the two girls on the Beiming family’s tower, he snorted as he became displeased, “Women are everywhere, and with what you have, what woman can’t you get in the future. Don’t get distracted before you become strong!”

“Yes, I know what I’m doing.” Shi Yan nodded.

“Brother, Kro from the Misty Pavilion has come to see you.” Shi Tie, who stood near the staircase entrance of the stone tower, suddenly shouted.

“Kro?” Surprise flashed across Shi Jian’s face. He blanked out for a second, but then nodded: “Invite him up.”

“Grandpa, how’s the situation at the Misty Pavilion?” Shi Yan lowered his voice, and secretly asked.

Shi Jian slightly nodded and said, “You shouldn’t care much about this, don’t mention it next time, understand?”

“Okay.” Looking at his expression, Shi Yan knew that Zuo Xu and him must have sorted out all the details. But as Han Feng and all the dedicated warriors were on the tower, Shi Yan was confused as to whether the Shi family sent anyone to help Chi Xiao at the Misty Pavilion or not.

Kro came up with a smile as he calmly walked next to Shi Jian, and said, “Head of the Shi family, I have come to request help from you. I’m wondering where your son Yang Hai is right now, I want to invite him to the Misty Pavilion. Is that alright?”

“Yang Hai?” Shi Jian’s expression darkened as he snorted, but said in confusion, “The Misty Pavilion has been trying to find people named Yang Hai everywhere, what are you trying to do?”

“A friend of mine has come from the Endless Sea. Her older relative lost an infant a very long time ago. The infant is called Yang Hai, and so they requested me to look around for him. Thus I ask for your help, Master Shi.”

Shi Jian’s heart skipped a beat and his eyes flashed with a strange unknown expression. After quite a while he finally shook his head and responded, “Yang Hai is not in Tianyun city right now, because I called many people back for the Martial Competition, Yang Hai is has been taking charge in another city, this... we’ll talk about this some other time.”

“Sure, as long as you’d remember, Master Shi.” Kro didn’t urge deliberately, and smiled, “When he comes back, please allow him to come to the Misty Pavilion, Master Shi, haha, don’t worry, I won’t let him run all this way for nothing.”

“Okay.” Shi Jian indifferently nodded.

“Then I will take my leave.” Kro didn’t stay for long, and after the issues were negotiated, he left straightaway.

Melodious and soothing music came from the tower of the Beiming family.

The heart-warming sound of nature immediately rang throughout every corner of God Stone Square. Mu Yu Die sat crossed-legged on the stone tower of the Beiming family, absorbed in playing the zither.

Many warriors who came to the Martial Competition, were attracted by this ethereal music, and their expression was full of fascination as they looked up at the Beiming family’s stone tower.

Next to Mu Yu Die was Beiming Ce, his expression full of pride, and the corner of his lips showed a trace disdain for all living things. He stood there and accepted the admiring and envious gazes from the many warriors.

Mu Yu Die's music was like a mountain stream, flowing into the hearts of the warriors, as if cleansing their souls.

Just with one song, the warriors were mesmerized, their faces stunned.

Then at this moment.

Beiming Shang suddenly flew from the tall tower, his magnificent figure magically floated on the sky above the God Stone Square, like a God looking down on all human beings. He shouted, "The Martial Competition, officially starts!"

"Walking in mid-air! Sky Realm warrior!"

Many warriors screamed out one by one, their expression in awe, shocked by the capabilities shown by Beiming Shang.

Chapter 64 - The Medicine King, Mu Xun

In the Martial Competition field.

Dozens of warriors of various Realms were competing vigorously in different areas. Streams of bizarre light exploded on the field one after another, as if magical snakes were shuttling above the competition field.

The participants were performing all sorts of rare Martial Skills, and some even startled those people from the five big families.

In the high building of the Shi family.

Standing next to Shi Jian, Shi Yan's eyes were glistening, as he cast his eyes upon those fighting warriors one by one.

As the head of the family, Shi Jian was standing beside him and explaining for him.

As long as Shi Yan showed some interest in one competition area, Shi Jian would soon elaborate on the strength of the two parties, their Martial Skill levels, their competing strategies, and also teaching him the best way to win the fight.

In the stone building, Shi Tie was also illustrating the situation on the competition field, explaining the various Martial Skills, their advantages and disadvantages, the opponent's weaknesses, and how to beat them.

As the leaders of the Shi family, Shi Jian and Shi Tie rarely talked on a normal day, but today they almost never stopped talking.

Shi Yang and Shi Tianxiao were also standing in a corner, while Shi Yang was pointing the warriors in the competition field to Shi Tianxiao, the latter nodding and asking accordingly.

Some ministers who came back from other cities, and those experts from their family branches, were all observing the stone building quietly. As they saw Shi Jian explaining to Shi Yan whole-

heartedly, they were very confused.

“Old Feng, who is that kid? Why does family head treat him so specially?” Standing beside Han Feng, Ku Long observed them for a long while, and finally couldn’t help but ask him about Shi Yan.

Ku Long was one of the ministers of the Shi family who was at the First Sky of the Nirvana Realm. Since he was garrisoned in another city, he didn’t know much about the latest news on Shi Yan. Seeing Shi Jian lay so much stress on Shi Yan, he was quite confused.

“That is Young Master Yan.” Han Feng looked indifferent, as he glanced at Ku Long and said, “The one who used to be always absent from home and busy studying those historic relics. Yeah, Yang Hai and Miss Qing’s son.”

“That’s impossible!”

Ku Long was totally shocked, as he asked in surprise, “That Young Master never trained in Martial Arts, did he? As far as I know, he was more attracted to those odd things and never set his eyes upon Martial Arts. Why would the family head pay attention to him?”

“Young Master Yan is no longer the person he used to be.”

Han Feng narrowed his eyes, and said casually, “You’d better try your best if Young Master Yan asks you to do something. It would be in your best interests.” Though Han Feng knew a lot, he talked little. He wouldn’t have said anything if Ku Long wasn’t his good friend.

Ku Long knew Han Feng’s personality. He was surprised at Han Feng’s speech, and after a long silence, he nodded softly.

He was still confused, but realizing that Shi Yan was favored by the family head, he decided to try and get close to Shi Yan.

Apart from Ku Long, many other ministers and Shi branch families were also secretly discussing about Shi Yan, as they were

all confused why the family head paid so much attention to that unknown boy.

Soon Shi Yan was known to all. This boy, who hadn't been treated specially for seventeen years, was now at the center of the Shi family.

“Grandpa, did Xiao Yan become a warrior for real? And has he reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm?” Seeing Shi Jian favor Shi Yan so much, Shi Tianke, who was standing next to Shi Tie, finally asked.

Shi Tie took a glimpse at them, and nodded, “It is great, Shi Yan is amazing. He has reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm now. He may participate in the martial Competition this year.”

Shi Tie had been focusing on his three grandsons recently, so he didn't pay much attention to Shi Yan. He merely knew that Shi Yan had gained the family Martial Spirit and reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm.

However, he didn't know that Shi Yan had also gained the Immortal Martial Spirit, so he still considered that Shi Jian was putting way too much energy into him.

But he didn't place any further thought into it. After all, Shi Yan was his brother's direct grandson, and Shi Tianxiao was useless. Now that Shi Yan reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, he thought it was reasonable for Shi Jian to be over excited. He was not aware that Shi Yan possessed twin Martial Spirits, and that his Petrification Martial Spirit had advanced to the second stage.

“Tianyun, you should fight against Mo Zhan this year. Last time Tianke lost to him, so your fight will be crucial this time! Or they would assume that we don't have any talented descendents among the third generation!” Shi Tie said to Shi Tianyun who was standing beside him.

“Yes, I will beat Mo Zhan for sure.” Shi Tianyun said with

certainty.

Shi Tianyun was only nineteen years old, but he had reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. He was just like a newborn calf who wasn't afraid of a tiger.

Before Shi Yan was noticed, he was the pride of the Shi family, and Shi Jian would guide him in person now and then. But ever since Shi Yan came back, Shi Jian seldom visited him.

Shi Yan spent seventeen years discovering ancient languages, and seldom stayed at home. He didn't train in Martial Arts, so there was no conflict between him and other people, thus Shi Tianyun never cared about him.

However, Shi Yan stood out now, and Shi Jian's attitude had shifted too much, which made Shi Tianyun a little uncomfortable.

Yet, the Shi family had the formidable outside opponents, such as the Mo family and the Ling family, so the Shi family members, including Shi Jian and Shi Tie, stuck together and got along well. The second generation also allied to defend against the Mo family. Shi Tianyun and Shi Tianxiao often played around.

Thus, although Shi Tianyun was a little uncomfortable, he didn't show a strong reaction. But he had made up his mind to have a perfect performance in the competition, and secure his position as the hope of the Shi family.

"Eh?" Shi Jian suddenly cried, as he was talking to Shi Yan, and his eyes brightened and quickly looked over to someone. Something had suddenly occurred beside the competition field.

"Who came?" Shi Yan frowned, walked up and looked in the direction of Shi Jian.

A troop of seven people were walking in slowly from outside the God Stone Square. The man in lead looked around fifty, with a hawk nose, gloomy face, delicate cap, and a silver gown, on the left shoulder of which was embroidered five types of herbs.

“Level-5 Soul Alchemist!” Shi Yan identified him only by a quick glimpse.

Just like Martial Skills, alchemists were divided into five levels: Mortality, Mystery, Soul, Royalty, and Divinity.

Karu, who was killed by Shi Yan in the Dark Forest, was a mere Mortality Level alchemist, but was treasured by the Mo family. Now that a Soul level alchemist had appeared, he must be an influential one!

“This is Karu’s teacher, the Medicine King, Mu Xun.” Shi Jian glanced over Shi Yan, “He is not only an alchemist of the Soul level, he is also a warrior of the Second Sky of the Nirvana Realm, and the Medicine Valley is a special institution too. Though it doesn’t get involved in fights between various parties, it is closely connected to them.”

The fact that Karu was killed by Shi Yan was known to only a few people. And now that Shi Yan had faked his appearance, fewer people knew his real identity. Shi Jian didn’t worry that Mu Xun would recognize Shi Yan, so he sneered and gloated, “Well, I guess Mu Xun came to look for his stolen fragmented map, and Karu entered the Dark Forest with people from the Mo family. Mu Xun will definitely ask Mo Tuo about that. Haha! This should be an interesting show!”

“The Medicine King, Mu Xun!”

The warriors in the competition field soon recognized this foreign visitor, as they cried out in surprise, and cleared the way for him.

Many other warriors squeezed their way forward and shouted crazily, “Medicine King, I collected lots of herbs, please refine me a pill! Please!”

As soon as the flock heard that, the competition field boiled with excitement. More and more people shouted, asking for Mu Xun’s

help.

People's attention were drawn to Mu Xun at once, and no one set their eyes on the competition field anymore.

On the buildings of the Beiming family, the Zuo family, the Ling family, and the Mo family, many couldn't sit still anymore. Lots of experts rushed down the buildings with their master's' permission and ran to Mu Xun to invite him to watch the competition in their building.

Without Shi Jian's permission, Shi Tie also rushed down.

Suddenly, the Medicine King Mu Xun was crowded by the core members from the five big families, whose faces were full of smiles, hoping Mu Xun would go with them.

"Mu Xun will go to the Mo family. Hehe. But nothing good will happen." Shi Jian gloated.

Just as expected.

Ignoring Mo Chaoge, who was coming up to invite him, Mu Xun soon walked toward the Mo family building silently, with a rigid face.

Mo Chaoge didn't dare be angry, and followed him smiling and bowing.

Chapter 65 - Undercurrent

“Mo Family Head, how is my despicable disciple Karu?”

After walking up the Mo family stone tower, Mu Xun asked directly. His voice was not loud, but everyone in the God Stone Square heard him clearly.

Standing on the stone tower of the Mo family, Mo Tuo was in total dismay.

Being bluntly questioned in public by Mu Xun, Mo Tuo was embarrassed. He wanted to deal with him in private, but apparently Mu Xun was having different thoughts.

Being pushed hard, Mo Tuo had to reply loudly, “Mr. Mu, Karu died long time ago. I also don’t know who killed him.”

Mu Xun stood proudly against the railing of the stone tower, and thus his figure could be easily seen once the warriors at the bottom of the tower raised their heads.

“Dead?”

Mu Xun sneered and said sarcastically, “Mo Family Head really has his methods! Knowing that my despicable student stole my treasure map, you invited him to visit the Merchant Union and killed him half way, and so you got the map. Now you pretend to know nothing! What a family head you are! Well, did you earn all the Mo family properties this way?”

“Haha, the whole Merchant union knows Mo Family Head’s methods.”

On the tower of the Shi family, Shi Jian laughed loudly and gloated, “Many of the Shi family properties were snatched under the Mo Family Head’s tactics.”

“Shi Jian!” Two hundred meters away, Mo Tuo stared at Shi Jian angrily, “This is none of your Shi family’s business! Stop spouting

nonsense!”

Ignoring him, Shi Jian continued, “Of course it’s none of our business. I was just stating the truth, don’t be overly emotional, Mo Family Head.”

Standing aside Shi Jian, Shi Yan smiled secretly and for the first time, he felt this old man was interesting and knew how to strike a man when he was down.

Not being able to do anything about Shi Jian or be mad at him, Mo Tuo could only smile to Mu Xun modestly and explained, “I didn’t know Karu had stolen your treasure map when we invited him to our home. And considering he is YOUR student, we sent people to pick him up. We really didn’t know that! Mr. Mu, don’t blame the Mo family.”

“Mistake?” Mu Xun’s face turned gloomier, and he sneered, “Your Mo family would have sent people to pick him up if you hadn’t known that he stole my treasure map? The Medicine Valley is thousands of miles away from the Merchant Union. Who would believe that you traveled so far just for Karu’s second rate refining skill, but not for the treasure map? Humph!”

Mo Tuo was helpless, as he explained, “Well, it was for his skill.”

“Mo Family Head, I don’t need any more excuses from you. I don’t care if Karu died or not. Just return to me my treasure map and I will leave at once. I’m not interested in stirring up any trouble.” Mu Xun became impatient.

“The treasure map is really not in my hands.”

“Since you, the Mo Family Head, don’t want to return that map, I have got nothing else to say.” Mu Xun grunted and walked out, as he said coldly, “Though we, the Medicine Valley, don’t get involved in the power struggles in various countries, we won’t be bullied as you like. Mo Family Head, you’d better conduct yourself well.”

At once, Mu Xun walked down the tower directly with his people.

“Mr. Mu, you are welcome to visit the Shi family anytime! We understand everything you talked about.” Shi Jian’s voice came from his tower, the overtone of which could be understood by everyone.

Walking down the Mo family building, Mu Xun looked over at Shi Jian and nodded, “I believe we will have the opportunity to cooperate. Please don’t turn me down if I ask for some help from the Shi family.”

“I, Shi Jian, hate those who always play tricks. It would be an honor to work for Mr. Mu.” Shi Jian laughed loudly and saluted with cupped hands.

“Thank you, Shi Family Head.” Mu Xun nodded and glanced up coldly at Mo Tuo, who had an ugly face, and left the God Stone Square with his people.

On the God Stone Square, the competitions had paused for a long while. Only after Mu Xun left did they continued.

The competition this day became more interesting after Mu Xun’s unexpected visit.

Soon after Mu Xun left, people started discussing noisily and soon learnt the whole story.

As a result, a hint of scorn and loathing could be seen amongst the crowd whenever the Mo family was mentioned.

Many of those who had planned to associate with the Mo family changed their mind, and thus the Mo family lost numerous potential experts.

Ku Luo, the manager of the Misty Pavilion, was also in the competition arena. He saw the conflict between Mu Xun and Mo Tuo.

Before the competition ended, Ku Luo secretly left for the Misty

Pavilion, which was not far from the God Stone Square.

At dusk.

In a secluded room in the Misty Pavilion, Ku Luo bowed and elaborated the whole story to Xia Xinyan.

After Ku Luo finished his speech, Xia Xinyan frowned and thought for a while, then said, "If it is as Mu Xun says, then the other piece of the fragmented map must be in Mo Tuo's hands. I came here for the Sky Gate, so I don't care who I have to cooperate with. Ku Luo, go to the Mo family tonight, and tell them we can share the map with them and work together to explore the Sky Gate."

"I understand." Ku Luo nodded.

"Shura King Xiao Hanyi will arrive in half a month, and you still haven't found the right guy. Hurry up." Xia Xinyan said casually.

"I will try my best!" Ku Luo was a little astonished as he replied in awe, "I've sent people to other cities to search. I believe we will find him soon."

"Good. Off now." Xia Xinyan waved her hand casually.

Ku Luo bowed away.

That night.

Ku Luo visited the Mo family alone, asking to meet Mo Tuo.

Mo Tuo was too angry, but since Ku Luo came, he had to lift his spirit to meet him. After Ku Luo revealed his purpose, Mo Tuo shook his head with a bitter smile, "The treasure map is truly not in my hands. I can offer you nothing even if I want to cooperate with you."

"Mo Family Head, my master wants to work with you sincerely.

To open the Sky Gate we need the complete map. With our cooperation, we can take action at once. Please think about it!” Ku Luo apparently didn’t believe him as he turned serious. He guessed that Mo Tuo might already have a plan about the Misty Pavilion, so he got a little angry.

“It is absolutely not in my hands. Don’t believe Mu Xun.” Mo Tuo didn’t look happy either, so he talked in an unpleasant way, “Please leave now Mr. Ku Luo. I have to prepare for the Martial Competition. Please excuse me.”

At midnight, Ku Luo went back to the Misty Pavilion and told what Mo Tuo said to Xia Xinyan.

“There are two halves of the treasure map, one of which is in my hand. Since the Mo family don’t want to cooperate, they must want to possess it alone. I guess the Mo family will take action soon.” Xia Xinyan’s eyes looked cool as she added, “I’m waiting for the Mo family to grab it. They would not cooperate with us honestly, therefore we must teach them a lesson.”

“Miss, how about we grab that map from the Mo family?” One of the huge men behind Xia Xinyan asked.

A murderous aura came from that huge man, which frightened Ku Luo a lot.

“Nevermind, after all, this isn’t our own home. Follow the rules. If all the five big families allied, it will be much more troublesome. However, when Shura King Xiao Hanyi arrives and the Mo family still doesn’t step back, we will take action.” Xia Xinyan observed indifferently.

“Okay.” The huge man nodded, not saying any more.

“Well, Ku Luo, go and do your business. You can send out the message secretly that I have the other half of the map. And I will wait for them.” Xia Xinyan smiled, “Whoever comes to grab the

map, must have the other half.”

“I got it.”

At deep night. At the Zuo Family.

Zuo Xu and Chi Xiao were discussing in a secret room in a low voice.

“Shadow has brought the message that the map isn’t in Ku Luo’s hand, but in another girl’s hand in the Misty Pavilion. That girl popped up all of a sudden. No one knows who she is.” Zuo Xu said.

“Wait till the last day. I will go to the Misty Pavilion during the competition among the five big families. It’s just a little girl. No big deal.” Chi Xiao nodded and smiled bitterly, “It’s so strange to fight against a little girl. Nevermind, I will leave one or two pieces of treasure to her as compensation.”

“But pay attention! Don’t expose yourself. The map has been attracting so much attention that once you are exposed, it will be truly troublesome.”

“Ok, I got it.”

That night, in the secret rooms of the five families, many were discussing about what had happened in the daytime.

In a secret room of the Shi family.

Holding an envelope, Shi Jian showed a weird smile as he said to Han Feng, who was beside him, “Mu Xun is so quick that he sends a letter in one day. Hehe, now that Mu Xun is to take action against the Mo family, we need to do something to help him secretly, if not publicly.”

“What does Mu Xun plan to do?”

“He wants to kidnap some people of the Mo family and threaten

Mo Tuo. Hehe, his targets are just whom we want to give a lesson to.” Shi Jian was very joyful, “Brother Feng, assign someone to follow them and spill their trails to Mu Xun. Haha, I’m excited to watch how Mo Tuo will react.”

That fragmented map from Karu was right against his chest, so no matter how, Mo Tuo couldn’t return it to Mu Xun. Those Mo family hostages would die for sure.

Imagining Mo Tuo’s furious face, Shi Jian was very amused, as he said with a big smile, “Also, go and get me a jar of wine. I want to have a good drink.”

“Family head, all the delicate wine has been drunk by Young Master Yan. The rest is all ordinary wine.” Han Feng lowered his head, as a shallow smile crossed his face.

“That little bastard!” Shi Yan patted the armrest and cursed in laughter, “That bastard is really audacious! How could he drink up my wine! I’m gonna rip his skin if he doesn’t have a good performance in the Martial Competition.”

“With his Petrification Martial Spirit at the second stage, no warrior of the Nascent Realm could beat him. It’s almost fact that Young Master Yan will win the Competition! Definitely!”

“Well, that’s true.” Shi Jian laughed loudly in delight.

Chapter 66 - Fearless

*TL Note: 'Sky Gate' and 'Gate of Heaven' have previously been used interchangeably. We will be sticking with 'Gate of Heaven' from now on.

It was now the fourth day of the martial competition.

This day, all the warriors who came to participate were fiercely fighting for the top three places.

Every rank's first three places would have a certain Martial Skill, secret treasure, or cultivation material as prizes. As long as you can place in the first three, there's no way you would go home empty-handed.

The five families were never stingy in giving prizes. They had prepared many Profound level Martial Skills and secret treasures as well as pills and cultivation materials that enhanced one's Profound Qi.

On the morning of the fourth day, these lavish prizes were displayed on a round table in the middle of the arena, watched by specialized staff.

The warriors were ecstatic upon seeing the prizes being displayed and were in full vigor to fight in the upcoming battles.

By noon time, there were already two Nascent Realm warriors killed in the arena, and one at the Human Realm was crippled.

According to the rules of the Martial Competition, when one side surrenders, the opposing party cannot continue the fight.

Which was why as long as one wasn't too greedy, took what could be managed, and give up when the situation wasn't favourable, one would definitely live.

The few warriors who were heavily injured or killed were all

thinking that they could still keep fighting. They tried to turn the situation around when they were obviously at a disadvantage, that was why they had such miserable outcomes.

On the Shi family's stone tower.

There was a smile at the corner of Shi Jian's lips as he looked down on the arenas from high above, occasionally glancing at the Mo family's tower. Every time he would see Mo Tuo with a dark expression, like his son died or something.

In the past three days, many important figures in the Mo family had all mysteriously disappeared one by one.

Mo Tuo was full of anger, but due to the critical time of Martial Competition, he couldn't act arbitrarily. He knew exactly who's been doing this, but there was nothing he could do.

The experts of the Mo family could only secretly try to find traces of Mu Xun's group, but unfortunately, they couldn't even find Mu Xun's shadow. And Mu Xun didn't send messengers either, so there was no way to negotiate.

"Kid, tomorrow is the Martial Competition for the five families. After watching for four days have you gained anything?" Shi Jian was in a great mood. He peered at Shi Yan, who was at his side, and spoke casually.

"Gains?" Shi Yan looked indifferent and nodded, "I definitely gained some things, but I'm only watching, so there's only a little to actually gain. Instead I would like to go on the battlefield myself and fight to the death. Only the things you comprehend on the verge of death can be considered the greatest riches."

Shi Jian was dazed. He stared at Shi Yan, and after quite a while he finally asked in astonishment, "You little brat! You cultivated to the Nascent Realm in such a short time, shouldn't you be lacking in battle experience? Why do I feel that you're already highly experienced? The insights on the verge of death are surely

precious, but if you get killed, then all those insights would've been useless."

Shi Yan grinned, but did not explain his words.

"Oh?"

Shi Jian suddenly exclaimed, his expression strange. He looked at the far away tower of the Mo family.

Two hundred meters away, in the tower of the Mo family.

Someone quietly whispered into Mo Tuo's ear, his face suddenly darkened to the extreme. Shockingly he walked down the stone tower of the Mo family and walked straight towards the Shi family.

On the Beiming family's stone tower, Beiming Shang also shortly received the news. He moaned, and then also walked down his stone tower and came towards the Shi family.

In the arena, the warriors were still intensely battling. Many bystanders were confused by Beiming Shang and Mo Tuo, who were walking towards the stone tower of the Shi family, wondering why these two were heading over to the Shi family's tower.

In a short moment, the angry-looking Mo Tuo got to the Shi family's tower first.

Right after he climbed up the tower, Mo Tuo immediately sprung up and screamed: "Shi Jian! Where is Mu Xun?"

Shi Jian's expression darkened, and he sneered: "How would I know where Mu Xun is? Mo Tuo, you are asking the wrong person."

"Don't even try to pretend!"

Mo Tuo's expression was of resentment, "Mu Xun is an outsider. Unless you and the Shi family secretly provided help, how could it be that our Mo family is unable to track him? Mu Xun is probably

hiding in some manor of the Shi family. You better tell me exactly where he's hiding!"

"Mo Tuo, our family's business has nothing to do with you!" Shi Jian snorted rudely.

"My son Chaoge disappeared last night, and hasn't been seen since. It has to be Mu Xun! If it's someone else I might let it pass, but if Mu Xun dares to take Chaoge, I won't take it easy!" Mo Tuo shouted in rage.

After hearing that, everyone on the stone tower had a weird expression on their faces. They finally knew why Mo Tuo was so furious.

Mo Chaoge was the strongest figure in the second generation of the Mo family. Not only did he have extraordinary capabilities, he was also very intelligent. Most of the machinations that the Mo family came up with were from this mastermind.

The Shi family also had many people who suffered losses because of him.

Mo Chaoge could be described as the most capable person in the second generation of the Mo family. Now that such an important figure had also gone missing, Mo Tuo couldn't sit still anymore. He finally came to start the fight.

Mu Xun was really ruthless! Shi Yan's heart skipped a beat. He knew now that Mo Tuo was not going to let this go.

"I don't know where Mu Xun is, go spend some time and find him yourself. You're not welcome here." Shi Jian said indifferently. He was secretly happy inside, but he didn't stop insisting.

"Head of the Beiming family!" Shi Tie exclaimed.

Right at this moment, Beiming Shang slowly walked up the Shi family's stone tower. With furrowed brows he came to the side of Shi Jian and Mo Tuo. Beiming Shang glanced at the two, then

casually said, “The Marital Competition is held by us five families. I hope everyone can keep calm, and not make trouble during the Martial Competition. Others will ridicule us.”

“My son Chaoge is gone!” Mo Tuo yelled.

Beiming Shang’s expression froze for a second, then he said to Shi Jian, “Master Shi, that Mu Xun is, after all, an outsider. Although we should treat him well on his visit to the Merchant Union, there is a limit. His approach of taking away Mo Chaoge is truly too extreme. Master Shi, on this matter you should restrain yourself a little, don’t go overboard.”

Shi Jian’s lips curled into a sneer, and his eyes coldly locked on Beiming Shang. He knew that the reason why Beiming Shang verbally spoke out for the Mo family was because the Mo family and Beiming Shang secretly had an agreement, with the common motive of exploring the ‘Gate of Heaven’.

It looked like Beiming Shang stepped out to be the peacemaker, but he was actually supporting the Mo family.

“It’s the same as I told you before, I don’t know where Mu Xun is at!” Shi Jian was sure tough, he scowled and kept denying any knowledge of Mu Xun.

Beiming Shang’s brows slowly furrowed. He nodded and intervened no more. He said nonchalantly, “Anyway, what I wish is for you to stay kind to each other during the Martial Competition so you won’t make the Merchant Union look bad. You two, take care!”

“Shi Jian, by tonight, if you still don’t send someone to tell me where Mu Xun is, in tomorrow’s Martial Competition, don’t blame us for taking offense! Hmph!” Mo Tuo’s shouted and viciously scanned across the room at all three generations of Shi family descendents, including Shi Tianke and Shi Tianyun, as if saying ‘watch out for the lives of your sons and grandsons’.

“Mo Tuo, are you threatening me?” Shi Jian’s expression changed and he sneered, “If you screw around with things at tomorrow’s Martial Competition, you too should not blame me for being ruthless!”

“I don’t care what you think! If I can’t find Mu Xun, then just wait and watch what happens tomorrow.” Mu Tuo took a deep breath in, stopped talking, and walked downstairs.

“Master Shi, you need to look at the big picture here.” Beiming Shang said apathetically, as he shook his head and followed Mo Tuo down the stairs.

“Boom!”

Shi Jian punched the balcony of the stone tower, the rigid Green Iron receiving a huge fist-shaped imprint from his punch. Even the whole stone tower, which was several meters tall, was shaking violently from the impact.

Everyone from the Shi family who was standing on the tower clearly felt his rage.

“They’re going too far!” Shi Jian growled. No one knew if he’s talking about Mo Tuo or Beiming Shang.

Because of this little episode, Shi Jian’s face was scary the whole day. At the end of that day of the Martial Competition, when he had to present the gifts to the winners, his expression was still ugly.

That night.

In the secret room, Han Feng bowed towards Shi Jian, and said, “Master, Mo Tuo and Beiming Shang are both giving us pressure now, what should we do?”

“Don’t worry about them.” Shi Jian continued scowling.

“Master, we can let Mo Tuo slide, but Beiming Shang...” Han Feng said hesitantly.

“Chi Xiao is still in the city, if Beiming Shang dares to mess with us, I’d go ahead and shamelessly ask Chi Xiao to help me. I do not think Beiming Shang would launch an attack on our family for that shitty Mo family.” Shi Jian snorted.

“Understood.”

Chapter 67 - The Battle Among the Families

The next day, God Stone Square.

In the early morning while the sky was still dimly lit, a number of different warriors in Tianyun City had already gathered in the arenas of the Martial Competition.

In the center of the God Stone Square, on one side of the arena, which was a hundred square meters across, were large blocks of Green Stone. These Green Stones were stacked higher as they moved away from the center of the arena, so it would be more convenient to watch the fighting in the arena.

Before the five families even got here, the Green Stones around that one arena especially made for the battle of the five families were already filled with crowds.

Just as the sun rose, the warriors the five families started to arrive from all around Tianyun City.

Shi Yan followed Shi Jian. Before they even got to God Stone Square he could already see the massive crowds.

These people were nearly all warriors, mostly in the Elementary, Nascent, or Human Realms, but there were some at the Disaster or Earth Realms as well.

These Disaster and Earth Realm warriors might not have been interested in the Martial Competition, but the head-on fighting among the five families was enough to grab their attention.

On the blocks of Green Stone around the arena, you could see many warriors whispering to each other.

A lot of these warriors carried sturdy looking heavy swords and battle axes. They could have been mercenaries who came from the Dark Forest. None of them showed up in the previous days but today, they came bright and early.

When the Shi family's people appeared in the God Stone Square, the warriors in the Square started murmuring, and made a path for the Shi family.

The Shi family hadn't even entered the center of the arena yet, but again those warriors turned their heads to the entrance of the God Stone Square, and gasped in low voices.

The Mo family, led by Mo Tuo, all came towards the arena with grim expressions.

Shi Jian snorted. Scowling, he silently led the Shi family towards the arena.

This time, the five families were not going to watch the fights from far away in their stone towers. Instead, they would stay at the nearest distance from the arena to be able to observe every single detail, as if visiting the frontline.

On each side of the arena, the stone balconies were already set for them.

The person waiting there saw Shi Jian, and immediately they came up smiling. "Master Shi, please take your seat here."

Shi Jian nodded and he followed him to the side of the arena, and sat on one of the stone chairs.

Many different delicacies and fine wine were brought up on the stone table for Shi Jian and the Shi family members to enjoy.

In a short moment, Mo Tuo was also lead here, his seat was arranged right across from the Shi family.

After Mo Tuo sat down, he shot a freezing gaze towards the other side. No one knew what he was thinking about.

When the sun's beams became a little brighter, the Zuo family and the Ling family also arrived. Right when Zuo Xu got here, his seat was arranged next to the Shi family.

Zuo Xu sat down, then lightly nodded at Shi Jian, indicating that

everything's going well with the Misty Pavilion, and they communicated in silence.

The Ling family was friendly with the Mo family, so naturally they were arranged to be sat together.

When Ling Shao Feng got here, he even smiled while walking over to the Mo family's side, comforting the gloomy-looking Mo Chan, and found an opportunity to talk to Mo Yanyu.

Mo Chaoge, who went missing, was Mo Zhan's father. Knowing that his father was taken, Mo Zhan had been containing his anger for a while, just waiting for his bloody revenge in the Martial Competition.

When the sun rose high above the sky, Beiming Shang finally arrived with the masters of the Beiming family.

Beiming Shang's expression was cold and a freezing energy swirled around his body. Wherever he went, the warriors of the Merchant Union all respectfully made the path for him.

Behind him was Beiming Ce who looked arrogant, followed by Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan.

The person arranging seats was a slave of the Beiming family, and upon seeing his master, he naturally gave him the best seat. Bowing, he invited Beiming Shang and Beiming Ce to sit, then immediately called the servants to bring up the delicacies and fine wine.

Both the quality and amount of the luxurious food was obviously better than the other four families. The superior position of the Beiming family in the Union was, as always, unobstructed.

After the five families had taken their seats, Beiming Shang moaned, then said nonchalantly, "The rules are the same every year and I'm not going to say much. The Martial Competition is only a way to communicate and learn from each other. I hope everyone can restrain themselves as much as possible. Hopefully

no one gets killed.”

The heads of the other four families all lightly nodded.

Beiming Shang looked around, his eyes gazed deeply at both Mo Tuo and Shi Jian, and said, “Like always, battle invitations are allowed, and you can also add more bets if you please, now who’s going first?”

“Yu!” Mo Tuo shouted.

Mo Yanyu, who was standing in the group of Mo family members, walked down first. Her eyes cold and chilling. Looking towards the direction of the Shi family, she said, “Mo family Mo Yanyu, Nascent Realm, Second Sky. Who is willing to enlighten me?”

“Snow Fall City, a silver sand mine, here is the land title deed.” Mo Tuo scowled, and snorted.

A dedicated warrior of the Mo family took the deed from his hand, and put it on a round table in the arena next to the Beiming family. The round table was made for placing bets.

“Sunset City, the franchise of Dong Guan Street.” Shi Jian also snorted, he took three yellow sheets from his brocade pocket, and passed it to the director next to him.

When the three pages of yellow paper was also on the round table, Shi Jian said coldly, “Tian Luo, go.”

Shi Tian Luo shook for a moment, then he also walked to the arena, and said with distinction, “Shi family Shi Tian Luo, Nascent Realm, Second Sky, please enlighten me.”

“Mo family’s Mo Yanyu! Shi family’s Shi Tian Luo! Both are at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm. The two masters, have you made the decision to fight?” The skinny director stood next to the round table and shouted out.

When he saw both Shi Yan and Mo Tuo nodding, he then said,

“Alright, then the match starts!”

“Bzz bzz bzz!”

Streaks of green lightning suddenly flowed out of Mo Yanyu’s ten fingers. Those lightning beams were like slithering snakes, slowing growing thicker in front of her.

At this moment, Mo Yanyu seemed to be surrounded by lightning.

Strands of green lightning that were as thin as a finger grew thicker and thicker, slowly becoming a five meter long whip.

After the lightning whips were condensed into shape, they were as thick as arms. The electric glow was blinding people’s eyes, and strong electrical currents shot laser beams off everywhere.

“Snap snap!”

Mo Yanyu cracked her whip, and the lightning whip was like a dragon made of electricity. Under the deafening sounds of thunder, she fiercely whipped towards Shi Tian Luo.

“Bzz bzz bzz!”

The lightning lasered off into the air, making strange sounds, and streams of electricity flowed out. Many warriors’ expressions froze, and instinctively they condensed their Profound Qi to defend themselves.

Shi Tian Luo’s skin was already in an ash grey color; the Shi family’s Petrification Martial Spirit was ready for battle.

Seeing the oncoming lightning whip, Shi Tian Luo face looked serious. All of a sudden he shouted loudly, and a fierce force as strong as a mountain suddenly burst out from his body.

“[Solid Rock Rune]!”

Shi Tian Luo was as still as a mountain, his legs looked as if they were pitched deep within the earth. After petrification, his physical defense was extraordinary, such that he fearlessly reached

his hand out to grab the lightning whip that came at him.

“Bzz bzz!”

Just when Shi Tian Luo reached out his hand, the lightning whip wrapped around his left arm, and a shocking amount of electricity passed from the lightning whip and into Shi Tian Luo's body.

“Argh!”

Shi Tian Luo roared, the Profound Qi in his petrified body scoured around inside his body, and quickly flowed into his left arm to restrain the electricity that was intruding into his body.

Using the advantage of the Petrification Martial Spirit, although Shi Tian Luo's left hand was tingling and sore, he wasn't in that much of an unfavorable situation. After grabbing at the lightning whip, he ran towards Mo Yanyu, with great speed, and like a falling stone from the sky, he was filled with rapid momentum.

The Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi family was best used for close combat. Once a Shi family member came to a close distance, that was when the opponent's nightmare starts.

Unexpectedly, seeing that Shi Tian Luo was fiercely approaching her, Mo Yanyu, who held the lightning whip in one hand did not dodge. Instead, she revealed a strange expression on her pretty little face.

In a mere second Mo Yanyu's blushed face turned as pale as a sheet, like she was desperately sick, and all the blood rushed away from her face.

And at this moment, the speed of her flowing Profound Qi within her body accelerated more than three times!

It was as if all the potential in her body was suddenly released.

“This is bad!” Shi Yan thought silently, his heart dropped. He knew that Shi Tian Luo was most likely going to suffer this time.

Mo Yanyu obviously only had a capability of a Nascent Realm,

Second Sky warrior, but then her Profound Qi drastically changed inside her body, and now it was like she obtained some sort of power out of thin air that didn't belong to her!

The Profound Qi in her body was much more vigorous than even that of a Nascent Realm, Third Sky warrior

This advantage meant she had no fear against Shi Tian Luo's Petrification Martial Spirit.

Sure enough!

Just when Shi Tian Luo stormed to Mo Yanyu's side, before he could strike any vigorous attacks, Mo Yan Yun unleashed waves of [Verdant Crescent Slash].

Each [Verdant Crescent Slash] was as big as a full circle. It was over three times stronger than back when she shot it towards Shi Yan!

Together seven waves of [Verdant Crescent Slash] burst from her other hand, so fast that Shi Tian Luo had no time to dodge at all.

"Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom!"

Seven waves of [Verdant Crescent Slash], all directly hit straight onto Shi Tian Luo's chest, and blasted Shi Tian Luo off into the air!

The undeniable power of these seven waves of [Verdant Crescent Slash] was not something that the first stage of the Petrification Martial Spirit could handle.

When Shi Tian Luo was still in mid-air, he was already bloody from head to toe.

"Thump!" Shi Tian Luo's body landed three meters in front of where Shi Jian was. Blood was gushing out his chest and his eyes were dilated, clearly he was badly hurt.

"Go help him!"

Shi Jian's eyes looked like they were going to burst into flames, after he thundered in rage, his strong figure shook lightly.

A few dedicated warriors from the Shi family who were preparing on the side rushed up and carried Shi Tian Luo away. They quickly gave him medicines, hastily trying to heal him.

Shi Tie dug his fingers into the stone chair. He sat there still, not moving an inch, but his eyes were full of immense hatred, staring at the faraway Mo Tuo.

Mo Tuo was also furious-looking, he exchanged stares with Shi Tie.

“Mo Yanyu wins! The Mo family wins the bet, we may continue to the next match.”

At this moment, the director’s emotionless voice rang from the other side of the round table.

Chapter 68 - A Thorough Defeat

“This pretty girl is amazing!”

“Yeah! She won without any effort even though she is at the same realm as him.”

“Too nasty! That guy could have died several times if he didn’t possess the Petrification Martial Spirit.”

“Hmm... the competition among the five big families is really awesome! It is worth my long travel here.”

“...”

The arena was filled with boisterous discussions. The onlookers were all surprised at Mo Yanyu’s ability.

With a cold expression on her face, Mo Yanyu stood in the center of the field proudly, staring at the Shi family members with her frosty eyes, like a snow lotus on a snowy mountain.

Those observing warriors also gazed at her hot body with sparkling eyes. They were surprised by her brutality but still couldn’t stop complimenting her.

On the Shi family side, everybody had a rigid face.

Shi Tie was trembling with anger, but could do nothing except stare at Mo Tuo in hatred.

This was the Martial Competition. The loser couldn’t say anything about a public defeat. He could only win back his prestige in another battle.

“Family Head, Young Master Tian Luo is not heavily injured, but he won’t be able to train his Martial Arts for three years.” One minister of the Shi Family came up from behind, and said to Shi Jian and Shi Tie.

Shi Jian and Shi Tie suddenly quivered at his message, with grief crossing their eyes.

“Grandpa, that woman is strange! Her strength surged half way through. That’s too weird!” Shi Yan remarked in a low voice.

“I know.” Shi Jian took a deep breath and turned to Shi Tian Ke and Shi Tian Yun with hesitation.

He had apparently noticed that as well.

At the halfway point of the battle, Mo Yanyu’s face suddenly turned pale, and it was at that moment, the Profound Qi in Mo Yanyu’s body became much more dense and circulated much faster, which was abnormal.

“Yu back! Mo Qi, up!” Just then, Mo Tuo demanded, “we are not going to change the wager, and invite a battle with the Shi family again!”

Another youth about 6 feet tall replaced Mo Yanyu at the center of the arena, and said proudly, “Mo Qi of the Mo family. Nascent Realm, Second Sky. Please enlighten me!”

“Big brother!” Shi Tie yelled, and looked at Shi Tian Ke who stood behind him with worried eyes, “What should we do now?”

“Fight!” Shi Jian grit his teeth, thought for a while, and announced, “Tian Yun, up!”

All Shi family members were shocked at this and turned pale, as they looked at Shi Jian in confusion.

Shi Tian Yun was the most talented among the third generation of Shi family, and was at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. Thus everybody believed he would fight last.

Now that Shi Jian had sent him up so early, who would fight in the following battles?

Mo Zhan was of the third generation of the Mo family, but he was not on the stage yet. No matter if Shi Tian Yun won or lost this battle, he would lose the chance to fight against Mo Zhan.

Who will be sent to fight against Mo Zhan later?

If they couldn't find anyone to compete with Mo Zhan, everybody would think there were no promising descendents in the third generation of the Shi family, which was a bigger shame than losing the competition!

"Big brother!" Shi Tie cried, "Mo Zhan hasn't been sent!"

"It must be Tian Yun! There is something strange going on so we have to send Tian Yun who is one Sky higher than him." Shi Jian stated with a frosty face, "Shut up! Tian Yun! Go!"

"Yes!" Tian Yun replied firmly and directly stepped onto the arena, "Shi Tian Yun from the Shi family. Nascent Realm, Third Sky. Please enlighten me!"

"Shi Tian Yun! Isn't he the strongest in the third generation of the Shi family?"

"Exactly, why did he appear so early when Mo Zhan is still not on stage?"

"The Shi family is scared now. They have no choice but to send Shi Tian Yun up to fight. Now it's getting interesting. One is at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm and the other is at the Second Sky. One Sky different. I guess the Mo family won't accept this fight. They will definitely change their warrior."

"Well, the Mo family won't buy it."

"..."

The onlookers were all discussing among each other in astonishment.

Many from the Beiming and Ling families were looking on with doubt in their eyes, staring at the Shi family with weird expressions.

Even some faces from the Zuo family were filled with surprise, not knowing what Shi Jian was thinking.

Only Zuo Xu and Zuo Shi knew what was going on. They

stealthily looked over to Shi Yan.

“Beiluo City! One mine! And the commercial street in the south of Beiluo City!” Shi Jian took a deep breath and pulled out all the documents from his bag and handed them to the director.

“Mo Qi from the Mo family, Second Sky of the Nascent Realm; Shi Tian Yun from the Shi Family, Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. Is it right?” As the wagers put on the table, the director frowned at Shi Jian and Mo Tuo.

Mo Tuo was a little confused, as he glanced over at Shi Tian Yun, not knowing why it was him who was sent.

After hesitating, Mo Tuo had a small talk with an old man, a mussy-haired one who was standing beside him and nodded softly.

Seeing him nodding, Mo Tuo seemed to be relaxed, as he nodded at the coach, “No problem, our warriors of the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm can easily beat those of Third Sky of the Nascent Realm from the Shi family. We are in!”

“Now, the battle begins!”

Shi Tian Yun immediately petrified his body, while Mo Qi yelled once and lightning intertwined his arms.

“Mo Qi, prove yourself as soon as possible. Don’t let others look down upon you.” Mo Tuo reminded him indifferently.

Hearing that, Mo Qi quickly understood what to do.

In an instant, like Mo Yanyu, Mo Qi’s face turned as pale as a zombie, which was extremely horrifying.

It was exactly the same.

In Mo Qi’s body, the flow of his Profound Qi accelerated many times! A certain energy that didn’t belong to him seemed to be triggered and invaded his entire body. His aura suddenly overwhelmed Shi Tian Yun who was one Sky higher than him!

“There it goes!” Shi Tie yelled in anger, “They must have played

a certain trick! This is not the type of power that could belong to a warrior of the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm!”

Shi Jian looked depressed as he nodded, “Did you notice that? Mo Tuo had a talk with the old man behind him before he permitted the battle. Mo Yanyu and Mo Qi’s weird change must have something to do with that old man!”

“I won’t let him go peacefully!” Shi Tie greeted his teeth.

“Bang!”

Shi Tian Yun kicked off the ground with one foot and the solid metal stone made a thunderous sound as if it had been cracked.

Shi Tian Yun shot towards Mo Qi like a sharp sword at his fastest speed, intending to cripple Mo Qi as soon as possible.

Mo Qi smiled coldly without fear, as he directly met Shi Tian Yun, emitted flashes of lightning which flew towards him rapidly!

As he released the lightning flashes, green balls of light burst out from the center of Mo Qi’s palm. They began to strike Shi Tian Yun heavily.

“Bang bang bang! Bang bang bang!”

One after another, green light balls struck Shi Tian Yun and slowed his attacks.

Just then, the Profound Qi in Mo Qi’s body surged again! He appeared in front of Shi Tian Yun suddenly from behind the green balls.

The lightning flashes magically formed an electric net in the sky, and wrapped up Shi Tian Yun in an instant.

“How is that possible?! The energy in that kid equals that of a Human Realm warrior!” Shi Tie screamed in fear.

Shi Tian Yun was tightly entangled by the electric net. He

struggled to get escape it but failed.

At this time, Mo Qi's green light balls kept striking Shi Tian Yun one by one and drove him back.

Mo Qi dashed near Shi Tian Yun and kept striking him with his arms and legs.

Shi Tian Yun was bleeding severely from the corner of his mouth, but he couldn't fight back because of the electric net that bound him tightly.

What a thorough defeat!

Everybody was stricken dumb in amazement as they stared at Mo Qi, who was merely at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm, while he was striking Shi Tian Yun who could not fight back.

"Woa! What the hell is that?"

"Who knows? Why is that kid so powerful? It's weird, too weird!"

"Is he really at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm? Or are the Nascent Realm warriors of the big families one level higher than us?"

"Confusing! Too confusing!"

"..."

All the warriors nearby were dumbstruck and couldn't figure out what happened.

"Bang bang bang! Bang bang bang!"

After receiving the endless strikes, Shi Tian Yun was bleeding severely and his eyes gradually began to dim.

Shi Jian stood up at once and demanded, "We lose!"

The director from the Beiming Family, who was standing next to the round table, immediately looked over to Beiming Shang after Shi Jian yelled.

Beiming Shang seemed to not have noticed the scene on the battle arena, as he was still drinking his tea quietly.

Seeing his attitude, the director understood what he meant. He lowered his head to check the documents, ignoring Shi Jian's announcement.

“Bang bang bang!”

Mo Qi continued to kick Shi Tian Yun, as the latter had fallen onto the ground long ago.

“We admit defeat!” Shi Jian stared at Beiming Shang and roared.

Beiming Shang finally seemed to notice it, as he raised his head and then peered at the director casually.

“Battle stops! The Mo family wins!” the director called out listlessly.

Mo Qi finally stopped his attacks and took a few steps back. Smirking, he laughed, “Haha! Shi family descendents are all losers! He is too weak for a Nascent Realm, Third Sky warrior! It was a total waste of my time. Humph!”

Then he swaggered back to his family and received a bunch of compliments.

Han Feng rushed onto the arena silently like a ghost and carried Shi Tian Yun back, who was drowning in his own blood, and asked those family ministers to check on him.

Those ministers were in a muddle, as they firstly put a handful of pills into Shi Tian Yun's mouth, with serious faces.

Not bothering to stare at Mo Tuo, Shi Tie quickly pressed his hands on Shi Tian Yun's chest and transmitted his Profound Qi into Tian Yun to heal him.

The battle field turned silent at once.

Those onlookers noticed this strange occurrence. They stopped gossiping, but looked at the two families in confusion.

“Keep the wager, and Zhan, you go up!” Mo Tuo announced at a low voice again, with a cold smile climbing up his mouth.

“Mo Zhan from the Mo family. Nascent Realm, Third Sky. Please enlighten me!”

Mo Zhan’s robust body stood in the center of the arena, and he sneered, “I’m quite curious, does your Shi family still have people to fight me? Do you dare?”

Chapter 69 - Believe in Me!

The whole God Stone Square was silent. Mo Zhan's clamoring seemed to echo in the arena.

Shi Jian face was in a grimace, and he was trembling in rage. He almost wanted to go to the middle of the arena and slap Mo Zhan to death.

The Beiming, Ling, Mo, and Zuo families all looked at Shi Jian. Many warriors around the arena were looking at Shi Jian in sympathy.

At this point, everyone could see the vicious heart of the Mo family, and they also knew that they had definitely used some unusual means.

However, that's what the Martial Competition was like. Each side would use their own methods, and as long as they're not strongly against the rules of the arena, no matter how tragically the loser turned out to be, no one would say a thing.

Even if the Shi family were highly displeased, at that moment, there was nothing they could argue about. And the others of course, would not step into such murky waters.

At that moment, Han Feng suddenly came up from behind the people of the Shi family and passed a slip of paper to Shi Jian. He said, "Master, someone told me to give this to you."

Shi Jian was barely able to control his anger. As he took a glance at the note, his expression suddenly froze.

"The children from the Mo family have taken the Blood Vigor Pill, made by the Poison Dragon Valley of the God Blessed Empire. The Blood Vigor Pill allows one to increase their strength by twofold for a short period of time at the cost of being unable to use their martial powers for a whole year. It is best for you not to continue the following matches, or else you will still lose

miserably. The old man standing next to Mo Zhan is the alchemist Xie Shou from the Poisonous Dragon Valley! Sincerely, Mu Xun.”

Shi Jian looked at the words on the paper with a grim face. He finally knew what the Mo family had done.

Just to deal with the Shi family, Mo Tuo had sacrificed a year of his grandchildren's cultivation. In turn, this caused Shi Tian Luo and Shi Tian Yun of the Shi family to be bedridden for at least three to five years. This method was ruthless to the extreme!

Shi Jian's expression was gloomy. Looking at Shi Yan, he suddenly could not decide how to proceed.

If Mu Xun didn't pass on this information, Shi Jian might have actually let Shi Yan enter the arena.

But since now the truth was known, Shi Jian knew that Mo Zhan must have also taken that Blood Vigor Pill, and that now his abilities were enhanced for the upcoming battle. Knowing this, Shi Jian faltered.

Mo Zhan was already at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. But after taking the Blood Vulgar Pill, he would have the ability of a Human Realm warrior. Human Realm warriors could easily break the second stage of Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit.

Shi Yan had only started cultivating recently, so Shi Jian naturally thought that Shi Yan lacked real battle experience.

In this situation, Shi Yan could easily be crushed by his opponent. But Shi Yan had twin Martial Spirits. In a long run, he would definitely become as good as Beiming Ce. He was the true future hope of the Shi family.

If this battle led to Shi Yan losing miserably and suffering heavy injuries, not only would it slow down his path to success, the strike could probably devastate him forever.

The more he weighed his options, the more hesitant Shi Jian felt. He almost had the thought to protect Shi Yan even if he were to be

disgraced.

Then, at this moment.

Zuo Shi came slowly from the Zuo family's side, carrying a giant backpack.

Zuo Shi's captivating figure caused unrest outside the arena. Many looked at Zuo Shi lasciviously, their eyes gazing towards her beautiful long legs.

Soon, Zuo Shi arrived at the Shi family's place. She stood next to Shi Jian and put the backpack on the Shi family's table, saying quietly, "Grandpa Shi, my grandpa told me to bring the Dragon Turtle Armor to you in the hope that you would win."

Then, she turned her head and looked at Shi Yan, and spoke quietly, "Go for it."

After that, Zuo Shi left the Shi family area and returned to the Zuo family.

Even when she arrived back at the Zuo family, her beautiful eyes were still locked onto Shi Yan from across the arena.

Everyone in the Shi family felt devastated.

Not only those who didn't know about Shi Yan's situation, even those who were actually aware of Shi Yan's cultivation level were also pitying him.

A warrior who just recently broke through to the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, versus one who heavily trained for twenty years, and slowly came to this realm step by step. It's clear who was stronger.

Besides, the Mo family obviously played dirty, so now the actual gap between the two was like a deep valley.

"Dragon Turtle Armor!"

When Shi Jian saw the armour he was completely shocked. Even though his confidence was restored, he still hesitated a bit. Passing

the paper slip to Shi Yan, he murmured, “Sigh... grandpa doesn’t know what to do either, you decide for yourself. If you think it’s too hard, then... just give up.”

When he said the words “give up”, Shi Jian suddenly felt exhausted, as if he aged some years.

Shi Yan still looked unconcerned with the recent surprising developments. He glanced at the paper slip, but didn’t show any reaction. He was still calm as ever. He had already realised that the Mo family must have used some underhanded means.

Before Shi Jian had even finished speaking, Shi Yan leapt off and appeared in the middle of the arena. He spoke lightly, “Shi Yan from the Shi family. Nascent Realm, Third Sky. Please enlighten me!”

A great disturbance stirred in the crowd!

The silent arena suddenly became louder than the street markets. Many were in utter shock, puzzled, as they looked at Shi Yan.

“Who’s this kid? I’ve never heard of this guy in the Shi family.”

“Right, he never showed up in any of the previous Martial Competitions. When did the Shi family get such a warrior?”

“Shi Yan... I know. Isn’t he that young master of the Shi family who loves to study ancient texts? This guy never practiced martial arts. I only know him because he always caused trouble.”

“No way! He has never cultivated in martial arts, but still is at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm?”

“Who knows? But even if he is at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, what can he do? You saw what happened when Mo Qi, who’s only at the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm, went against Shi Tian Yun, who was at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. About that Shi Yan guy, maybe it’s only because Shi Jian doesn’t want to be embarrassed so he sent him out to die.”

“Yeah... sigh... poor guy, being sacrificed like that.”

“...”

Around the arena, the sounds of gossip rose everywhere. Not a single warrior felt optimistic about Shi Yan. After knowing his true identity, they all thought Shi Jian had only let him go up out of frustration. The outcome... was already decided.

On the Beiming family's side, Beiming Shang also furrowed his brows slightly. He turned his head to a dedicated warrior on the side, “What's the deal with Shi Yan? Why was there no news about him? When did the Shi family get another Nascent Realm, Third Sky kid? Did he appear out of thin air?”

“Master, I didn't know either. Since a young age Shi Yan didn't have the Shi family's Martial Spirit, so we didn't spend much effort observing him. Who knew that he suddenly...”

“A little strange.” Beiming Shang nodded, he frowned and asked no more.

Beiming Ce was dazed for a second, as a flash of surprise gleamed in his eyes. He stared at Shi Yan for a while, then suddenly realized, “Hey? Isn't that the kid who was drinking with Han Zhong in the Spring Pavilion, a few days back?”

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan also remembered, and lightly nodded at the same time. From far away, Di Yalan stared at Shi Yan, who was talked about by many people in the arena. Her expression was a little strange, and with a low voice she said, “It's him.”

“He's definitely gonna die.” Beiming Ce shook his head, unconcerned, “No matter how amazing his luck was before, this time, against Mo Zhan, he'll be crippled, if not killed.”

Mo Tuo also dazed out for a second, then he sneered, “I don't care where this little bastard came from, but we'll never see him again.”

“Shi Yan, take that thing!” Shi Jian shouted while grimacing. He

pointed at the Dragon Turtle Armor brought by Zuo Shi, and hinted at him.

“Don’t need it.” Shi Yan glimpsed over at Shi Jian, and shook his head. Then he smiled at Mo Zhan, “At the Spring Pavilion, I told you we’d meet again. Now do you know who I am?”

“I know.” Mo Zhan laughed arrogantly, “You’re just someone who came here to die! Haha, the Shi family really has nobody now. Sending out a guy who researches ancient texts! Hahaha, I’m gonna laugh to the death!”

Shi Yan didn’t show any anger, he looked indifferent, and stood in the arena waiting.

“Ahem, head of the Shi family, you can put out your bet now.” The director standing at the round table shouted out.

“Master!”

“Master!”

“Master!”

At the Shi family tower, many of the dedicated warriors shouted, clearly indicating their displeasure.

All of them had heard about Shi Yan. Even if he had somehow reached the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, everyone believed that it was for nought, and that Shi Yan would lose miserably.

If Shi family lost the fight again, not only would they would be crushed in the competition, they would also lose their high-value bets, the repercussion of which, would last forever.

“Brother! You must not!” Shi Tie advised Shi Tian strongly, still injecting his Profound Qi into Tian Yun. “Brother! It’s not worth that little bit of pride! Tian Luo and Tian Yun have already lost, you can’t bring Shi Yan in too! Just let it go, Brother!”

Shi Yan could clearly hear all the chatter behind him. Groaning, he looked back at Shi Jian and said calmly, “Grandpa, believe in

me!”

“...Okay!”

Shi Jian, who was hesitating over his choices, looked at Shi Yan’s confident expression. And for some reason, he actually did choose to believe in him. He suddenly roared, “Phoenix City! Our family bets the authority to the whole city! If the Mo family wins, our family will cede the authority for Phoenix City immediately!”

This led to another great disturbance in the crowd, everyone started gossiping and chatting again.

Phoenix City was a big city in the Merchant Union, and the Shi family had been holding the authority to the city for decades. Now Phoenix City had been branded with the Shi family’s name.

It could be said that Phoenix City was where the Shi family’s influence was deepest. Now Shi Jian was putting up the authority for Phoenix City as a bet, was he going insane?

“Big brother!”

“Master!”

Everyone in the Shi family were on their feet as they looked at Shi Jian in disbelief. All of them started requesting Shi Jian to take back the bet vehemently.

“Stop trying to persuade me! My mind is set!” Shi Jian’s stubbornness was back, and with a straight face, he sneered, “It’s either make or break! I will take the risk this time!”

Everyone in the Beiming family and the Ling family were also stunned, clearly they didn’t understand either.

Zuo Xu dazed for a moment, then sighed and said quietly, “Now there’s no turning back for Brother Shi.”

“Okay!” Mo Tuo suddenly stood up, and shouted loudly, “You can’t take this back now!”

“Take it!” Shi Jian took the deeds from his personal pocket, and

passed it to the director who came towards him. Then he shouted coldly, “Mo Tuo, your little bet is not enough!”

“I will add three more mines!” Mo Tuo scowled, then sneered, “It’s a sure win match, doesn’t matter how much more I add, after all it will still belong to the Mo family in the end!”

Soon, the director took the bet from the Mo family up to the round table, then suddenly roared, “The match starts!”

Chapter 70 - The Focus of Attention

“Let the battle begin!”

The referee's announcement officially started the much anticipated battle.

Mo Zhan was wearing a cold and arrogant smile.

In an instant, streams of electricity came out of his body, materializing into electric snakes.

Those electric snakes intertwined around Mo Zhan's whole body, which made him look dazzling.

Mo Zhan, a warrior of the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm, stood in the battle arena with pride, while electric snakes were circling all over his body. His Lightning Martial Spirit was apparently way more powerful than Mo Yanyu's and Mo Qi's.

As his face gradually turned pale, those electric snakes kept twisting around his body, looking hideous and seemingly wanting to eat people.

“The Petrification Martial Spirit of the Shi Family is said to be the king of close range battle in the Merchant Union. Hehe, I will give you a chance. Come near me and fight!” Mo Zhan stood still and burst into laughter with arrogance and pride filling his face, not caring about Shi Yan a bit.

“That guy is way too arrogant!”

“Well, he is in the position to be arrogant. The Lightning Martial Spirit of his is way stronger than that Mo Qi's. The result is quite clear now!”

“Exactly, the Shi Family will have a nasty failure for sure.”

“...”

Around the battle arena, the warriors standing on the high green stone building were all shaking their heads as no one anticipated

that Shi Yan could beat Mo Zhan.

Even on the Shi family's side everybody was in bad mood, sighing with disappointment.

“Well.”

With his usual indifference, Shi Yan strode towards Mo Zhan at a leisurely pace, as though he thought nothing of him.

While walking, his body petrified gradually and his skin grew gray.

Before he came into the battle arena, Shi Yan had wiped a certain powder all over his body.

That powder did nothing but changed the color of his Martial Spirit so that it looked gray even though his Petrification Martial Spirit had already reached the second stage.

Shi Jian did this as he wanted to avoid anyone thinking they were cheating. After all, it was a known fact that a Nascent Realm warrior couldn't reach the second stage of the Petrification Martial Spirit.

“Kid, you were really something in the Spring Pavilion! I hope you can be as sharp as you were then!” Mo Zhan smiled coldly with his pale face, as he stood still and waited for Shi Yan to approach.

“Sharp or not, you will know soon enough.” Shi Yan shook his head with a smile. As he replied, he was within three metres of Mo Zhan.

“Humph!”

Suddenly, Mo Zhan yelled in a low voice and the electric snakes coiling around his body came to life.

Those electric snakes flew out and dashed towards Shi Yan in a second.

“Damn!” Shi Tie cried in fear, “There they go!”

“Dodge!” Shi Yang couldn’t help but cry out.

“Hiss hiss hiss!”

The electric snakes were as thick as thumbs and separated at once as if they were alive, entangling Shi Yan from all directions, not leaving any gaps.

Ignoring the cries of the Shi family, the electric snakes wrapped Shi Yan up tightly in an instant.

“Bad!” Shi Tie’s eyes were full of fear, as he sighed with pain, “How stupid is this kid! He didn’t even dodge, even when he knows how Tian Yun lost! Now he is repeating the same tragedy! It’s done!”

“Not surprising!”

“Yeah, this guy studies ancient language. Stupid!”

“There is no suspense. I guess he won’t even have the slightest chance to fight back.”

Around the battle arena, those warriors were all feeling sorry for Shi Yan, as they shook their heads in sorrow, seeming to know the result.

It turned out just as everybody assumed!

Mo Zhan seized this opportunity and rushed up to Shi Yan. With a [Verdant Crescent Slash] in his left hand and a [Green Light Ball] in his right hand, he struck his opponent who was entangled tightly by electric snakes.

“Boom boom boom boom! Boom boom boom boom!”

The [Verdant Crescent Slashes] and [Green Light Balls] were shooting like a hail, and covered Shi Yan in an instant.

Under Mo Zhan’s intense attacks, nobody could clearly see Shi Yan who was buried under the lightning, and they simply guessed he would lose for sure.

One after another electric slashes flashed with green light, and the audience saw the arena clearly again.

Shi Yan was still standing there and hadn't moved. He was not hurt in the slightest and smoke was coming from his coat.

“Hmm?”

“What happened?”

“It can't be true?”

As the green light dissipated and the warriors saw Shi Yan clearly, they couldn't help but rub their eyes, surprised by Shi Yan who was still standing in the arena like a mountain.

Beiming Shang also raised his head from his teacup and looked at Shi Yan in astonishment. He frowned and mumbled, “Weird.”

Mo Tuo's expression changed, but he still kept calm and just grunted once.

Shi Jian's body quivered once and a bright light crossed his eyes. After taking a deep breath, he pressed one of his hands to the stone stool and became excited.

“Big brother!”

“Family Head!”

Shi Tie and the Shi family warriors looked to Shi Jian at the same time, with joy and confusion on their faces.

“Keep on!” Shi Jian yelled, as his mouth trembled a bit.

Though still feeling confused after what they heard, Shi Tie and those ministers of the Shi family got a little expectation of Shi Yan.

In the arena.

Shi Yan was still entangled by the electric snakes, but apart from a little numbness after using his Petrification ability, he felt nothing else, as he still maintained an indifferent expression on his face.

Wisps of thin smoke gushed out from his arms which soon covered the electricity from those snakes, thus no one could see the change in his arms.

While he was being struck heavily, his negative energy had mingled with his Profound Qi and gushed out from his arms, turning into five small swirls which floated around him.

These swirls created by the [Gravitational Field] combined these two types of energy, which slowly floated behind Mo Zhan.

The swirls were invisible to anyone. Apart from Shi Yan, in this huge battle field, only a Human Realm warrior like Beiming Shang could sense it.

“Mo Zhan, you are so weak!” Under the gaze of the audience, Shi Yan broadened his mouth, as he laughed and smirked, “You can’t even hurt me when I stood there and didn’t fight back. How did the Mo family become one of the five big families in the Merchant Union with skills like yours?”

“Kid, you are seeking death!” Mo Zhan’s face changed suddenly and became even paler. He dashed over with a stern face toward Shi Yan, and just as Mo Qi kicked Shi Tian Yun, he began to kick Shi Yan like crazy.

“Boom boom boom! Bang bang bang!”

Mo Zhan’s hard attacks dropped upon Shi Yan, while the arena was filled with green light and strong Profound Qi began to spill everywhere.

“Still weak. Mo Zhan, are you a girl?”

Under Mo Zhan’s attacks, Shi Yan was unmovable like a mountain and couldn’t stop shaking his head, ridiculing him with crueller and crueller words, “If you don’t have a thing down there I can help you satisfy your wife on your wedding day, in case that you make a fool of yourself!”

That was too wicked!

Ling Yue Yue from the Ling family suddenly stood up and cursed in a flirtatious tone, “Shi Yan, you will die a miserable death!”

“I want you to die!”

Mo Zhan howled and triggered all his potential at once. He jumped towards Shi Yan and started sending out another rain of punches.

“Bang!”

However, Shi Yan simply stretched one leg and kicked Mo Zhan in the chest. That kick, by his sole free leg, sent Mo Zhan five meters away.

“Boring.” Shi Yan grunted in disappointment as he got rid of the electric snakes.

Those electric snakes, which were crawling all over him, broke away inch by inch!

The shattered electric sparks dispersed all around the arena

“Be careful!”

“Damn it!”

The warriors nearest to the arena shouted and hurried to operate their Profound Qi to defend against those electric sparks.

“Good boy!” Zuo Xu patted the arm of his chair and praised, “I like this guy!”

Zuo Shi’s bright eyes were shining with an odd light as she nodded at Shi Yan and smiled, “Well, this guy is really mean.”

“Big brother!”

“Family Head! Wh... what is going on here?”

On the other side, Shi Tie and the Shi family ministers all looked to Shi Jian in surprise.

“It’s fine. It’s just that the Mo family is too weak.” Shi Jian responded briefly, following Shi Yan’s directions. Suddenly the

feeling in the air had become fresh.

Mo Tuo stood up with a green face. He stared at Mo Zhan and his breathing became heavier and heavier.

“Those eyes, I have seen them somewhere...” On the side of the Beiming Family, Di Yalan showed a little suspicion on her face, and she murmured after a long deliberation.

But at that time, no one paid attention to her murmurs. Instead, everybody was setting their eyes upon Shi Yan and following his movements.

After getting rid of the electric snakes, Shi Yan started strolling towards Mo Zhan. Mo Zhan lifted himself up from the ground and rushed towards Shi Yan in a rage.

At that moment!

Mo Zhan’s body began to twist strangely as willow flowers fluttered in the air. Something invisible had entangled him tightly. The harder he struggled, the stranger the way he swayed. At last, he floated up into the air...

There seemed to be an invisible wicked hand behind him that had grabbed his neck and lifted him up.

“What happened?”

“I don’t know! What’s wrong with Mo Zhan? Is he out of his mind?”

“Who knows what’s going on? Why is Mo Zhan floating in the air? Is he at the Sky Realm?”

“Do you even think it’s possible?”

“...”

The arena burst into clamor at once.

Shi Yan came near Mo Zhan with an indifferent face and slowly stretched out his hand. His fingers stabbed into Mo Zhan’s knee

like five sharp spears.

“Crack! Crack!”

The clear sounds of bones breaking came from Mo Zhan’s knees.

“Crack! Crack!”

Another two similar noises came from his shoulders.

“Paa!”

Mo Zhan was totally freaking out in front of Shi Yan. He couldn’t help but fall on his knees.

Not a single bone in his joints were connected. Pathetically kneeling in front of Shi Yan in front of such a huge crowd made him roar insanely, “Shi Yan, I am gonna kill you! KILL YOU!”

“Oh? Really?” Shi Yan looked cool, as he grabbed Mo Zhan’s neck and lifted him high up in the air again.

Mo Zhan tried his electric skill on Shi Yan but it had no effect.

In front of hundreds of eyes, Mo Zhan was lifted up by Shi Yan single handedly; it was a deliberate insult!

Shi Yan intended to show Mo Zhan’s expression to everybody, for he circled the arena, so that every warrior present could see the grief and fear on Mo Zhan’s face.

After one circle, Shi Yan turned his eyes towards Shi Jian and sent the message: to kill or not?

The arena quietened down suddenly and all the warriors gazed at Shi Yan.

Tens of meters away, Shi Jian got Shi Yan’s message and was quite delighted.

Under Shi Yan’s gaze, Shi Jian nodded softly with a rigid face.

“We give up!” Mo Tuo was shocked and he cried miserably after he saw Shi Jian’s cold eyes, “We lose! We lose!”

“Stop!” The referee at the roundtable announced immediately.

“Crack!”

Another clear sound came from Mo Zhan’s neck, and his head flapped down in an odd way.

All the warriors were horrified. They looked at Shi Yan, who had just shattered Mo Zhan’s neck, in quiet astonishment.

It was extremely silent in the arena.

Under everybody’s gaze, Shi Yan tossed away Mo Zhan’s body indifferently.

“Paa!”

Mo Zhan’s dead body landed three meters in front of Mo Tuo, with his head strangely twisted.

Sneering at the Mo family, Shi Yan returned to the Shi family tower and without any care and took his seat.

Chapter 71 - Take Advantage of Their Weakness!!

“Shi Jian! You old man!”

Mo Tuo's eyes were filled with endless hatred. With a raging roar he suddenly stormed towards the arena, and thundered, “You killed my Zhan and destroyed my family's future hope. I WILL bury you by his side!”

Mo Zhan's death truly provoked him. Mo Tuo didn't even care about the rest of the Martial Competition. He straightaway rushed towards the Shi family

As Mo Tuo made his move, all the distraught members of the Mo family also stood up. They all rushed into the arena and sprinted towards the Shi family.

“Mo Tuo! My two grandsons are still lying on the ground!” Shi Jian was in violent rage as he also rushed forward. Staring coldly at the approaching Mo Tuo, he sneered, “You were totally calm when you were winning, but lost your temper as soon as you were defeated? Hmph! If you can't afford to lose, then don't participate in the Martial Competition at all!”

“Calm down all of you!”

Beiming Shang's expression was stern as he stood up. Suddenly the temperature around the arena dropped by considerable degree as frigid air started emitting from his body.

Even though the sun was at its height, all the warriors around the arena felt chilly.

“Stand down!” Mo Tuo suddenly turned back his head and shouted to the grieved members of the Mo family.

To this the dedicated warriors and masters of the Mo family were unwilling, but under Mo Tuo's cold gaze, everybody retreated back

to their places.

“Shi Jian, would you dare to fight solo with me!” When the people of the Mo family backed away, Mo Tuo suddenly roared from the middle of the arena.

“Woah! No way?”

“Now this is gonna be quite a show! A battle between two family heads!”

“I didn’t come thousands of miles in vain, this time the arena is truly splendid!”

The crowd was totally excited as they looked at Shi Jian in expectation.

“Why not?” Shi Jian sneered, and also stepped into the center of the arena. He greeted Beiming Shang and said, “Beiming Family Head, Mo Tuo and I will have a fair fight, I’m sure this is not against the rules?”

Frigid air was seeping from Beiming Shang’s body. He groaned and furrowed his brow for a moment, and then slowly sat down, shaking his head, he sighed, “Why bother you two? But if you really wish to fight, I wouldn’t stop you. I only hope that you restrain yourselves and don’t hurt others.”

Shi Yan was totally unfazed by the recent developments and was sitting nonchalantly at the Shi family’s side. Seeing that Shi Jian had also stepped into the arena, his eyes furrowed deeply, knowing that this time it wouldn’t end easily.

However, just when the two were about to fight to the death, the entire Tianyun City seemed to shake for a second. In the far distance, the tall stone tower of the Misty Pavilion, which was dozens of meters high, instantly toppled down.

Even from thousands of meters away, one could see the silhouette of a female above the tower, wearing a black crape and a bamboo hat.

This was clearly a very stunning woman.

She was just like a goddess, with her hands above her head, as if holding something.

That piece of the sky looked like it was time-warped, with masses of strange air flooded the clouds.

From the clouds, some mysterious power in the river of time turned into pillars of light, and all of a sudden stormed down from the heavens, shooting directly into the woman's upheld hands.

An earth-shakingly strong force suddenly spread out from the woman's body.

Thousands of meters away, the warriors in the arena could all feel the terrifying force coming from her.

Streaks of exotic beams abruptly shot out from her body. Due to the great density of the beam, it was as if multiple rainbows were wrapping around her.

"Sky Realm master!"

"Who is this woman? So powerful!"

"What is happening? Why is there another Sky Realm master in the city?"

All the people in the arena were totally focused in her direction, completely forgetting Mo Tuo and Shi Jian's fight.

In the blazing hot sunlight, the woman with the perfect body raised her hands in mid-air.

Suddenly an enormous radiant hand emerged from the sky, and violently smashed down like a mountain.

Under that gigantic hand, a black dot was forming, which was slowly increasing in size...

Gradually, that black dot formed into the silhouette of a person.

The god-like giant hand, spreading over hundreds of meters,

smashed down on the ground with immense force. The silhouette of the person formed from that black dot, suddenly warped and disappeared into streams of dark light.

“Boom!”

The enormous hand completely destroyed the three, twenty-meter high Misty Pavilion towers. The rigid Green Iron towers became metal scraps, flying everywhere.

The woman in the black crape and bamboo hat stood in the air above the ruin of the Misty Pavilion for a moment, and then flew towards the arena.

In merely a few seconds, she arrived above the arena, condescendingly looking at the crowd below. With her angel-like voice, she said, “Half of the map is on my hands. Mo Family Head, if you really want it, just come and take it in upfront; no need to play tricks in the dark.”

“Our Mo family didn’t do it!” Mo Tuo looked up at her and roared, but there was a flash of surprise in his eyes.

Mo Tuo was only at the Third Sky of the Nirvana Realm, but this woman could walk in mid-air, which was a trait of Sky Realm warriors!”

How could Mo Tuo not be afraid?

“Miss!”

Two giant men pushed their way among the crowd, and immediately appeared outside the arena.

In mid-air, the floating goddess-like woman pointed at Mo Tuo and commanded, “Teach him a little lesson.”

“Yes, Miss!”

The two giant men roared as their muscles suddenly bulged. They were already two meters tall, but instantly grew by some centimeters while exerting power, with dark thick hair suddenly

growing on their bodies.

In a flash, the two men turned into what looked like rabid beasts, their eyes filled with a bloodthirsty and murderous look.

The two giant men suddenly dashed out, the strong Green Iron rubble exploding into pieces everywhere they went!

“Who are you? This is the Merchant Union’s arena; we will not allow you to cause trouble here!” Beiming Shang suddenly roared into the heavens, frigid air seeping from him.

Howling, Beiming Shang also flew into the air.

Balls of strange blue flames flew from his body. Those flames shortly condensed into blue fire clouds. These icy clouds, along with the power to freeze the heaven and earth, shot towards the woman.

“Beiming Shang, is it?” The woman’s voice was still sweet as she said indifferently, “The Misty Pavilion’s business has nothing to do with you! Your Beiming family can act like an overlord in the Merchant Union, but in the Endless Sea, you would not even be a third-rate family! You better know your place!”

“Arrogant!” Beiming Shang raised himself into mid-air and stood across from the woman, his face as cold as glacier. He sneered, “I would like to see exactly how capable you are, since you dare to bluster with your wild arrogance!”

The cloud-like [Polar Ice Flames] surged towards the woman like tides.

The woman snorted as she suddenly rose up, and disappeared into the mass of clouds. After a long moment her voice rang out, “Come and fight up here, don’t harm the innocent.”

“Alright!” Beiming Shang shouted, his body also shooting high above the sky, and disappeared in the clouds.

Thundering roars came from the heavens, as if it was the end of

the world.

Everyone in the arena knew that Beiming Shang had started fighting with the mysterious woman, but sadly, no one could see this fight.

“Boom boom boom!”

The two towering men had, by then, surrounded Mo Tuo, and ruthlessly started beating him.

These two big men were like iron giants, their bodies extremely sturdy. They weren't afraid of the arms thick strands of lightning, and kept bombarding Mo Tuo in the midst of the lightning strikes.

Strikes of lightning flew in the sky like an electrical dragon. The lightning came from Mo Tuo, fifteen strands in total, and they formed a closely-knit electrical web, charging at the towering giant men.

“Mo Tuo! Give up the treasure map, or else don't blame me for attacking the Mo family members!”

Mu Xun's voice came from a corner of the arena. He had brought a group of masters from the Medicine Valley, and walked towards Mo Tuo step by step, his expression grim.

“Mu Xun! The treasure map isn't with the Mo family! Release Chaoge now, or else you're not going to walk out of Tianyun City alive!” Mo Tuo was furious, even under the joined forces of the two giant men, he could still give out threats.

“Alright then! You forced me to do this!” Mu Xun's voice was cold, and he said to the Medicine Valley masters beside him, “Kill everyone in the Mo family!”

Then Mu Xun also sprinted out, his body like a beam of light, he joined the forces of the two giant men and bombarded Mo Tuo.

“Pop pop pop! Boom boom boom!”

The electrical dragon moved around in the sky. The two

towering giant men were like monstrous beasts. One of them grabbed two millstone sized Green Iron pieces, and whenever he got near Mo Tuo he would throw the thousand-jin piece of Green Iron at Mo Tuo.

TL Note: A Jin 斤 is a little more than a pound.

In a short moment, the whole arena was filled with lightning and flying stones. Fire spread everywhere and silver lights scurried around.

In the crowd, those that were struck by the electric dragon turned into a crisp, while those that were struck by the stones turned into a pulp.

The fight among these masters had turned everything into chaos!

Many of the warriors cursed, shrieked and roared as they all tried to get out of the way.

Those with low capability simply escaped the God Stone Square in a panic, afraid to stay and watch the show.

The masters from Medicine Valley took advantage of the situation and stormed towards the Mo family, attacking its descendents and warriors.

However, the Mo family's descendents and warriors were undaunted. They weren't afraid of the Medicine Valley's attacks, and firmly suppressed those that came at them.

Now Shi Jian actually seemed like an outsider.

In the arena he watched the Mo family suffer in surprise, but inside, he was as delighted as ever.

"Grandpa, do it now!" Shi Jian stepped forward, and said firmly.

"Do it now?" Shi Jian froze, then furrowed his brows: "You mean?"

"Mo Zhan is dead. Mo Tuo will surely seek vengeance! Rather than letting the Mo family recover and strike us, why not take

advantage of their weakness! You can cooperate with Mu Xun and those two to kill Mo Tuo while we will hunt down the second and third generations of the Mo family. It's best if we completely cripple the entire Mo family today, so they would never have a chance of revenge." Shi Yan said cruelly.

"Big brother! Shi Yan is right! Mo Zhan is already dead and Mo Chaoge is probably not going to live either! At this point, we should just screw it all and do it! Screw the Martial Competition, take out the Mo family first!" Shi Tie came up and growled.

Shi Tian Luo and Shi Tian Yun were both heavily injured, still laying on the ground. He had already suppressed his anger, but now that the perfect chance was here, Shi Tie couldn't hold himself back anymore.

Han Feng was also here, and he nodded at Shi Jian.

"Beiming Shang is kept busy right now, so the Beiming family has no one in charge. Without his permission, no one in the Beiming family would help the Mo family. This is a golden opportunity! If we miss this chance we'll never get it again!" Shi Yan gave in another word of encouragement and said, "Grandpa, you guys kill Mo Tuo, and I will take care of Mo Qi and Mo Yanyu, who severely wounded brother Tian Luo and brother Tian Yun. We can entirely destroy the Mo family bloodline!"

"Kid, you sure are ruthless enough!" Shi Tie smacked Shi Yan, and before Shi Jian agreed he rushed out and shouted, "Mo Tuo, you old dog, today you will die for sure!"

Once Shi Tie exited, Shi Jian stopped hesitating and said to Han Feng, "Idiot, protect Shi Yan!" Then he also stormed out and roared, "Mo Tuo! It's time to settle it between us!"

Chapter 72 - Each With Their Own Schemes

The whole arena was in a mess!

Mo Tuo was besieged by many masters. Those that Mu Xun brought from Medicine Valley also hounded people from the Mo family.

In the Shi family's area, once Shi Jian and Shi Yan took action, the masters of the Shi family also sprinted up and attacked the Mo family members.

In a short moment, the arena broke out into a war.

None of the warriors who came to watch the Martial Competition expected the event to go down this way.

When the big fight erupted, many furious powers vented out their enmity and ruthlessly attacked their enemies, embroiling many innocents. Because of this, in just few minutes, a number of warriors were sent to their death.

The bystanders could no longer sit still.

Seeing the two families slaughtering each other, very few people decided to stay and continue watching. They all hurriedly retreated from the God Stone Square, afraid that they might become a target in the slaughterhouse.

The retreat of the bystanders was very swift. Now the only people present in the God Stone Square were those from the five big families.

The Beijing family was merely the observers. In the absence of Beiming Shang, the Beiming family decided to only be a spectator, not aiding either of the families.

Beiming Ce stood in silence in the Beiming family's tower. He was closely watching the besieged Mo Tuo, and occasionally gazed at the Mo family members who were attacked by the Shi family.

“Young master, what should we do? Keep watching?”

Beiming Ce's eyes flashed coldly as he spoke, “Mmmhmm, we don't need to entangle ourselves in this dog fight. Let them chase among themselves; whatever the outcome, it wouldn't affect us in the least. We will directly curb the one who loses in the end and take away their inheritance. With our influence in the Merchant Union, we will be the prime benefactors.”

“You are wise, Young Master. But, should we stay?”

“There's no need.” Beiming Ce suddenly smiled, “Let's go back, staying and doing nothing wouldn't be that great after all. We're not joining the fight anyway, so let's go back and arrange things a little. Let's go.”

Upon hearing that, all the masters from the Beiming family nodded in unison. Led by Beiming Ce, they all retreated from the God Stone Square.

Now, in the arena, only four families remained: Zuo, Ling, Mo and Shi. The Shi and Mo families were fighting, while the Zuo and Ling families were merely the spectators.

Unknowingly, Shi Yang arrived at where the Zuo family was. He bowed to Zuo Xu and said, “Uncle Zuo, I hope you could please keep an eye on the Ling family during this fight.”

Zuo Xu casually replied while sipping his tea, “Don't worry, the Zuo and Ling families always had feud between us. If the Ling family dares to make a move, we won't be sit still either. Rest assured and do whatever your Shi family wants. The Ling family won't be problem for you.”

“Thank you, Uncle Zuo.”

“It's nothing, whether it be business or personal affairs, the Zuo family and the Shi family have always been allies; of course we would take some pressure for you.” Zuo Xu nonchalantly said. He gazed at where the Shi family was assembled, and asked in

confusion, “Where’s Shi Yan, that little brat? Why haven’t I seen him?”

Shi Yang was surprised and also looked around, realizing that there truly was no sign of Shi Yan. He shook his head and gave a wry smile, “That kid was just there, now who knows where he’s gone.”

“Watch that kid! The brat is very good, he’s gonna be the future hope of your Shi family, you can’t afford to lose him.” Zuo Xu said.

“Haha, Uncle Han Feng is keeping an eye on him, no need to worry, Uncle Zuo.”

“Hmm, alright then.” Zuo Xu smiled, and while glancing at Zuo Shi next to him, his smile looked a little strange, “Xiao Shi is also quite fond of your Shi Yan.”

Shi Yang’s expression bloomed, and he nodded: “I’ll be going then, Uncle Zuo.”

When Shi Yang was gone, Zuo Shi’s face flashed in confusion, and she said, “Grandpa, when was I fond of that guy? What are you bullshitting about? Sending that Dragon Turtle Armor was your idea too, it wasn’t just me who wanted to help him, sheesh.”

“Haha, whatever, same thing.” Zuo Xu seemed like he was in a good mood, and he told the Zuo family members, “We will stay here for now and watch the Ling family for the Shi’s. If the Ling family dares to get involved, we don’t need to act kindly to them either. Hehe, after today, the situation in the Merchant Union is really going to turn upside down. We can’t let the Ling family take any benefits.”

At the Ling family’s side, the head of the family, Ling Jue, frowned silently.

The masters of the Ling family were all standing behind Ling Jue. Seeing that he hadn’t spoken yet, these people were all on guard, as if silently waiting for his decision.

At the Mo family's place, all their members were surrounded by the people from Medicine Valley and the Shi family. Their situation was turning from bad to worse.

Suddenly, Mo Chao Tian broke through and quickly rushed to Ling Jue's side; kneeling down on one knee he spoke in panic, "Uncle Ling, please let the Ling family step in! My father is besieged by many masters, he might not last long. We are also being chased by people from Medicine Valley and the Shi family, it's getting harder and harder to hold up. Uncle Ling, for old time's sake, please help our family, the entire Mo family will always remember your favor."

Ling Jue furrowed his brows and lightly sighed. He said in frustration, "Chao Tian, it's not that I don't want to help, but the Zuo family hasn't made a move yet. Once our family gives aid, the Zuo family will immediately spring up. The reason why I haven't done anything yet is because I'm watching the Zuo family for you guys."

"But if this continues, the Mo family might not be able to withstand it any longer!" Mo Chao Tian said in fear.

"If the Ling family cuts in now, it would force the Zuo family to get involved too; it would be useless." Ling Jue shook his head. He hesitated for a moment and then shouted: "Shao Feng! Bring some people and bring Yanyu back here. Yanyu is your future wife, she can't die!"

"Yes!" Ling Shao Feng called out and fiercely sprinted out, accompanied by some of the warriors from the Ling family.

"Chao Tian, Yanyu is your daughter, and the daughter-in-law of the Ling family. I will protect her for you. As for the rest, sigh, I really can't help. I can only promise you that I will make sure the Zuo family won't step in to go against the Mo family, this is all I can do." Ling Jue said in frustration.

Mo Chao Tian was in a daze. He deeply gazed at Ling Jue, and

after quite a while finally turned away in grief, silently returning to the Mo family's battle.

"Big brother..." Ling Jie Qing whispered hesitantly. He said, "If we don't help, the Mo family will definitely lose heavily this time. Mo Tuo might develop a hatred for us."

Ling Jue's expression was calm as he sat there and lightly took a sip of tea. He lowered his head and said, "Younger brother, at this time, we cannot be reckless. Zuo Xu won't easily let us join the fight. Besides, the Misty Pavilion has a Sky Realm master. She is going against the Mo family, if our family steps in, we won't get anything good out of this. Also, this is an opportunity, Mo Zhan is dead, and Mo Qi is in danger. Yanyu will be the hope of the third generation of the Mo family. If Yanyu becomes our family's daughter-in-law, our Ling family can openly take the Mo family's properties when they get in a dangerous situation. And if one day Yanyu becomes the head of the Mo family, with her status as the daughter in law of the Ling family, hehe..."

"Good scheming, big brother." Ling Jie was stunned for a while, then he finally nodded, "I was thoughtless, big brother. You are one that strongly considers the future."

"Yes, we only need to protect Yanyu, the rest we don't need to care about." Ling Jue raised his head, and squinted towards the fight in mid air, saying, "When Yanyu gets here, we can go back. This time the odds are against Mo Tuo." He sighed, "Who would've known that the Misty Pavilion hid a Sky Realm master, Brother Mo, it's not that I don't care about our friendship, just that you're truly in back luck."

"Grandpa Ling! I beg you to save my grandpa!" Mo Yanyu was brought back. Once she arrived at the Ling family's side, she immediately knelt down, tears marks streaked down the sides of her cheeks, "If you don't help now, my grandpa might not be able to last long! Grandpa Ling, please! As long as you give in your aid, I will marry Shao Feng right now!"

“Yanyu, it’s not that I don’t want to help, I just really can’t.” Ling Jue shook his head. He stood up and said, “In the future you will understand the painstaking decisions I am making now. Everything I am doing is for you and Shao Feng! Brother, take away Yanyu, we are going home.”

“Yes.” Ling Jie suddenly appeared behind Mo Yanyu. He hit her once, and the breathlessly crying Mo Yanyu suddenly went limp and fainted.

“Head of the Zuo family, I think that this Martial Competition can go on no more. Hmm, we are going back in advance, how about the Zuo family?” Ling Jue looked at the far away Zuo Xu and shouted loudly.

Zuo Xu was surprised, then secretly cursed out at the old fox. He also smilingly stood up and said: “We were also going to go, why, should we go together?”

“Sure thing, I was just going to chat a little bit with master Zuo, then we shall go together?” Ling Jue nodded and replied with a smile.

In the arena, the Ling and Zuo families had been sitting still as mountains. However, at this crucial moment, as if they did not see the chaos inside the arena, the two heads of the families walked side by side, and with their subordinates behind them, headed straight out of the God Stone Square.

Those remaining in the God Stone Square were only the onlookers who thought that they were strong enough to bear the aftershocks of the battle, the Mo family, the Shi family and the people from the Medicine Valley.

Chapter 73 - The Change in the Fallen God Stone

Shi Yan was roaming the God Stone Square leisurely.

Wherever there was a body, he would appear. His presence would cause the body to completely dry up and become devoid of any Profound Qi in mere seconds.

Because of the devastating battle, many nearby warriors felt the brunt of it.

Those warriors of Elementary and Nascent realms were the most affected, for they couldn't block the aftershocks from the battle between the Nirvana Realm warriors. Once they became entangled in their battle, there was no hope for them.

In just a few minutes, Shi Yan roamed around the God Stone Square and harvested all the Profound Qi from seven Elementary Realm and four Nascent Realm warriors.

Only Human Realm warriors were somewhat lucky to escape, as they could withstand the aftershocks generated from the battle, not receiving any life threatening wounds.

Therefore, there wasn't any corpses of a Human Realm warrior, which was very disappointing to Shi Yan.

Due to the mysterious power that could absorb the Profound Qi from the corpses into his meridians, Shi Yan hoped for more chaos. He was continually encouraging Shi Jain to fight against the Mo family in person so to increase the casualties, enabling him to enter the Human Realm faster.

Han Feng was lingering ten meters away from him like a ghost.

Wherever he went, Han Feng would follow him like a shadow, least he created some trouble.

Ten meters away, Han Feng was staring at Shi Yan with eyes

filled with confusion.

During the nasty battle, Shi Yan was acting weirdly. Han Feng couldn't figure out what Shi Yan was pondering; he didn't ask as he was just there to protect his young master in case of an accident.

Shuttling through the God Stone Square, Shi Yan would always stand beside the corpses for a while.

Although he saw the corpses undergoing some strange changes, Han Feng didn't care about it as he thought those dead warriors must have been poisoned and it was just taking effect now.

He never could have thought that such strange changes were actually caused by Shi Yan.

“Ahhh!”

Not far from Shi Yan, the God Stone suddenly collapsed and a painful cry was heard.

Hearing the cry, Shi Yan became ecstatic and he rushed over.

Under that collapsed God Stone, a Nascent Realm warrior was taking his last breaths.

The warrior was unfortunately hit by one of Mo Tuo's lightning bolts, however he seemed to possess some sort of defensive Martial Skill which had sustained him till now.

Shi Yan looked indifferent when standing beside the collapsed structure. Even from ten meters away, Shi Yan could feel the highly dense Nascent Realm Profound Qi coming from the injured warrior.

In just a few minutes, the warrior was sucked dry and Shi Yan harvested another batch of Profound Qi.

Han Feng was secretly watching Shi Yan in confusion from another corner of that collapsed stone.

It's so weird. Has anyone been using poison? Why did they all die in such a strange way?” Shi Yan shook his head and looked up at

Han Feng, “Uncle Han, there must be someone here in the arena with his own purpose.”

Han Feng nodded with approval, but was still perplexed.

“Paa!”

Lightning, as thick as an arm, flew over like a dragon and hit the structure heavily.

“Chee chee chee!”

As the lightning flashed on the collapsed structure, a layer of dim moonlight suddenly came out of that mountain-like stone.

That dim moonlight had created a strange but cool atmosphere, but the moonlight quickly disappeared and everything returned to normal.

Shi Yan and Han Feng, who were standing near that structure, had watched the whole process.

“Mmm!”

Shi Yan let out a soft sound and walked towards that collapsed structure frowning. He stretched out a hand and pressed on this mysterious stone.

Under the blazing sun, the stone was cool to the touch. It was as if the stone had been accumulating moonlight over thousand years and was carrying the coolness of the night.

And it was as heavy as an average metal.

Sensing it for a while, Shi Yan couldn't find anything out of the ordinary about the stone. He released his hand and asked Han Feng, frowning, “Uncle Han, did you see the stone shining for a few seconds just moments ago?”

“Yes.” Han Feng nodded softly and walked up as well. He touched the legendary stone himself and remarked, “No change, maybe it's because Mo Tuo's lightning struck it just now.”

“Yeah, it must have something to do with Mo Tuo’s Lighting Martial Spirit.” Shi Yan agreed as he couldn’t figure out anything special. There was still a bit of suspicion left in his mind, however since he couldn’t come up with anything now, he didn’t give it a further thought.

“Mo Family members! Disperse and go home!” Suddenly, from the battle arena, came Mo Tuo’s angry order.

Shi Yan looked in the direction from where the sound came.

Under the relentless attacks, Mo Tuo looked to be in a difficult situation; his back was severely bleeding and he seemed to be heavily wounded.

He didn’t continue to fight after Shi Tie’s severe strike and dashed towards the far away commercial street in a hurry.

Mu Xun, Shi Tie and Shi Jian immediately gave a chase without saying a word.

Those two tower-like men hesitated for a second, but ultimately stood in the center of the arena, not intending to kill anymore.

Those Mo family members also didn’t dare stay in the arena after Mo Tuo’s command, running away in all directions separately.

Shi Yan was calmly standing behind the God Stone and watching the surroundings. He saw the old man with unkempt hair from Poisonous Dragon Valley jealously protecting Mo Qi with Li Han, running towards a block of houses to the south of the God Stone Square.

.

“We can’t let Mo Qi live.” Shi Yan took a deep breath and said to Han Feng, “If the grass’ root isn’t pulled out, it will grow when spring comes. We have to take out Mo Qi.”

If the grass’ root isn’t pulled out, it will grow when spring comes.

Han Feng frowned and repeated that sentence twice, and finally

understood. His eyes sparkled as he softly said, “Young Master Yan is indeed capable of great things”

Without saying anything, Shi Yan walked away from the fallen God Stone and gave chase after Mo Qi.

Shi Yan soon exited the God Stone Square. Just as he was about to enter the narrow streets between the houses, he found Shi Yang and some Shi family members chase from behind too.

“Big Uncle, I will take care of Mo Qi, you go after the others.” Shi Yan yelled from afar.

Shi Yang was stunned as he saw it was Shi Yan who was giving chase. He reprimanded, “Where have you been till now? Don’t you know it’s chaos in the arena? Your grandpa will peel my skin if you have an accident!”

“It’s fine.” Han Feng appeared from behind Shi Yan and responded softly.

Seeing Han Feng behind Shi Yan, Shi Yang relaxed and smiled, “Well, you go after Mo Qi and I will go after Mo Chao Tian.”

Then he nodded at Han Feng, ran up to another road, and dashed away.

A quarter of an hour later.

On a small street in the south region, Mo Qi was in a murderous mood as he focused on running.

Suddenly a shadow appeared in front of him.

At the corner of the street ahead, Shi Yan leaned against the tone wall with a sneering smile on his face, and said casually, “Mo Qi, are you tired? Yeah, you can have a rest now.”

Mo Qi suddenly stopped with a ferocious face, “Shi Yan! You killed my brother, you must pay for it!”

“Pay for it?” Shi Yan’s mouth widened and shook his head, “Mo Zhan is not too far away, you may catch up to him if you are fast enough. I came to see you away.”

“Young Master Qi!” Li Han showed up from behind Mo Qi, and beside Li Han stood the Bloody Hand, from Poisonous Dragon Valley of the God-blessed Empire.

“Kill him!” Mo Qi pointed at Shi Yan and said angrily, “He has to die!”

“Let the younger generation solve their own problem. You’d better not get involved.” Han Feng suddenly popped up his head from a house, looking at Bloody Hand and Li Han coldly.

“Bloody Hand from Poisonous Dragon Valley?” Shi Yan gazed at that old man and suddenly remarked, “You refined that Blood Qi Pill? Well, Poisonous Dragon Valley is literally the cradle of degenerate alchemists who only know how to make degenerate pills.”

“Kid, you are seeking death!” Bloody Hand frowned as his face turned rigid suddenly. He grunted, “I had no qualms about getting involved in your Shi family and Mo family matter. But now that you are so arrogant, how about tasting my Poisonous Dragon Valley skill?”

“Young Master Yan, you take care of Mo Qi, Bloody Hand and Li Han are mine.” Han Feng announced softly and flew down from the roof as light as a feather and stood between Bloody Hand and Li Han.

“Hehe, you think we, Poisonous Dragon Valley, are that lame?” Bloody Hand smiled cunningly and immediately swallowed a strange pill, which was as big as a longan, and as crimson as blood.

After having that pill, Bloody Hand’s eyes suddenly turned red and his jumbled hair stood at its ends, while dense smell of blood came from his body.

Han Feng's face changed suddenly, "Young master Yan, go home right now!"

"Li Han, Mo Qi, kill that arrogant kid. I will take care of the old man." Bloody Hand broadened his mouth in a smile, and licked his lips with a horrifying expression.

"Uncle Han, be careful." Shi Yan was on alert as he realized something strange from Bloody Hand's change. He took a glance at Han Feng and Mo Qi, and ran towards the Green Moon Lake as fast as possible.

Before Han Feng could take off, Bloody Hand dashed forward and an intense bloody air suddenly enveloped him and prevented him from leaving.

Li Han and Mo Qi looked at each other and chased in Shi Yan's direction without a word.

Five minutes later.

On another street, Li Han and Mo Qi paused suddenly. Mo Qi said with a ferocious face, "Kid you are not running away? Are you tired of living?"

"I had said I will stop your Mo family from having descendents! I can't break my promise." Shi Yan stood at the entrance of the street, looking grim.

Wisps of white smoke were suddenly emitted from his body. The negative energy gushing from him gave off a murderous impression, like he was a bloody God of Slaughter from the Shura Blood Sea.

Since Han Feng was not with him, he could finally use his real ability now.

Chapter 74 - Taken Care Of!

Standing at the end of the alley, Shi Yan's body was emitting an extremely malignant pressure; but his heart however, was pure and his eyes serene.

Three millstone sized [Gravitational Fields] appeared behind him and by his sides. They were invisible and traceless as no one else except for him could detect them.

Negative energy poured out from his meridians and filled his whole body. Shi Yan's once sturdy body clearly became a lot thinner.

This was the first time that Shi Yan completely displayed [Rampage].

The biggest change he felt was that his spiritual sense could now perceive the slightest details and his mind was absolute calm.

Li Han slightly furrowed his brows. Looking at Shi Yan in front of him he always felt a little recognition, but when he thought deeply, he couldn't remember where he recognised him from.

On Mo Qi's two arms, strands of lightning as thick as fingers were formed, and his facial expressions became more and more ferocious.

“Uncle Li!” Mo Qi roared.

Li Han's expression froze, his body suddenly popped loudly. The sounds of his joints were like waves hitting upon the shore, gushing with momentum.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh!”

A swirl of wave-like white lights swiftly flowed out from Li Han's body.

Li Han's hands constantly pulled at the void space, and those white lights were like actual tides, stirring waves in thin air, and it

abruptly rolled towards Shi Yan.

“[Sea Cloud Roll]!”

Li Han stood firmly and yelled with a serious face.

In front of him, the waves folded in layers. Between him and Shi Yan there was suddenly a choppy river flow, the crushing waters in the river was controlled by his will, as if he wanted to drown Shi Yan right in front of him.

“Roar!”

Mo Qi growled and the strands of lightning wrapped around his arms became tongue-flicking snakes. They slithered above the waves and charged towards Shi Yan while releasing electric flashes.

Shi Yan’s heart was still as clear as a mirror. He remained unmoved from the oncoming attacks.

Just when the waves formed from Profound Qi were five meters away from him, Shi Yan suddenly took three steps back, his body submerged into the previously formed [Gravitational Fields].

Controlled by his will, the two [Gravitational Fields] on his left and right suddenly drifted a few meters forward and suddenly merged together!

“Thump thump! Bzz bzz bzz!”

The [Sea Cloud Rolls] released by Li Han and the electric snakes from Mo Qi directly clashed into the middle of the big [Gravitational Field] that was formed by the two smaller ones. Weird sounds came from inside that [Gravitational Field].

Those [Sea Cloud Rolls], formed by Profound Qi under a special martial skill, all of a sudden strangely turned into thin mists. It was as if the Profound Qi was dissolved in the [Gravitational Field] and became natural energies, dissipating into the earth.

The electrical snakes shot into the [Gravitational Field], as if

influenced by the strange whirlpool. These snakes actually became intertwined and continuously whirled in that area. They just weren't able to escape the restraints of the [Gravitational Field].

In Li Han and Mo Qi's eyes, it looked as if their attacks were stopped in mid-air. With their attacks unable to move forward, this appeared very strange to them.

The two froze. Confused by the sudden development, they were both caught off guard.

Shi Yan's murderous attempts were always clear. When noticing that the [Gravitational Field] was enough to stop the attacks of the two opponents, his mind was struck with an amazing idea.

He moved the [Gravitational Field] that stopped the attacks and slowly pushed it forward!

Now the swirling electric snakes were quickly charging towards Li Han and Mo Qi.

Li Han's expression changed, he finally realized it was Shi Yan who was secretly manipulating their attacks. He quickly stopped his Martial Skill and pulled out a sharp silver-white sword from his waist.

Once the sharp sword was in his hands, it looked as if it was tinted with a layer of color. The sword suddenly turned a strange light purple color, with purple marks appearing on the blade.

Li Han flicked his wrist and all of a sudden, the sword shone with a bright purple light. A three meter long fierce purple aura suddenly shot from the tip of the sword.

With a straight face, Li Han shouted, and raised his sword to strike down.

“Bzz bzz!”

The sword aura and the blade directly slashed onto the [Gravitational Field].

But the [Gravitational Field] remained unaffected. The lightning that came from Mo Qi was still suspended from above, and all at once, dropped onto Li Han.

Li Han shouted in pain, and hurriedly tried to retreat.

Shi Yan suddenly moved!

Like a thrusting spear, Shi Yan's body stabbed straight towards Mo Qi.

Mo Qi's expression changed, and he hurriedly backed away in fear.

"Mo Qi!" Shi Yan roared while coming towards Mo Qi.

Mo Qi instinctively looked towards Shi Yan.

Endless bloodlust was shown inside Shi Yan's eyes; it looked as if countless evil spirits were about to fly out of his pupils. Those evil spirits were drenched in blood; you could even clearly see their fragmented hearts in the chests as they rushed to pounce at Mo Qi.

Mo Qi was suddenly stunned, he blanked out in this crucial moment, right where he stood.

"Puchi!"

The five fingers on Shi Yan's left hand were like a sharp blade, stabbing right into Mo Qi's chest, and pierced his heart in one strike. Shi Yan's five fingers came straight out of Mo Qi's back.

Mo Qi shook under the piercing pain, his eyes instantly turned back and his consciousness returned.

"Mo Zhan is still waiting on the death road for you, take care." Shi Yan looked at him emotionlessly, and abruptly drew out the hand from his chest.

"Whoosh!"

Blood gushed out from Mo Qi's chest like a river bursting at its banks. Shi Yan quickly dodged the blood flow.

“Thump!”

Mo Qi’s life force was extinguished, and he fell on his back with blood still endlessly rushing out his chest.

“Young Master Qi!”

Li Han, who was numbed by the lightning, screamed out loud, his face full of terror. It was as if he couldn’t believe how Shi Yan got rid of Mo Qi so fast.

“Don’t yell, he’ll be waiting ahead for you too.” Shi Yan turned around, he suddenly raised that blood-covered left hand, and waved it at Li Han. “This is the blood from Mo Qi’s heart, do you want to know how it tastes like?”

Li Han’s face suddenly changed, and he shouted, “Shi Yan, you’re seeking your own demise! You’re only at the Nascent Realm, you have no chance against me!”

“Are you trying to add courage to yourself, with your capability that’s higher than my Nascent Realm? It’s no use, today I will use you to break into the threshold of the Human Realm!”

Using his mind, Shi Yan’s silently shifted the [Gravitational Field] to beside Li Han and suddenly enveloped him within it.

In mere seconds, Li Han felt like he was in the deepest whirlpools in the ocean, his body uncontrollably swaying along with the whirlpool.

Even his Profound Qi was no longer in his control.

“Back when we were in the Stone Woods, I already wanted to kill you, but you released the blue smoke bomb before I could.” Shi Yan walked towards him step by step, his body wrapped in white, fabric-like mist. He took a quick step and flew out into the [Gravitational Field].

Once he entered the whirlpool, the white mist that was present in the whirlpool quickly entered Li Han’s body under the rapid

rotations.

“You! Ding Yan! You are Ding Yan!!” Li Han’s expression changed, he suddenly screamed.

“It was the Mo family that took action first, you can’t blame me for being harsh.” Shi Yan hopped into the center of the whirlpool, standing closely in front of Li Han, his blade-like fingers grabbing Li Han’s throat.

“Crack!”

The crisp sound of bones breaking came from Li Han’s neck, as he died unwillingly.

The [Gravitational Field] quickly disappeared!

The negative energy filled with the fear, desperation, and loathing from Li Han and Mo Qi all flowed into the meridians in Shi Yan’s body.

In a minute, both Li Han and Mo Qi became two dry corpses, their Profound Qi gone without a trace.

Shi Yan took a deep breath. He let his mind calm down, and closed his eyes to listen to his surroundings, there was not a single sound.

One hand carrying Li Han and another with Mo Qi, Shi Yan ran swiftly along the alley. He sprinted through the alley like a ghost.

Ten minutes later.

Shi Yan arrived at the Moon Lake, in an area where no one went to. He threw the corpses of Li Han and Mo Qi into the lake, watching the two corpses sinking to the bottom.

The look on Li Han and Mo Qi’s dead bodies was too obvious. To prevent anyone from noticing his secret, he had to properly take care of their corpses.

At this sensitive time, he couldn't reveal his identity.

The Beiming family was still trying to find him.

To look out for the Beiming family, he had to continue hiding his true identity. He could only take care of business more conveniently while in the dark.

“Splash!”

As Shi Yan was standing there in a daze, a breathtakingly gorgeous face suddenly appeared in the middle of the Moon Lake.

This was a startling beauty, her temperament was elegant, noble, and extraordinary, like a goddess of the Moon Lake that came down from the heavens.

This woman was wearing a black crape, the crape now clung tightly to her perfect figure, revealing her most tempting curves. Now that stunning body rose slowly to the surface of the lake, like a beautiful bright moon.

Her body surfaced from Moon Lake. Once that figure completely rose from the waters, she stepped on the lake water, her beautiful brows slightly furrowed, she walked towards the shore with elegant grace.

Shi Yan stared with wide eyes, this was the first time he was truly intoxicated by a woman's beauty.

This woman, whether it be her body, temperament, or beauty, was completely on another level compared to Mu Yu Die.

“The mysterious woman!”

Just when the woman was about to walk up onto the shore, Shi Yan's heart shook, and he suddenly realized who this woman was.

The unknown Sky Realm master who appeared above the arena.

Chapter 75 - A Kiss

Shi Yan's bright eyes were focused on the mysterious and graceful woman, who was walking on the lake towards the bank, step by step.

Suddenly she coughed out blood and her body shivered, as a trace of hopelessness passed through her eyes.

As Shi Yan watched, the woman's face grew pale and her eyes dimmed. Just as she was about to reach the bank, that mysterious woman suddenly trembled and fainted.

Shi Yan quickly realized that she must have been severely injured by Beiming Shang.

After realizing this, Shi Yan immediately rushed towards the lake and caught the mysterious woman before she could drown.

The touch of that exquisite body intoxicated Shi Yan so much so that he was barely able to bring the woman up onto the bank.

Shi Yan felt for breath under her nose and found her to be breathing steadily; there was a strange energy growing in her and nourishing her body bit by bit.

As the bloodthirsty desire welled up in his mind, Shi Yan's quickly realized he was in a precarious situation as the negative energy was on the verge of exploding.

He had absorbed too much negative energy and as it was at the crucial period of purification, his meridians were emitting greater amounts of negative energy.

Holding this mysterious woman in his arms, Shi Yan's expression shifted continuously.

After a long while, Shi Yan finally came up with an idea.

He tore a piece of cloth from his coat and covered the woman's gorgeous face, then directly ran to a brothel with the woman in his

arms.

The mysterious woman was a Sky Realm warrior and she had been injured by Beiming Shang. Therefore, she would be considered to be an enemy of Beiming Family!

In the Merchant Union, the Beiming Family was still the most influential power, as no other family could compete with them for now.

This woman was so mysterious and her cultivation realm was high; Beiming Shang would be very unsettled as long as this woman was alive.

Shi Yan was determined to let her live on!

Tonight, Tianyun City would not be tranquil. Beiming Shang would certainly send out his experts to search for this woman, and Shi Yan would have to protect her until she woke up.

As the negative energy in him grew stronger and stronger, and as he had such a beautiful woman in his arms, he was barely able to control his desires.

However, he knew that he couldn't do anything to the woman, or the Shi family would be annihilated after she woke up!

A quarter of an hour later.

Carrying that mysterious woman with her face covered, Shi Yan directly walked into the Misty Rain House, in the south of the Tianyun City, and yelled, "Madam, get me two pretty girls! Quickly!"

"Hua! Hua! Hua!"

Shining purple crystal coins rolled out of Shi Yan's pocket onto the counter of the first floor of the Misty Rain House.

"Coming!"

A 30 some years old sexy woman with heavy makeup and a professional smile on her face popped her head out from upstairs.

After a quick glimpse at the purple crystal coins, she burst into loud laughter, and replied happily, “Master, please come up the third floor, I will arrange the girls for you right away!”

“Good.”

Shi Yan nodded and followed the woman up to the third floor with the unknown woman in his arms.

“Yan Yun, Rou, hurry up! Come to Room No.3 and give this master your best!” The brothel Madam laughed seductively and showed Shi Yan into a room, as she shouted to the girls.

“Madam, we will be there right away!”

From the room at the upstairs corner came a sweet response.

Before long, two pretty teenage girls with seductive eyes entered Shi Yan’s room.

“Master, you brought another girl with you? Huh? You think the girls in my Misty Rain House can’t satisfy you?” The Madam stood in the room and examined the mysterious woman with her sophisticated eyes and couldn’t help but giggle, “You are very interesting! I’ve never seen anyone bring a girl by himself.”

“Hmm, I’m rather powerful at ‘that’ and have special tastes. It would be more fun to have one that I brought!” Shi Yan glanced at the Madam and said indifferently.

The Madam kept smiling and looked at the mysterious woman again, smiling knowingly to herself.

Naturally, she guessed that the woman must have been grabbed by Shi Yan and he was going to take her virginity in the Misty Rain House. In case that woman couldn’t endure it the first time, he got two girls to satisfy him.

The Madam had seen such occasions many times, so she could

handle it easily. She nodded and said, “Yan Yun, Rou, take care of this master. And try your best to satisfy him!”

“Don’t worry Madam. We’ve been in this industry for so long, we know how to make our clients happy.” That girl called Yan Yun looked at Shi Yan with a big smile and softly licked her lips, “Master, I will make you comfortable.”

“You disappear!” Shi Yan couldn’t suppress his desires anymore. After a deep breath, he yelled to the Madam.

“Great! Master, enjoy yourself! Call me whenever you need more girls.” The Madam seductively turned around and walked back to the door with a face full of smiles, and considerately closed the door.

Shi Yan then put the woman onto the soft carpet.

Putting one of his hands on the woman’s back, Shi Yan found that the strange power in her had already flowed over her whole body, speeding up the circulation of her Profound Qi.

Furrowing his brows, Shi Yan quickly figured out that this woman must have taken some rare pills, which were taking effect even while she was unconscious. The pills were recovering her injuries quickly and making her Profound Qi operate automatically, in order to wake her up as soon as possible.

“You two, come with me.”

So many streams of negative energy were gushing out from his meridians and he couldn’t stand it anymore. Quickly, he wrapped the two girls in his arms and pushed them onto the bed, which was covered with a red quilt.

After an unknowingly long time.

Slowly, Shi Yan woke up to find his eyes extremely clear, as he could now precisely feel the wisps of mysterious energy coming

out from his meridians.

Part of the mysterious energy had seeped in his blood, flesh, bones and veins, and the remainder had congregated in his dantain.

This mysterious energy had made his Profound Qi become extremely dense and fresh.

Under the control of his will, his Profound Qi was boiling in his body like a spring tide.

Holding his breath, Shi Yan went into meditation, clearing his mind of any thoughts and letting his Profound Qi flow freely in his body.

After a long time, Shi Yan's body shook, and he immediately woke up.

His senses were different all of a sudden.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan could clearly sense the essence of the air between heaven and earth. The essence was everywhere in the air, though he couldn't sense it before.

But at this moment, he could clearly perceive its invisible movements!

His Profound Qi had become extremely accurate as well, as it would fly out swiftly from the middle finger of his left hand at his will.

With a thought, his Profound Qi skipped continuously. It came to life and turned into a blade of grass, a magic snake, and then a flying worm.

Feeling the essence in the air, and refining everything in the world.

This was Human Realm!

Shi Yan's mouth formed a joyful smile. In delight, he slowly stepped off the bed.

He took a look back at the bed and realized it had become a mess. Two naked, white bodies were spread upon it, with a satisfied smile on their faces. They were deep asleep.

These two women were not warriors and seemed to be unable to bear his mysterious energy. As he ejaculated, that mysterious energy didn't come out, for it had already been absorbed by Shi Yan.

With a little surprise, Shi Yan turned his head back and without hesitation walked over to the mysterious woman slowly.

Bright moonlight was coming through the window. It was late at night.

Shi Yan stretched out his hand and examined the woman's back, only to find that she was recovering at an unbelievable speed!

At this speed, she would wake up at dawn.

Tonight Beiming Shang must be searching for her everywhere, however he would have never believed that she would be in a brothel.

After tonight, this unknown woman could recover up to 80 percent, and then she could go to anywhere in Tianyun City.

How is Han Feng?

Shi Yan suddenly remembered Han Feng. If he escaped from Bloody Hand, he would be looking for Shi Yan everywhere. Once he couldn't find Shi Yan, he would assume that he was killed by Li Han and Mo Qi.

After all, Han Feng didn't know Shi Yan's real ability, while Li Han was a Human Realm warrior!

Shi Jian regarded Shi Yan as the treasure of the Shi family, therefore, once he knew that Shi Yan was dead, he would do

everything he could to get revenge.

After a thought, Shi Yan decided to leave quickly and return home.

As his hand stroked the woman's back, it finally came to the cloth that covered her pretty face.

Lifting a corner of the cloth, Shi Yan revealed her cherry-like lips. He smiled unexpectedly, went up, and pressed his lips on hers.

An intoxicating fragrance was coming out from that woman's mouth...

In just a short moment of inhaling it, Shi Yan felt rather refreshed and found a comfort he had never experienced before. He couldn't suppress his desire again.

Moving his mouth away unwillingly, Shi Yan raised his head and gazed at her with emotional eyes, and mumbled, "Well, I saved your life, this kiss is my reward."

After that, Shi Yan opened the half-closed window and swiftly jumped out.

His figure moved in the dark night for a moment, faded into the dim moonlight, and finally disappeared.

Chapter 76 - Exquisite Figure

Our first sponsored chapter!

This chapter was sponsored by N. Waggoner and N. Meinen. Many thanks for their donations. This make 1/3 sponsored chapters for the week.

The sky was dimly lit.

In the main room of the third floor in Misty Rain House, Xia Xin Yan slowly woke up.

A pair of eyes as clear as water were filled with confusion. She looked around the room and finally saw the bed draped in red duvet covers.

Xia Xin Yan's heart shook. She abruptly sat up on the carpet, and looked at the bed in panic.

On the bed, the two girls from the Misty Rain House, Yan Yun and Rou, were completely naked. The whole room was filled with a strange scent.

Numerous thoughts flashed through Xia Xin Yan's mind. She hurriedly checked her own body, and realizing she was still untainted, she finally sighed in relief.

Her fight with Beiming Shang had injured her quite seriously. When falling into the Moon Lake, she only had the time to take a Nutrition Pill.

It was due to the improper distribution of the medicinal powers of the Nutrition Pill that she had suddenly fainted and fell unconscious while walking up onto the bank.

Her memories just before she fainted slowly became clear, and she remembered seeing Shi Yan standing at the bank of the lake...

That was the last thing she could remember before she fainted.

Xia Xin Yan felt something on her face. She reached out to grab it and found the piece of cloth that Shi Yan used to cover her gorgeous face.

Looking at the sweaty and stinky rag, Xia Xin Yan furrowed her brows, and she became even more confused.

What happened?

Xia Xin Yan stood up, gazing at the two sleeping girls on the bed, and groaned. She then pulled out a white handkerchief from her sleeve to cover her face again. Finally, she walked to the door and pushing it open, shouting, “Is there anyone here?”

“Coming right up!” The voice of the Madam rang out.

In a short moment, the Madam, who had previously led Shi Yan into this room, came up smiling.

Once she arrived into the room, the Madam nervously peeked at the bed, and suddenly shouted in surprise, “Hey, where’s that young master?”

“Young master?” Xia Xin Yan furrowed her brows, and a strange light flashed across her eyes. “Where is this place? Who brought me here?”

“Miss, you don’t remember anything?”

The Madam was dazed, her makeup-caked face was filled with a strange expression. She scanned Xia Xin Yan from head to toe, then suddenly laughed, “Miss, that young master couldn’t have possibly just wiped his ass and left after violating you? Ha, I have no idea who that young master was, you better not give me shit for this.”

Xia Xin Yan’s expression froze, her slim hand smacked the table in the room.

“Boom!”

That solid wooden table was instantly crushed, wooden chips and

sawdust spreading everywhere on the floor.

The Madam's face immediately changed, and she almost cried on the spot. With a terrified voice she yelled, "It's not my fault! I didn't do anything! Miss, please let me go!"

"I asked you; what is this place? And who brought me here?" Xia Xin Yan's eyes were filled with impatience.

"So what happened was..."

The Madam sobbed, and fearfully described the whole process in which the things happened. She kept shaking her head in denial, "Miss, I really had nothing to do with it! Please forgive me!"

She had only thought that Xia Xin Yan was violated by Shi Yan, and worried that under the mask of rage on Xia Xin Yan's face, something bad would be done to her. So the Madam kept crying and begging.

After hearing the Madam, Xia Xin Yan was shocked and her expression was very strange.

Who was that person?

He took me to the brothel, but totally ignored me and audaciously sought pleasure. He really is the most perverted bastard in the world!

Xia Xin Yan had hundred percent faith in her beauty!

Growing up, she had seen too many different men who coveted her beauty. She knew exactly how fatally alluring she was to men.

That was the reason why she always concealed her face, to prevent unnecessary complications.

That person was obviously a very perverted guy, she could see it from the fact that he brought her to a brothel. But this extremely perverted guy only had sex with the two tacky makeup-caked prostitutes and didn't make a single move on herself?

Why?

While feeling very confused, Xia Xin Yan also felt a slight bit of rage.

I'm not as good as these two prostitutes? Is he fucking blind?

"It's not my fault! It's really not my fault!" The Madam continued to beg, she kept yelling, but secretly kept observing Xia Xin Yan's attitude at the same time. Then she hesitatingly asked, "Miss, what did that kid do to you?"

Xia Xin Yan's eyes turned cold as she glared at the Madam.

The Madam felt a chill run down her body. She started shivering and didn't dare to ask anything more.

Xia Xin Yan thought for a while, and finding the sky slowly turning bright, jumped off the same window from which Shi Yan had earlier exited.

On the street, her figure flashed for a few seconds, then disappeared without a trace.

The Madam blankly stared at her disappearing silhouette, and secretly sighed in relief. After quite a while she murmured to herself, "I've been the Madam here for this many years, but I've never seen a woman with such a beautiful figure. That young master sure had a lot of luck, being able to seek pleasure on such a high-class woman."

The Shi family, in the Stone Room.

Shi Jian was furious as he roared in rage, "Find him! You all have to put in all your strength into finding him! Everyone put the Mo family to the side, you have to find Shi Yan first! Don't come back if you can't find Shi Yan!"

The Shi family masters, Shi Tie, Shi Dang, and Han Feng all lowered their heads, their expressions dejected.

"Master, it's all my fault, I couldn't protect Young Master Yan."

Han Feng lowered his head, but his eyes looked sinister, “Xie Shou’s medicine could only last for two hours, now that it should have worn off, I will bring you Xie Shou’s head.”

“Xie Shou cannot walk out of Tianyun City alive!”

Shi Jian’s eyes were blood red, with a murderous look he said, “But right now we don’t have time to take care of Xie Shou, Shi Yan is the most important issue! Everyone go to that place, and even if you have to dig up the whole Tianyun City, you have find Shi Yan! He has another Martial Spirit so he won’t die that easily. You all have to search for him with all your efforts!”

“Another Martial Spirit?”

The faces of Shi Tie and Shi Dang were full of surprise. At this moment, they finally realized why Shi Jian was so furious.

Warriors with twin Martial Spirits were one in ten thousand. Each one of such warriors would all eventually become outstanding figures!

This was why Beiming Shang arranged Yin Kui and Jiu Shan to protect Beiming Ce.

A family descendant with twin Martial Spirits, if under normal circumstances, would definitely become the future leader of the family. They can bring a family to new heights.

If such a figure suddenly died, it would become a painful strike to a family!

“Big brother, I will go find him myself!” Shi Tie also realized the seriousness of the situation, his face darkened, and was about to immediately leave the Stone Room.

“Master, Young Master Yan is back.”

Right at this moment, Han Zhong appeared out of nowhere and said excitedly, “Young Master Yan is fine, he’s going to arrive at the Stone Room soon.”

“Hahaha!”

Shi Jian laughed into the sky, his expression turned from a thunderstorm to a sunny sky, “I knew that kid would be okay! Look, didn’t he come back in one piece?”

Shi Tie and the rest were all making weird faces, thinking, Who was it that was drowned in anxiousness, and looking so panicked as if his parents had died or something?

“You killed those two?” Shi Tie was shocked. He looked at Shi Yan with disbelief, and said in surprise, “Li Han was a Human Realm warrior! You were able to kill him?”

“I suddenly broke through into the Human Realm during the fight, then everything became easy.” Shi Yan smiled nonchalantly.

After hearing that, many Shi family warriors in the room were all stunned, their jaws dropped, and stared at Shi Yan with strange expressions.

Shi Jian dazed for a second, then he rushed towards Shi Yan and grabbed his arm. After detecting for a while, he suddenly laughed, “The Gods have not wronged the Shi family! I knew you little brat was some good stuff! Good good! Seventeen years old and in the Human Realm! The nurturing we gave to you did not go in vain! You will definitely become an outstanding figure of this generation!”

“What happened to Mo Tuo?” Shi Jian furrowed his brows and asked.

“Heavily injured! He went back to the Mo family with his [Blood Escape] skill, but he won’t be able to recover for three years! Now he’s probably hiding in his shell in the Mo family, he wouldn’t dare to leave the Mo family for a while.” Shi Tie sneered, and spoke indignantly, “If it weren’t for those two guys from the Misty Pavilion stopping their chase, Mo Tuo wouldn’t have been able to escape. Too bad we couldn’t kill Mo Tuo.”

“It’s good enough. This time Mo Tuo is heavily injured, Mo Zhan and Mo Qi are dead, and many warriors from the Mo family were also killed. From now on, the Mo family will never have what it takes to compete with our family again! Hmph, now is the time for us to take as much spoils from the battle as possible! Father, should we go all out?” Shi Dang said.

“Pass my command, the masters from all the other surrounding cities, from now on they must immediately attack the strongholds of the Mo family! The ones from Tianyun City should also take action now. Other than the headquarters of the Mo family, you can mercilessly attack all the rest of the places!” Shi Jian roared.

The Zuo family.

In the secret room, Chi Xiao’s expression was a bit embarrassed, but his face showed a wry smile.

Zuo Xu was sipping his tea, and he was also frustrated. He sighed and said, “Whatever, who could’ve known that girl was a Sky Realm warrior. Now we have to use other methods.”

“That girl’s actual combat ability should be around Disaster Realm, Third Sky. But her Martial Spirit is very strange, it’s like she could borrow power from her past life, and temporarily step into the Sky Realm. It’s very frightening! This Martial Spirit has never appeared before; it looks like the Endless Sea is truly an extraordinary place.”

Chi Xiao frowned, and sighed in frustration, “That girl could instantly raise her power to the Sky Realm, probably no one in Tianyun City could easily take that fragment of the map from her. Although I’m not scared of her, I don’t want our fight to be mutually destructive either. If that were the case, my identity would be revealed, and that old fox Beiming Shang would definitely notice something.”

“Hopefully the Misty Pavilion doesn’t know that we did this. Or else the situation could get really sticky.” Zuo Xu sighed.

“What’s going on with the Shi family’s side?” Chi Xiao moaned, and then suddenly asked.

“I will communicate with Shi Jian about this. Then, after the situation becomes less tense, I will send someone to the Misty Pavilion, and hopefully we’d be able to cooperate. Sigh, that girl could instantly jump to the Sky Realm, so I guess this is all we could do.”

“Hmm, it’s the only way. I hope that girl won’t hold a grudge against me. Sigh, I really feel a little guilty fighting a little girl.”

Chapter 77 - Pounding Energy

As the sun rose, Xia Xin Yan returned to the Misty Pavilion.

The two towering giant men were already waiting in the Misty Pavilion. Seeing that she had returned, they immediately rushed up, asking urgently: “Mistress, are you hurt?”

Shaking her head, Xia Xin Yan answered, “I’m fine, the Yang family’s Nutrition Pill is truly a unique elixir of the Endless Sea, I am alright now.”

The Misty Pavilion covered a large area, and there was around a dozen different towers. Although a few had collapsed this time, it still didn’t affect the normal operations of the Misty Pavilion.

Entering into the highest Treasure Tower, Xia Xin Yan went to level nine attic.

Kro bent down, and spoke while gritting his teeth, “How dare that Beiming Shang hurt you! Mistress, what do you want to do with the Beiming family next?”

“We don’t have to take care of the Beiming family right now.”

Xia Xin Yan looked indifferent, “I came here this time for the treasure map to the Gate of Heaven, the Beiming family isn’t my main motive. Beiming Shang is in the Sky Realm, and I am only in the Disaster Realm. Even if I use my Reincarnation Martial Spirit, I can barely put up a fight against him. After this, if Beiming Shang is sensible enough, he won’t mess with the Misty Pavilion. If not, then once the Shura King Xiao Han Yi gets here, I will make Beiming Shang pay for what he’s done!”

“Mistress, the Sky Realm warrior that came this time, should... shouldn’t he be from the Mo family. If the Mo family had a Sky Realm master, they wouldn’t have been bullied by the Shi family.” Kro hesitated, and said weakly.

“I know it’s not someone from the Mo family.” Unexpectedly, Xia

Xin Yan actually nodded, and agreed to Kro's judgement.

"Then Mistress, why would you attack the Mo family?" Kro asked, his face was full of confusion.

"If I didn't attack the Mo family, how would we be able to cooperate with the people that actually have the treasure map?" Xia Xin Yan lightly chuckled, "We had to have a scapegoat, otherwise, if the Misty Pavilion kept silent after such a big event, won't the others think that the Misty Pavilion is easy to bully?"

"So Mistress, you wanted to distract people's attention?" Kro's eyes brightened, and he immediately knew her true motive.

"Yes, just let everyone keep their eyes on the Mo family, then we can easily work with the other side to secretly explore the Gate of Heaven. When Tianyun City becomes chaotic, we can get things done faster." Xia Xin Yan nodded, and said indifferently, "That Sky Realm master that came had a strange Martial Spirit that could form mysterious mists. Although he didn't really use his Martial Spirit, I was able to glimpse its traits. Do you know any Sky Realm masters with a Martial Spirit like that?"

"Chi Xiao!"

Kro didn't hesitate for a moment, and he immediately answered, "Chi Xiao is the Sky Realm master of the Cloud Mountain, and he's close with the Zuo family. Could it have possibly been the Zuo family that got involved this time? Impossible! Unless that half of the fragment map is actually in the Zuo family's hands?"

"It has to be." Xia Xin Yan groaned, then she suddenly said, "There's no time to wait, I will make a visit to the Zuo family myself, so that we can get this done as soon as possible, in case any mishaps occur."

"Mistress, should I go?"

"No it's alright, that Chi Xiao knows he can't take me, the Zuo family won't cause me any trouble."

Xia Xin Yan only stayed for a quarter of an hour. Once she was clear on who was the intruder, she immediately took off alone.

The Zuo family.

Zuo Xu and Chi Xiao were still discussing in the secret room.

“Knock knock!”

There was suddenly a light knocking sound that came from the walls of the secret room.

Zuo Xu froze, he leaned into one of the bamboo tubes on the wall and asked, “What is it?”

“There’s a woman with a bamboo hat that came from the Misty Pavilion, she says she wants to see the head of the family.”

“It’s that girl!” Chi Xiao exclaimed.

Zuo Xu’s expression shifted. He slowly paced in the secret room, and after a long while, he finally said with a frown, “Could it be that the Misty Pavilion already knows it was us? That can’t be right. If they really knew it was us, why would they attack the Mo family? How strange.”

“You should go out and meet her, I’ll stay here.” Chi Xiao hesitated, then said, “Let’s see what she wants.”

“Alright.”

In the guest room of the Zuo family, Zuo Xu sat there calmly. He looked at Xia Xin Yan, who was wearing a bamboo hat, and smiled, “How may I address you, Miss?”

“Xia Xin Yan.”

“Well Miss Xia, may I ask for what reason did you come to our family? I don’t think the Zuo family has had any affairs with the Misty Pavilion lately?”

“Where’s Chi Xiao?” Xia Xin Yan shook her head, and casually said.

Zuo Xu’s expression slightly changed, but he quickly returned to calmness. He asked in confusion, “Miss Xia, for what reason did you ask? Chi Xiao has always been cultivating in the Cloud Mountain, do you know him?”

“Of course. We fought just yesterday, he left quite a deep impression.” Xia Xin Yan sat there naturally, and slowly sipped on her tea.

Zuo Xu’s expression kept changing, his smile a little forced, “Miss Xia, could you have been mistaken? The person that attacked the Misty Pavilion yesterday, wasn’t he from the Mo family?”

“Master Zuo, I didn’t come here today to settle the accounts with you.” Xia Xin Yan’s eyes were a little impatient, “On the contrary, I came to sincerely ask you to cooperate.”

Then, Xia Xin Yan pulled out other half of the dark yellow treasure map, and directly placed it on the table between her and Zuo Xu. She spoke lightly, “Half of the treasure map is right here. Head of the Zuo family, if you’re straightforward enough, then let’s just cut to the chase. We can immediately combine the two pieces of the map and once we know where the Gate of Heaven is at, we can start moving immediately. Master Zuo, don’t waste everyone’s time! Right now, everyone has their eyes on the Mo family. We can take the opportunity to explore the Gate of Heaven. How’s that, Master Zuo?”

Xia Xin Yan was a little aggressive, she didn’t give a damn about the head of the family, Zuo Xu. Her motives were clear; she came for the other half of the treasure map!

Zuo Xu was a little unsure as to what Xia Xin Yan’s motives were. He didn’t know if she really wanted to cooperate, or if she was just trying to feel them out using her words, so that she could take steps to go against the Zuo family.

But since Xia Xin Yan had the capability of a Sky Realm warrior, Zuo Xu couldn't casually speak out. His mind flashed, racing in thought.

“Master Zuo, I don't like to linger on things, and I also don't like putting in personal affairs when dealing with business. Chi Xiao was sensible enough, he knew when to retreat after realizing that I was in the Sky Realm. None of us got hurt, so there's no grudges in this. I came only for the treasure map! I have no intention to cause trouble! Is that clear?”

Xia Xin Yan's pretty brows furrowed, she stared at Zuo Xu coldly, and became more and more impatient.

Zuo Xu's expression continuously changed as he thought for a long moment. He faintly had the idea that Xia Xin Yan didn't come to interrogate them. Groaning, he gritted his teeth and said, “The other half of the map is not in my hands.”

“Then whose hands is it in?” Xia Xin Yan's eyes brightened.

“It's on Shi Jian.”

“Then I have nothing to discuss with you, I will go find Shi Jian.” Xia Xin Yan took the half piece of the map from the table. She stood up and said, “Master Zuo, sorry to bother you, I will be leaving now.”

“I will go with you!”

Zuo Xu immediately stood up, thinking, “Such a materialistic girl. Changing your attitude right after hearing I don't have the map. You sure are the owner of the Misty Pavilion, a typical city merchant!”

“Does it still have anything to do with you?” Xia Xin Yan was surprised.

Zuo Xu's expression was starting to darken, he snorted, then said, “Shi Jian and I are in this together! Our family has a part in exploring the Gate of Heaven too. Don't you think it still has

something to do with me?”

“Oh, then we can go together.” Xia Xin Yan said casually.

“Wait up, let me call someone else along.” Zuo Xu forced a smile at Zuo Shi, and said awkwardly, “Chi Xiao’s going too, uh, you said you didn’t mind, right?”

“No, I don’t mind. With Chi Xiao coming along, it will be safer.”

The Shi family, on the third level of Shi Yan’s personal stone tower.

Shi Yan sat on the floor with crossed legs. His expression was serious, he held in his breath and concentrated, he was able to clearly feel the natural energies scattered in the air.

Calming his mind, Shi Yan shut his eyes tightly and started circulating the Profound Qi in his body.

After seven continuous cycles of circulation, the expression on his face suddenly froze!

In his body, rich concentrated Profound Qi flowed down his left arm like a river rushing towards its banks.

Like wild horses on the loose, the Profound Qi fiercely surged into his left arm. His left arm shook lightly, and traces of sweat dripped down his face.

“Roar!”

Shi Yan suddenly shouted out. The masses of Profound Qi fiercely rushed into his left arm, and crazily gushed straight all the way to his ring finger.

“Bzz bzz bzz!”

The Profound Qi became like a sword aura, suddenly shooting out from his ring finger!

The fierce Profound Qi blazed with a bright white light, and

repeatedly slammed into the barrier in the Blood Vein Ring.

Shi Yan's expression was ferocious, his face was glowing in a strange red light, his mind intensely focused!

“Pu!”

A crisp sound suddenly came from the Blood Vein Ring.

All of a sudden the Blood Vein Ring shone with a bright red light. The strange radiance was like a blazing sun, illuminating the entire third floor of the stone tower.

A strange pulse spread out everywhere from the center of the stone tower.

Chapter 78 - Inheritance of the War Devil

Shi Yan suddenly entered a strange space.

Endless gray clouds were floating in the dimly lit sky like an empty ocean, vast and boundless.

It was a strange space, immeasurably vast.

In this space, a hideous looking giant was standing with his feet standing on the ground and his head reaching the sky. He was thousands of miles tall and seemed to have been standing there for thousands of billions of years.

An ancient aura suddenly exploded out from this extremely huge giant!

Immediately, countless bright flames exploded from the meridians all over his body!

His meridians were like numerous stars in the sky that moved in their own orbits. Every single meridian possessed the power to ruin the world, and every meridian was a small world itself, from which came the cries of all sorts of creatures.

In that boundless space, there were piles and piles of bones and the ground had turned crimson due to all the blood.

Some piles of bones were as high as a mountain; no one knew where they came from.

Looking at the piles of bones, many of them were of some-odd-looking creatures. Some looked to be having three heads and six arms, some looked like a divine dragon, some had three sockets for eyes, some looked like marine animals, and so forth...

They were all prostrated on the ground, as if bowing towards that giant, worshipping it as if it was the sole true God!

All of a sudden, a peculiar light flashed across the hideous ancient god's pupils.

His right pupil was shining brightly as the sun, as if bringing every creature light and life, giving this world hope.

On the contrary, his left pupil was as dark as a black hole, containing endless darkness which symbolized negative actions like maiming, killing, death, insanity and hatred.

From his left pupil, one could see the darkest side of humanity.

One eye looked alive while the other looked deadly. Standing between the sky and the earth, that ancient god seemed to be waiting for something.

All of a sudden, that pair of eyes noticed Shi Yan.

A mysterious power immediately reached Shi Yan's mind and connected the two of them together.

In that strange space, came the abrupt and terrifying howls of the ancient god.

Numerous odd light symbols flew out from his eyes, and invaded into Shi Yan's spiritual body, making every one of his meridians shine as bright as a star.

Severe pain exploded in each of his meridians, and as Shi Yan's head received a splitting pain, he suddenly woke up.

He was still on the third floor of the stone house, the Blood Vein Ring was on the ring finger of his left hand, and the odd red light was slowly becoming dimmer. He sat there with a numb head.

If someone came at that time, he would find that deep in his pupils, there were odd light spots which looked like small symbols dancing.

Xia Xin Yan, Chi Xiao and Zuo Xu were walking together in the backyard of the Shi family.

The three were astonished at the same time, as they looked at the stone building five hundred meters away with a shocked

expression on their faces.

“There is some peculiar energy is rippling over there, which seems very old and coming from the times of great antiquity.” Xia Xin Yan said softly and her eyes behind her veil were full of surprise, “This ancient energy, should... should not exist here right now.”

Chi Xiao also looked weird as he stared at that stone building with extreme focus, “I don’t know why, but I feel that my Martial Spirit was slightly triggered by that energy. Weird, it’s really weird! What kind of energy is able to resonate with Martial Spirits?”

Xia Xin Yan shook her head, thought for a while and asked, “Zuo Family Head, Shi Jian lives in that stone building, right? Well, it seems I have underestimated him. He is unbelievable...”

“No, absolutely no!” Zuo Xu couldn’t help but shake his head, and said in a weird tone, “That stone building is now used by Shi Jian’s grandson, Shi Yan. He likes studying ancient relics. He is a... rather extraordinary kid.”

“Shi Yan...” Xia Xin Yan repeated that name in her mind secretly with some astonishment crossing her eyes, and she nodded, “Let’s visit the family head.”

“Okay.”

Inside the secret room, Shi Jian and Shi Tie, who were busy discussing how to deal with the Mo family, noticed the strange energy fluctuations.

Shi Jian’s face changed slightly, as he shouted in astonishment, “That strange energy came from Shi Yan’s building!”

The stir from Shi Yan’s stone building was sensed by all the warriors who were at high realms.

After a terrifying cry, Shi Jian pushed open the stone door of the secret room and rushed out.

Shi Tie chased behind him in a hurry.

They exited the secret room and dashed directly towards Shi Yan's stone building.

However, before they got to Shi Yan's stone building, they saw Zuo Xu, Chi Xiao and Xia Xin Yan.

Shi Jian was a little astonished as his expression was rather unusual. He paused for a bit and asked from afar, "Brother Zuo, why so early?"

He recognized Xia Xin Yan at once and was a little nervous. Like Zuo Xu, he had a guilty conscience, guessing Xia Xin Yan came to make a punitive expedition against him.

"Brother, let's find a quiet place and have a talk."

Zuo Xu smiled bitterly, and pointed at Xia Xin Yan to introduce, "This is the hidden master of the Misty Pavilion, Miss Xia Xin Yan. She has something important to discuss with you."

Shi Jian was a little surprised. After a short hesitation, he gave up the idea of visiting Shi Yan in his stone house and nodded, "Follow me."

Before long, Shi Jian and Shi Tie showed the three guests to the Rock Room.

Having seated himself in the Rock Room, Zuo Xu coughed, and spilled Xia Xin Yan's intention.

"Cooperation?"

Shi Jian got relieved. After a short thought, he nodded with a smile, "That is most welcome. The position of the Gate of Heaven would only be shown by a complete map, and we, the Shi family, never intended to take everything. Miss Xia, you are so generous! A great woman!"

Xin Yan was straightforward as she took out the half map out and spread it on the stone ground, then said softly, “Shi Family Head, take out your half.”

Shi Jian looked to Zuo Xu. After Zuo Xu nodded, he took out the other half of the map and put it on the ground to match the first half.

A bunch of yellow lights suddenly blazed at the joining of the two halves.

That yellow light seemed to have some stickiness, as it connected the two halves into a perfectly complete map.

The bright yellow light glowed from the complete treasure map.

On that yellow map, lines were twisting and changing like living earthworms, the pattern on it shifting completely.

It slowly became clear. Soon, there formed a vivid image of a valley.

Strange Yin Qi covered that valley, out of which, there were numerous green swamps, even the bubbles in them could be seen clearly.

Shi Jian, Shi Tie, Zuo Xu and Chi Xiao were all taken by surprise.

Only Xia Xin Yan looked calm, as she said naturally, “Friends, I’m not familiar with this area. Although the map is clear, I don’t know which place is which. Do you have any idea?”

“The Dead Swamp! Yin Valley!”

Chi Xiao’s expression changed quickly. After a long while, he announced firmly, “That’s it! It is absolutely Yin Valley, which is the most mysterious part of the Dead Swamp, where the Yin Qi is most dense and many Yin treasures are produced.”

“Good, if you are sure about it.” Xia Xin Yan nodded, “If it’s certain, we can begin to prepare to travel to Yin Valley. It should not be delayed. I will arrange it back in the Misty Pavilion and set

off soon.”

“Isn’t the Yin Valley home to Nine-headed Sky Snake?” Zuo Xu took a deep breath and asked Chi Xiao beside him.

Shi Jian’s expression changed.

Chi Xiao nodded slowly, “Yes. The Nine-headed Sky Snake lives in the Yin Valley. It seems that this journey won’t go peacefully.”

“Nine-headed Sky Snake?” Xia Xin Yan was quite calm, “By the sounds of it, is it a high realm demon beast?”

“A Level 7 demon beast!” Chi Xiao said.

Xia Xin Yan furrowed her brows and nodded, “Well it might be tough. But anyway, a Level 7 demon beast equals a Sky Realm warrior. We can beat it together.”

“The Nine-headed Sky Snake is a Level 7 demon beast. But it is the most powerful one among all Level 7 demon beasts. It has nine heads which can all think separately, and it is very aggressive. I’d rather fight with three normal Level 7 demon beasts than him. Hmm, I will go back to the Cloudy Mountain first and get some weapons in case something unusual happens.” Chi Xiao sighed.

“Keep the treasure map with you. Let’s meet at the entrance of the Dead Swamp in a month.”

Xia Xin Yan was quite decisive as she stood up and said calmly, “I hope you will be on time. I don’t have so much time to waste.” Then, Xia Xin Yan walked out with light steps.

Brother, what to do now?” Zuo Xu smiled bitterly, “Tianyun City is now in total chaos, plus the Shi and Mo families are going through a crucial phase. Will you still take some time to handle this?”

“Hardly.”

Shi Jian shook his head and thought for a while, “Since Chi Xiao is going there, my presence is not that important, I will send some

other guy. Mmm, Shi Yan likes goofing around, would you like him to go with you?”

Shi Jian stared at Chi Xiao.

Chi Xiao nodded softly.

“I can’t leave Tianyun City right now, or Beiming Shang would suspect me. I will send Shi Yan with you and two other warriors. We have to keep it a secret. Don’t let too many people get involved.”

Zuo Xu deliberated for a while and agreed with Shi Jian.

“Shi Family Head, I need to go back to Cloudy Mountain first. I will get to the Dead Swamp in a month’s time. Your people don’t need to go with me for now. Let them go with Shi Yan to the Dead Swamp. I can go there faster alone.” Chi Xiao said.

“Ok, I will send Han Feng to follow that bastard Shi Yan and Zuo Shi when they leave Tianyun City secretly. One month, hmm, that would be fine.” Shi Jian nodded and handed that treasure map to Chi Xiao and said earnestly, “Chi Xiao, please do me a favor to take care of Shi Yan. I want him to be safe.”

“No worries.” Chi Xiao didn’t refuse, and put that treasure map away naturally.

On the third floor of that stone building.

The Blood Vein Ring on his ring finger had returned to normal, but Shi Yan was still sitting in a trance; a sudden glimmer flashed through his eyes.

A long time later, Shi Yan gradually came back to himself and his eyes sparkled. He lowered his head and mumbled, “Inheritance of the War Devil: [Seal of Life and Death]! The Martial Skill that operates my mysterious Martial Spirit! Too magical!”

Chapter 79 - The Seal of Life and Death

In the stone tower.

Shi Yan's expression was full of surprise. His mind clicked, and he continued to violently pour all of his Profound Qi into the Blood Vein Ring. However, a short time later he encountered a new barrier in the Ring.

He was out of sorts for a second, and finally came to the conclusion that the Blood Vein Ring was definitely a strange treasure. Inside were layers and layers of barriers, and behind every single barrier was new things to be found.

The first time he pounded at the Blood Vein Ring, he obtained the cultivation method for [Rampage]. This time, he got the [Seal of Life and Death]. The Blood Vein Ring was like a patient mentor, who will set a barrier at every special stage, and you could only peek into its secrets if you can break that barrier.

The complex ancient [Seal of Life and Death] was clearly imprinted deep in his mind. Just like the skill [Rampage], once he focused on the [Seal of Life and Death], the mnemonics would appear in his mind.

Shi Yan couldn't immediately and completely understand the mnemonics of the [Seal of Life and Death]. But just from a glance, he could understood that the [Seal of Life and Death] was an extraordinary Martial Skill that could utilize his mysterious Martial Spirit!

Using the circulation method of the [Seal of Life and Death], he was able to stir the negative energy in all of his meridians. Those negative energies would flow towards his left arm in a special pattern, forming a [Death Seal] with extremely negative characteristics.

The [Seal of Life and Death] also had secret methods to stir the

Profound Qi in the whole body, making it flow into the right arm, and form another extraordinary thing called the [Life Seal].

The left hand is the [Death Seal] and the right hand is the [Life Seal]. When using this skill in battle, the two seals can be merged into one, forming the true [Seal of Life and Death].

The power of the [Seal of Life and Death] depended on the density of the negative energies in the body and the amount of Profound Qi. Its strongest power would be released when forming a total of forty-nine seals.

Seven seals would be marked as the first sky. As the realm and martial skill of a warrior progressed, the number of seals forming would increase when using [Seal of Life and Death].

Every time one broke through to another sky, the number and size of the seals formed would multiply.

According to the mnemonics of the [Seal of Life and Death], once you reaching the seventh sky, forty-nine seals would instantly form and release an earth-crushing power.

And if these forty-nine seals were fused together, it would emit an invincible strength, easily able to crush the highest mountains!

However, the mnemonics on the [Seal of Life and Death] were quite hard to understand, and would take a while to completely digest.

Before he could completely figure out the deep meanings of the ancient texts, Shi Yan didn't dare to rashly cultivate the [Seal of Life and Death].

He knew from learning [Rampage] that any secret Martial Skills coming from the Blood Vein Ring weren't to be underestimated.

After thinking for a while, Shi Yan decided to spend his time trying to understand the mnemonics about the Seal.

Shi Yan slowly stood up. He furrowed his brows and moved to

the window, gazing across at the Shi family's artificial lake.

A beautiful figure suddenly appeared into his view.

A strange light flashed in Shi Yan's eyes. There was a surprise on his face, and he murmured quietly, "Why has she come to the Shi family?"

Far away by the lake, Xia Xin Yan was wearing a veil on her face, looking every bit the peerless beauty. She was being led by Han Feng to the back door of the secret room of the Shi family.

Shi Yan had a strong impression of Xia Xin Yan, the mysterious woman. Just by gazing from far away, he immediately recognized her, and secretly he was surprised.

Lead by Han Feng, Xia Xin Yan quickly went into the garden behind the lake, and disappeared into the secret room.

Soon, Chi Xiao and Zuo Xu also quietly followed, and disappeared through the same door into the Shi family's secret room.

After a while, Shi Jian finally walked out of the Stone Room. His eyes swept to the Shi Yan's stone tower, and immediately started walking towards it.

Shi Yan's mind flicked. He silently closed the windows, and quietly sat down on the third floor of the stone tower, as if he had been deeply immersed in cultivating.

"Kid, what was that just a moment ago?" Shi Jian quickly appeared on the third floor of Shi Yan's tower. As soon as he came in, he immediately glared at Shi Yan and asked.

"What was what?" Shi Jian opened his eyes, looking confused.

"Half an hour ago, there was a strange fluctuation coming from this place. Did you make that happen? You little brat better explain to me."

"I don't know, I was just quietly cultivating. You know, I just reached the Human Realm, and I'm still trying to get familiar with

the circulation pattern of the natural energies. Maybe I just accidentally tuned into the natural patterns, and caused a resonance of the natural energies.” Shi Yan smiled, full of bullshit.

Shi Jian furrowed his brows, stared at Shi Yan for a second, then finally sneered, “You little brat, hiding a bunch of secrets huh, hmph. I couldn’t care less! Just don’t act too recklessly and screw yourself over.”

As the head of the family, Shi Jian could immediately see he wasn’t speaking the truth. But Shi Jian didn’t want to intervene on everything. Seeing that Shi Yan was fine, Shi Jian just allowed him to keep bullshitting.

After pondering for a second, Shi Jian told him about the issue that Xia Xin Yan, Zuo Xu, and Chi Xiao came to talk about. Then he finally said, “This time, I am going to let you, Han Feng, and Ku Long go together. We are only investigating the location of the Gate of Heaven this time, to get to understand the situation. You only need to follow along and get some experience. Remember, don’t act rashly! If anything happens just let Chi Xiao and that Xia girl handle it. These two both have the Sky Realm combat abilities, even if they can’t take on the Nine-headed Sky Snake, they could at least keep you guys safe.”

Shi Yan was surprised. He didn’t expect Xia Xin Yan to be so generous. Not only did she not blame Chi Xiao for the sneak attack, she also stepped on the Mo family in order to divert everyone’s attention. In the end, she forgave what had happened and took the initiative to lend her hand.

This woman was something!

Shi Yan’s eyes glimmered, secretly surprised. He frowned, thought for a moment, and said, “Don’t worry, I also care about my life a lot, I don’t want to lose it. My role is just to fill up a spot in the exploration of Gate of Heaven, I won’t put my life on the line for this.”

Okay, prepare yourself. Tonight at midnight, you, Han Feng, and Ku Long will secretly set off, and meet up with Zuo Shi at the north entrance of Tianyun City. Remember, you have to be careful! The Gate of Heaven is important, but you are more important to the Shi family, you have to come back safely!”

“Understood.”

The Beiming family.

Beiming Shang sat at the seventh level of the Ice Pavilion, his body overflowing with freezing energy, there was even a layer of frost covering his body. Just looking at him, Beiming Shang looked like an ice sculpture, appearing very strange.

Beiming Ce, Yin Kui, and Jiu Shan were standing aside, their expressions serious.

Other than them, there was also Beiming Ce’s father, Beiming Qie.

Beiming Qie was at Earth Realm, Third Sky. He always took care of affairs outside of Tianyun City, but after hearing about the chaos happening in Tianyun City, he rushed here from Beiluo City overnight.

After Beiming Shang fought with Xia Xin Yan, he immediately entered the Ice Pavilion, and hadn’t come out since.

The masters in the Beiming family were worried about Beiming Shang. They strictly guarded the Ice Pavilion, and had been on the look-out from day to night, afraid that mishaps might happen in this crucial moment.

After a very long time, the frost on Beiming Shang’s body gradually seeped into his body.

“Father!”

“Grandpa!”

Beiming Qie and Beiming Ce both called out.

Beiming Shang slowly opened his eyes, and breathed out a cloud of white frost. He said, "That girl's Martial Spirit is strange, she could actually use her power from her last life and instantly step into the Sky Realm. The Endless Sea is truly a holy place for thousands of warriors. And only from that place could such a frightening Martial Spirit exist."

"Father, are you alright?" Beiming Qie asked worriedly.

Shaking his head, Beiming Shang said, "Did you find that girl?"

"She mysteriously disappeared last night. We searched all night, but couldn't find any trace of her."

Beiming Qie was slightly nervous, he hesitated, and then said, "But early this morning, she returned to the Misty Pavilion. Our spies say that she only stayed in the Misty Pavilion for a short moment, then she left alone. We don't know where she went."

"Last night her injuries were worse than mine. We couldn't find her last night, and now we have missed the best chance." Beiming Shang sighed, then said, "She dared to appear this morning, that means her injuries have almost recovered. We don't have a chance to take her anymore. Pass on my orders, don't move on the Misty Pavilion."

"Understood." Beiming Qie nodded, but he also felt a little regretful, "Tianyun City is full of our spies, I wonder where the hell she hid last night. If we could've found her, then we could've killed her."

"We missed our chance so we can't do anything about it, not everything's going to go our way." Beiming Shang got over the matter, he pondered, and then said, "Keep an eye on all four city gates! Release all the Cloud Eagles in the family, if any major figures of the other four families are getting in or out of the city, inform me immediately!"

“Father, you’re saying?”

“Ding Yan is definitely dead! Someone must have gotten that half of the fragmented map, or else there’s no reason why someone cannot wait to seize that other half of the fragmented map from the Misty Pavilion.”

Beiming Shang sneered, and said, “The Mo family lost miserably this time. If they had a Sky Realm master to back them up, with Mo Tuo’s temperament, he wouldn’t have just let this slide! We only need to wait two days, if the Mo family doesn’t make any major actions in two days, we can eliminate them from the possibilities.”

“Who could it be?”

“Whichever family couldn’t hold it in anymore, and leaves the city first.”

Beiming Shang scowled, and said, “That girl left the Misty Pavilion early in the morning, she definitely must have figured out something. Maybe the two map pieces have already been put together by now. Keep an eye on the Misty Pavilion too, we can ignore the fight between the Mo and Shi families for now. Spread out all our spies, in three days, if any direct descendants of the three families leave the city, I need to receive the news immediately!”

“Understood!”

Chapter 80 - Shadowing

That night, at the North Gate of Tianyun City.

Shi Yan, Han Feng and Ku Long secretly left the city from the gate.

A four-horses carriage was waiting in the deserted tombs outside the North Gate. An old man was standing beside the carriage and staring at the starry sky in a daze.

Whisperings could be heard from the carriage.

The carriage was surrounded by many high and low tombs, and the green wildfire beside them was giving out a very gloomy atmosphere in the dark night.

“It’s the Zuo Family’s.” Ku Long got to one unmarked burial-mounds and remarked after taking a glimpse from afar.

Shi Yan nodded and said indifferently, “It seems we are late anyway.”

The old man overheard their talk, and as he withdrew his eyes and looked in their direction, he raised the whip in his hand.

Receiving his signal, the three including Shi Yan walked over.

“Miss, people from the Shi family have arrived.” The old man reported to that carriage at a cautious low voice.

“About time they got here.” Zuo Shi’s voice came from the carriage.

An elegant and graceful woman came out of the carriage quietly, glanced at Shi Yan, and said to Zuo Shi with a big smile, “That kid is here.”

“Aunt Lian!” Zuo Shi cried with a sweet girlish and angry voice, “I told you, there is nothing between us! Please stop teasing me!”

“Hehe, okay, okay.” That woman giggled, and waved at Shi Yan

standing beside the carriage. As Shi Yan came near, she said, “Young Master Yan, you three didn’t take a carriage?”

“It will be arranged for us when we get to the Xuelai City in the North.” Shi Yan looked indifferent. He took a glimpse at the woman and complimented her secretly, then walked to the carriage at a leisurely pace and put a huge package into it, “Xiao Shi, this is your Dragon Turtle Armor. My grandpa asked me to return it to you.”

“Okay.” Zuo Shi replied and whispered, “You ungrateful guy! You wasted our good will!”

Shi Yan withdrew his smile, “You had told me that whoever uses the Dragon Turtle Armor is a turtle. I don’t want to be a turtle.”

“Haha!”

Sitting in the carriage, Zuo Shi couldn’t help but giggle, “You guys have really good memory huh? I had said that to infuriate my grandpa so that you could take the Armor. You helped me unlock the shell and get me the treasure, of course you deserve the Dragon Turtle Armor.”

“The Martial Spirit of Shi family is more than enough for defending. I don’t need that Armor.” Shi Yan shook his head.

“Miss, shall we go now?” The warrior from the Zuo Family got on the carriage, waved his whip and asked softly.

“Yes, let’s go.”

“Wait. Please let me introduce first. This is Chu Ping, First Sky of the Nirvana Realm. I’m Wu Yunlian.” That graceful woman elegantly smiled and said to Han Feng, “I know Brother Han, and this is?” She looked to Ku Long.

“Ku Long, First Sky of the Nirvana Realm.” Ku Long introduced himself in a friendly manner as he scratched his head, “I have been staying out of the town and just came back for the Martial Competition. Ha, we haven’t have a chance to meet.”

“So you are Brother Ku Long!” Wu Yunlian beamed and nodded, “It’s an honor for me to work with Brother Han and Brother Ku Long! Hope we can get to know each other well!”

“You are too modest.” Han Feng and Ku Long said together.

This woman looked dignified, and was at the First Sky of the Nirvana Realm. She was a warrior from the Cloud Mountain.

Since she was once helped by Chi Xiao, she attached herself to the Zuo family at Chi Xiao’s introduction, and was rather cared for by Zuo Xu and became an intimate friend to Zuo Shi.

Han Feng and Ku Long knew she was someone of status, so they were both polite to her.

“Then let’s start our journey.” Shi Yan looked up at the sky but suddenly furrowed his brows as he pointed at a dark spot in the sky, “Mmm, what’s that?”

Chu Ping, Han Feng, Ku Long and Wu Yunlian raised their heads together.

“A Cloud Eagle!”

Han Feng’s expression changed as he yelled, “It’s the Beiming Family’s! A Cloud Eagle has perfect eyesight and can see people on the ground clearly!”

“The Beiming Family is tailing us?” Ku Long was a bit confused, “They knew we were getting out of the town?”

“I’m not sure.” Chu Ping was a little surprised as well. He gazed at the departing eagle and said, “Maybe it’s on the way back the Beiming family from somewhere else, and happened to be here. It may not be trailing us specially.”

“We have to be cautious anyway.” Wu Yunlian sighed softly, “We need to be quick. Even if the Beiming Family is shadowing us, they can’t find us easily if we are cautious enough.”

“Okay.”

Later that night, in the Ice Room of the Beiming family.

“Father, news came that people from the Shi and Zuo families secretly left from the North Gate. The Shi family have sent Han Feng, Ku Long and Shi Yan, and the Zuo family have sent Chu Ping, Wu Yunlian and one other in a carriage. It must be Miss Zuo Shi.”

Beiming Qi hurried back to the Ice Room, and told the latest news after a bow.

Beiming Ce was in the Ice Room too. He was training with the aid of the freezing air in the Ice Room. Hearing upon the news, he opened his eyes and cried out, “It is the Shi family and the Zuo family!”

Beiming Shang looked gloomy as he sat there still, with cold air diffusing in his eyes.

After a long time, Beiming Shang said, “The other half of the treasure map must be in their hands. It must be Chi Xiao who grabbed the map from the Misty Pavilion. That girl in the Misty Pavilion is too wicked and she used Mo Tuo to distract us. We would have been cheated if we weren’t cautious enough to let the Cloud Eagle shadow them.”

“Father, what should we do now?”

“I will go after them with Ce, to see where they are heading for?”

“Ce is going too?”

“It is not peaceful in the Tianyun City recently. I will take Yin Kui and Jiu Shan with me this time. It’s not safe to leave Ce alone in the town.” Beiming Shang ordered, “You stay at home, and tell people that I’m cultivating in seclusion. Don’t stir any suspicion.”

“Got it.”

“Grandpa, the Zuo and Shi families must have come to a certain

agreement with the Misty Pavilion. If Chi Xiao allied with that woman, will you be in danger when in a battle with them?”

Beiming Ce took a breath and said indifferently, “I’ve made some preparations.”

His eyes sparkled.

“The Dark Master from the Dark World sent a message days ago that he wants Mu Yu Die. I haven’t replied yet.” Beiming Shang thought for a while, and looked at Beiming Ce, “He is at the Sky Realm, it would be fine with his help. Chi Xiao and that girl can hardly compete with us. They could only choose to cooperate with us to explore the Gate of Heaven.”

“The Dark Master from the Dark World!”

Beiming Ce was shocked, but also sad. He whispered after a long while, “Grandpa, what on earth do you mean?”

“Mu Yu Die’s Martial Spirit is great, but it’s useless for us. Rather, that Di Yalan may be able to combine with our Ice Martial Spirit.” Staring at him, Beiming Shang shouted, “Merely a woman! You can’t even let it go?”

Beiming Ce frowned and shook his head, “No. It’s just... just too unexpected. I will give up anything for the Beiming Family.”

“Good. You are going to take over the whole family. Don’t be so emotional.” Beiming Shang nodded with satisfaction and comforted, “Don’t worry child. That Dark Master only wants to use that girl to train his Martial Spirit. He won’t care if she is a virgin or not. I will let you two be together for three days before I hand her to the Dark Master.”

“Thank you Grandpa!” Beiming Ce beamed.

“For this time, take Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan with you. Later, I will hand Mu Yu Die over to the Dark Master without letting Di Yalan know.” Beiming Shang said.

“Grandson understands.”

Beiming Ce walked out of the Ice Room. Irrespective of the deep night and he headed for the island in the lake directly.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan weren't asleep, but kept training quietly.

Seeing that Beiming Ce had arrived, the two girls dressed to welcome him.

Beiming Ce beamed, “Get prepared, we need to be out of town before dawn.”

“What's up?” Mu Yu Die was surprised.

“The map to the Gate of Heaven is now complete. Someone has already set off for the exploration, so we are to follow them secretly.” Beiming Ce said earnestly to Mu Yu Die, “Xiao Die, there are many treasures in the Gate of Heaven, and my grandpa thinks you and Di Yalan should try your luck. Maybe you will harvest a lot from it. It's a once-in-a-hundred-year chance. Don't miss it!”

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan's eyes lit up at the same moment.

“Many thanks, Young Master Ce.” Mu Yu Die bowed, with dimple smile on her pretty small face, “I won't forget your favor if I harvest something from the Gate of Heaven!”

“What are you talking about?!” Beiming Ce pretended to be angry, “Do we need that?”

“Well, I'm sorry. I will go get prepared.” Mu Yu Die said with a big smile.

“Okay. I will wait for you outside. Be quick. Remember, don't expose yourselves. Let's go quietly.” Beiming Ce reminded and left the lake with a satisfied smile.

“Xiao Die, it came to me suddenly that...” Di Yalan's face dimmed, “The treasure map is complete, which means Ding Yan was found by them. According to their way of acting, I'm afraid he

was already...”

Upon hearing that, Mu Yu Die realized it as well. Her expression changed with sorrow.

However, she was very relieved when she came to the thought that she may get lots of treasure in the Gate of Heaven.

“Don’t worry, he will be fine. They only wanted the map, not his life. Sister Lan, we have to grab this opportunity! Maybe we can get a good fortune from it and our revenge!” Mu Yu Die said ambitiously, clenching her fists.

“Sigh, I hope he is fine.” Di Yalan sighed with profound resignation.

“Stop thinking about him. We have to have a good plan to take the most advantage from it!” Mu Yu Die was quite excited.

She already pictured the Dark World smashed by her in the near future, as her enemies fallen, covered in blood.

She was rather very satisfied every time she came up with that scene; she was totally intoxicated by hatred.

Chapter 81 - Obsession

In the silence of the night, the two carriages slowly left Xuelai City one after another.

Xuelai City was last city on the way to the Dead Swamp. Between the Dead Swamp and Xuelai City was a forest of medium sized trees, through which a narrow path had been cleared for use by mercenaries and traders.

On the carriage in front, Chu Ping was waving his whip in a relaxed manner.

Zhu Shi and Wu Yunlian's soft giggles could be heard from the carriage every now and then. They seemed to be happily chatting all the way.

In the carriage behind them, Han Feng and Ku Long were sitting outside, occasionally uttering some words.

Most of the time, they were both on alert and kept an eye on the surroundings.

Shi Yan was completely silent in his carriage.

For the past dozens of days, apart from meals, Shi Yan hardly got out of the carriage.

Every time he got out of the carriage, he wore a tired face with furrowed brows, seeming to be bothered about something.

Late at night.

The two carriages had stopped beside a brook in the forest. Zuo Shi and Wu Yunlian got off the carriage and walked to the brook, using the water to rinse their faces.

Before long, the two came back with some water to find that it was completely silent inside the other carriage.

“What is that guy doing?”

Wu Yunlian looked at the carriage in confusion, her expression clearly showing bewilderment, “I have hardly seen him get of the carriage. Apart from those times when he got down and wolfed down his food, he has been staying in the carriage all day. And every time he comes out, he is always deep in thought, showing such a miserable face. What a weird kid.”

“He has always been a weirdo.” Zuo Shi nodded in acknowledgment, “He has such strange hobbies like studying historic relics and ancient languages. No one knows what happens in his brain.”

Wu Yunlian laughed alluringly, “Xiao Shi, this guy is really different. Usually such boys would chase you around all day long, and wouldn’t go away even when you tried to drive them off. But this one has never looked at you in these ten days! He seems unwilling to come out of the carriage. Really strange.”

“Leave him alone. He is a weirdo.” Zuo Shi was really surprised by Wu Yunlian’s opinion, and realized she was right. Shi Yan had never looked at her while they were on the road.

Though not a self-centered girl, Zuo Shi knew that she was pretty, and the attitude Shi Yan showed towards her was very different from other boys’ attitudes.

Shi Yan was at his romantic age, but why was he so indifferent towards women?

Every woman cared about such things, including Zuo Shi. Apart from some confusion, she was also a little angry.

“Get me some water.” Shi Yan’s indifferent voice came from the carriage.

Ku Long was stunned as he looked to Han Feng and replied, “Feng, do you still have some water?”

Han Feng shook his head, and pointed at Wu Yunlian and Zuo

Shi, who were slowly approaching them, “They get the water these days.”

Ku Long stuck out his head and looked at Wu Yunlian with a big smile, “Sister, please give me some water, my Young Master is thirsty.”

“Tell him to come get it by himself.” Zuo Shi pouted and grunted, “Staying in the carriage all day. He must stink! Weirdo!”

Ku Long smiled in embarrassment and leaned to the carriage, “Young Master Yan, Miss Zuo requests you to come out for water.”

“Hmm.”

Shi Yan replied briefly, drew the curtain and walked out with a withered face.

He looked dumb, his eyes puzzled, seemingly baffled by a certain problem.

Without too much thought, he walked towards Zuo Shi slowly, grabbed the water bag from her hand, and then drank up.

After that, he casually handed the bag back to Zuo Shi, who was rather angry, and turned back for his own carriage while mumbling, “That water was fragrant, so strange...”

“Shi Yan!”

Zuo Shi blushed in anger, “That water bag is mine! Not your Shi family’s!”

Shi Yan was shocked by her scream, and finally woke up from his deep thought on the [Seal of Life and Death]. He asked, “So what?”

“Xiao Shi just now drank from this water bag. Hehe. Of course it would be fragrant.” Wu Yunlian smiled and joked, “Haha, maybe there’s still some of Xiao Shi’s saliva in it!”

“Aunt Lian!” Zuo Shi blushed and stamped on the ground, “What the hell are you talking about!”

Ku Long and Chu Ping were stunned, with their faces turning strange. Even Han Feng raised his head secretly to look in their direction.

But soon, the three went on for their own business like nothing had happened, as if no one had heard Wu Yunlian's words or saw Zuo Shi's blushing face.

Shi Yan realized it immediately, but he still pretended to know nothing and smiled, "It's ok. I'm easy-going. I don't hate your saliva at all."

Immediately, he turned back joyfully and got back into the carriage at once, not showing up again.

"Haha! Hahahaha!"

Wu Yunlian laughed too hard to stand steady as her breasts trembled. She suddenly felt that Shi Yan was not boring at all. His casual words were really hilarious.

Zuo Shi was dumbstruck for a while, then her eyes widened and she cursed, "Shi Yan! You bastard!"

"Uncle Han, let's go." Shi Yan's calm voice came from the carriage.

"Okay." Han Feng's mouth formed a strange smile and he urged Ku Long, "Let's go."

Their carriage slowly started moving, and for the first time passed by the other carriage.

Standing there with a red face, Zuo Shi first glanced over at Wu Yunlian, then at the silent Chu Ping, and said angrily, "What are you laughing at? What's so funny? It's not amusing at all! You all are so lame!"

Then she swiftly slipped into the carriage and yelled, "Uncle Ping, be quick! Kick their carriage! Give that bastard a lesson!"

Chu Ping was stunned, and looked to Wu Yunlian miserably.

Wu Yunlian shook her head and jumped onto the carriage. She comforted Zuo Shi, “Come on, Xiao Shi. Don’t be angry. He didn’t mean it.”

“Too rude! He said... he said...” Zuo Shi grunted with indignation, but was too shy to continue.

Shi Yan never took it seriously at all.

In the carriage, Shi Yan was leaning back and frowning, while odd texts flashed across his mind.

The ancient method of the [Seal of Life and Death] quickly flashed through his mind.

Recently, he had wholeheartedly put all of his energy into learning the method.

Even when he was having meals, his brain had never stopped thinking. He was trying so hard to understand the practice process of the seal that he was nearly going insane.

He was that type of person.

Once he was determined to do something, he would focus on it and use everything to realize it, never changing his mind.

After so many years of practicing extreme sports, he came to the conclusion that only with obsession, could one do things perfectly!

[The Seal of Life and Death]! [The Seal of Life and Death]!

At that time, there was only one thought in his mind; to understand the process of the [Seal of Life and Death] as soon as possible.

It was best if he could master the seal before he went into the Dead Swamp.

Only by mastering the seal could he be able to protect himself in the Dead Swamp, and have more opportunities to gain beneficial

things.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan tried to relax, and began to sort out his recent understandings of the method.

After a long while, he willed his Profound Qi to slowly move from his belly to his right arm.

The Profound Qi didn't move fast, but it was concentrated and was refined within his right arm.

As the Profound Qi gathered in his right arm, the latter became transparent, and even the bone and veins in his hand could be seen clearly.

Shi Yan didn't realize the strange changes in his arm.

Eyes closed, he tried to execute the different ideas that he came up with recently, and refined the Profound Qi in his arm many times.

As his arm began to expand, Shi Yan made up his mind and pushed his Profound Qi toward his palm.

“Chee chee chee!”

Wisps of crystal Profound Qi flew out from his fingers like lightning.

Those five streams of Profound Qi looked alive, as they lingered around his fingers but never flew out far.

“Still not correct.”

Shi Yan opened his eyes, and gazed at the Profound Qi on his fingertips. His face showed disappointment as he frowned and mumbled to himself, “There must be something wrong. It's not a sign of success. What on earth should I do?”

His mumbles became softer, as he withdrew the Profound Qi from his fingers little by little.

Shi Yan sank deep into his thoughts again, obsessively trying to

find the truth of the seal.

Chapter 82 - A Step Further

In the following days, Shi Yan continued to remain in the carriage and no one knew what he was doing.

Altogether, the two carriages travelled in the forest for nine days.

In these nine days, both Zuo Shi and Wu Yunlian would come out time and time again to groom themselves on the riverside and collect water for everyone.

Every time Shi Yan came out, he would bury himself in his food, and when he was done, he would hurry back into the carriage, without acknowledging the others.

It was night again.

The two carriages were parked under the dense foliage of the trees. The horses were released from their reins to graze nearby.

After taking bath, both Zuo Shi and Wu Yunlian were leisurely lying in their carriage, teasing each other in whispers.

Chu Ping, Han Feng, and Ku Long were guarding the carriages and horses, exchanging their cultivation experiences at the same time.

In the carriage of the Shi family.

Shi Yan's face was full of seriousness, his expression never being so dignified. After nine days of relentless study, he was finally able to gain some insights.

His right arm was gleaming in light, and one could see some strange little white spots flowing through the veins in his arm.

Strands of pure concentrated Profound Qi were repeatedly refined in his meridians. He kept using a special method to temper it.

After the seventh time.

Shi Yan's right arm, which was continuously expanding, soon grew a whole lot thicker! His muscles looked ferocious with veins popping out of them, looking very frightening.

“Ha!”

Shi Yan lightly shouted, his eyes grim. He kept his gaze on his right arm, and a thought suddenly struck his mind.

His right arm abruptly let out a strange “popping” sound.

After the Profound Qi was refined seven times, it actually separated into seven different flows. The seven flows of power were dispersed into his meridians, with a clear distinction between them.

When he put his concentration into his Profound Qi, the seven flows of Profound Qi suddenly converged onto his wrist. In an instant, those seven flows turned into one, and a lively aura suddenly gushed out from his right palm!

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly became as bright as the galaxy, he immediately tried to stimulate that light formed by the seven flows of Profound Qi.

“Boom!”

The seven flows of Profound Qi fiercely rushed into his palm. The center of Shi Yan's palm suddenly burst into bright rays. The mass of strange Profound Qi coagulation all of a sudden exploded in his palm!

Countless light specks of Profound Qi instantly filled his palm. They flowed into the lines on his palm, making his hand shine with a strange light.

Suddenly, the countless light specks fiercely shot out from the lines on his palm. The light specks were gleaming and unbelievably, formed into a strange handprint.

A glistening handprint took off and flew out!

Shi Yan's palm continuously exploded six more times, and six identical handprints formed into shape.

The seven handprints were like unleashed horses, and randomly struck the carriage that Shi Yan was in.

“Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom boom!”

The carriage broke into pieces. The solid wood planks became like sawdust, and flew into the air.

Shi Yan just sat there on the ground with a serious expression. He looked at the smashed carriage and the flying sawdust around him in surprise.

He could clearly feel that one-third of his Profound Qi had being consumed from this single move.

Seven [Life Seals] burst out, and all the Profound Qi that had been gathered in his right arm was instantly sucked dry!

When those seven [Life Seals] shot out, his right arm returned to normal, leaving only a slight tingly feeling.

Zuo Shi and Wu Yunlian jumped out of the Zuo family's carriage in alarm. They gazed at this scene in shock.

On the grass, Chu Ping, Han Feng, and Ku Long were also astonished, their faces full of confusion. They had no idea what happened.

Shi Yan sat on the ground in a daze, he looked for a second, then coughed and said heartlessly, “Uncle Han, I think we have to ride the horses now.”

Han Feng's expression was very strange, he slightly nodded, and looked towards him perplexed.

“Young Master Yan, what the hell are you doing?”

Wu Yunlian's flirty little face was full of bewilderment, she

stepped up along with Zuo Shi, and looked at Shi Yan weirdly, “Why did you suddenly destroy the carriage? Can you give us an explanation?”

“I got carried away while practicing.” Shi Yan shrugged, and said casually, “This is normal. Don’t worry about it, the carriage is gone, but the horses are still here, it won’t slow you guys down.”

“All this time you were in the carriage and refused to come out... was just for practice?” Zuo Shi’s pretty face was full of surprise.

“Mmm hmm.”

“Silly.” Zuo Shi shook her head, and said in disdain, “Training is the most boring thing, your grandpa isn’t forcing you or anything, why do you have to put in so much effort?”

“Hobby.”

“Psh, I don’t believe you.”

“Young Master Yan, what is the skill that you’re practicing?”

Wu Yunlian hesitated for a second, then her expression also slowly turned normal again, “The power that was unleashed back in that moment, was extremely violent and fierce. That instant explosive force, shouldn’t be something that an ordinary Human Realm warrior should have...” Wu Yunlian said thoughtfully.

“It’s nothing.” Shi Yan smiled, he didn’t want to explain further. He stretched and said to Han Feng, “Uncle Han, my stomach is hungry, get me something to eat.”

“Okay.”

Seeing that Shi Yan didn’t want to say anything more, Wu Yunlian didn’t ask for more details. She smiled and took Zuo Shi away with her.

After gorging down a bunch of food.

Shi Yan said to Han Feng, “Uncle Han, I’m going to go wash myself. I’ll come back in a bit, you don’t need to come along.”

“Young Master...” Han Feng hesitated.

“It’s alright.” Waving his hand, Shi Yan reassured him, “I won’t walk very far, if there’s anything I’ll holler. Don’t worry.”

“Be careful, Young Master.”

Shi Yan quickly arrived at the riverbank. He jumped into the river and joyfully took a bath and changed into a fresh set of clothes.

After coming ashore, instead of rushing to return to the gathering point where Han Feng and the rest were, he moved further away from them.

Under an old tree.

Shi Yan’s expression was solemn, he suddenly invoked the negative energies in his body!

In the meridians all over his body, there hid the different negative energies of bloodlust, fear, slaughter, and desperation. They all emerged, and under his will, the negative powers all flowed towards his left arm.

The shrivelled left arm was covered with white mist. The mist shifted unpredictably, like the faint shadows of ghosts.

His mind flicked.

Following to the circulation method of the right arm, Shi Yan started invoking the negative energies in his left arm.

Under his control, the already shrivelled left arm became even more shrivelled and shrunken.

Looking at that, it was like as if there was only a layer of skin pressing on his bones, which appeared very strange.

However, as his left arm shriveled up, a mass of extremely evil

power started slowly growing.

The thick white mist on his left arm shortly turned pitch black. The arm was also frighteningly black, as if it was heavily toxic.

A mass of maniacal, evil, destructive power quickly condensed in his left arm.

After seven full cycles, the power in his left arm flowed down into his left palm using the same technique as his right arm, and together they burst from his left palm!

“Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom!”

Following the explosion, seven pitch black handprints flew out from his palms.

The destructive power, along with the thick essence of death, all struck the old tree in front of him.

The old tree was as thick as two people’s waists and around a dozen meters tall. It suddenly collapsed onto the ground. The life force of the lush old tree was instantly cut off!

Under the watchful eyes of Shi Yan, the old tree was surrounded by a swirling black energy. The leaves withered with visible speed.

The lively old tree looked like it had instantly reached the end of its lifespan and turned into a withered husk of a tree that could not be deader. The leaves that fell from it promptly lost all traces of life.

The leaves fell onto the ground and the surrounding leaves looked as if they were also affected, and instantly died. The scene was extremely strange.

The [Death Seal]!

Shi Yan’s eyes glinted with an odd light, and his mind was slightly startled.

He knew that the [Death Seal] would be very extraordinary, but what he did not know was that it would have such an astonishing

destructive force!

This kind of destructive power was not only astounding in strength, but more importantly, this [Death Seal] additionally came with the power of Death!

It could actually cut off the life force in plants!

The [Death Seal] is already this frightening. If the [Life Seal] and [Death Seal] merged together, forming the true [Seal of Life and Death], what would happen?

Shi Yan took a deep breath in, but he knew that this was not the time to continue experimenting.

He heard the sound of footsteps.

Shi Yan immediately knew that Han Feng and the rest had definitely rushed here. His expression shifted for a moment, then he hurriedly left, and quickly took the same route back.

As expected, Han Feng and Ku Long hastily arrived, they exclaimed from afar, “Young Master, are you alright?”

Wu Yunlian and Zuo Shi also poked their heads out from behind Han Feng, they looked at him surprisingly, like they came to figure out what happened.

They all clearly heard that violent thundering sound back there. And in that sound, there seemed to be a mass of evil power.

This made Han Feng and the rest secretly frightened, their minds filled with confusion.

“It’s alright, let’s go back.” Shi Yan calmly walked towards them, seemingly unconcerned, “I got carried away again while I was practicing, I think it generated some bad phenomena. But it’s nothing, it won’t happen next time.”

“Shi Yan, what Martial Skill are you practicing? Why do I think what you’re practicing is not some ordinary Martial Skill?” Zuo Shi couldn’t hold back anymore, her face was full of curiosity.

“Who cares if it’s ordinary or not. Any Martial Skill that can kill is a good one!” Shi Yan said indifferently.

“You little guy! Always acting so mysterious! God knows what you’re really doing.” Zuo Shi curled her lips, feeling a little discontent. She snorted and finally said, “Come on, hurry up. It’s been almost a month. If we’re late, that Xia girl won’t necessarily wait for us.”

“Xia Xin Yan...”

Shi Yan murmured, and suddenly remembered the wonderful taste of that woman’s lips. His heart could not help but skip a beat. A shady look appeared on his face, and after a long while he finally nodded and said, “Yeah, we should move faster. Don’t worry, I won’t slow you guys down any more.”

“Shi Yan, you can’t possibly be thinking of hitting on that woman?” Wu Yunlian’s eyes were sharp. From his micro expressions she saw some clues, and then made a fuss, “I’d recommend you to back down! That woman is trouble. From what I see, no man in the Merchant Union would be qualified to make a move on her, not even Beiming Shang!”

“Well I had already tasted her.” Shi Yan retorted in his mind.

Shi Yan snorted, then said in disdain, “No matter how noble or how beautiful a woman is, in the end she’s going to lay on a man’s bed anyway. Xia Xin Yan is no exception!”

“You! You are so vulgar!” Zuo Shi’s face flushed, and she shot a glare at him, “How did I not realize this before? So this is your true nature! You are a perverted man too!”

“Bullshit!” Wu Yunlian was also upset, “I’ve never laid on anyone’s bed! You little punk, truly nothing decent can come out of that filthy mouth!”

“Huh, then poor you.” Shi Yan was surprised.

“Brat! Why are you getting on my nerves now?” Wu Yunlian

clenched her teeth, and said bitterly. She now missed the quiet days back when Shi Yan always hid in the carriage and never came out.

Three li away from Shi Yan and the group.

(One 里 li is a little more than a third of a mile.)

The two towering, giant men looked murderous, and then said angrily, “Mistress, there is a bastard that’s talking bad about you!”

Shi Yan’s voice was quite loud. And although they were three li apart, the three people from the Misty Pavilion still clearly heard what he said.

“No matter how noble or how beautiful a woman is, in the end she’s going to lay on a man’s bed anyway. Xia Xin Yan is no exception!”

Xia Xin Yan frowned, as she silently repeated Shi Yan’s words in her mind. Her bright eyes flashed with a cold look, and she said indifferently, “Those people are from the Zuo and the Shi families. We don’t need to care about them now, soon we will meet with them. Then, at that time, I will see how arrogant that bastard is. He dares to gossip about me behind my back!”

Chapter 83 - Meeting Face to Face

The journey continued.

Shi Yan lost his carriage, so he had to make do with a horse to mediate. But he still found a way to continue practising the [Seal of Life and Death].

Every night, whenever he had free time, he would make an excuse to leave and put into action the knowledge gained throughout the morning.

However, every time he tried to join the [Life Seal] with the [Death Seal], the result was always a failure.

The merging of the [Seal of Life and Death] was very difficult. Every time he formed the [Life Seal] and [Death Seal], he was unable to project them simultaneously.

Either that the [Life Seal] was executed first, or the [Death Seal] suddenly lashed out.

If one wanted to merge them to form the true [Seal of Life and Death], the very first step would be to execute both types of Seals simultaneously.

Only if this was achieved, could the [Seal of Life and Death] be formed.

This required extreme control. It has to be mentioned that the condensing of his Profound Qi and the negative energies must be synergetic; existence of any flaw was out of question!

Shi Yan was aware of this. However, every time he tried to put his thoughts into action, he found the process to be very difficult, and all his attempts ended in total failure.

Noting that they were getting nearer to the Dead Swamp day by day, Shi Yan stopped his practice. After all, the simultaneous consumption of Profound Qi and negative energy was huge.

Every time he practiced, his body would weaken for a while.

Especially when forming the [Death Seal].

It required using [Rampage] first, however there would always be some backlash. In order to be in top condition while in the Dead Swamp, Shi Yan reluctantly stopped his attempts.

Determined that he wasn't going to stress out anymore, Shi Yan was more relaxed. As he no longer spent his time in meditation for the upcoming journey, he had plenty of time to interact with the two girls, Wu Yunlian and Zuo Shi.

While travelling together for some time, Shi Yan gained some understanding of Wu Yunlian and Zuo Shi. They didn't especially get along very well, but they didn't have any conflicts either.

On this day.

Shi Yan was riding his horse alongside the carriage of Zuo family. His expression was serene, and he was still deep in thought about the [Seal of Life and Death].

"Young Master, we're here." At this moment, Han Feng pointed forward, and said quietly, "The people from Misty Pavilion are already waiting."

Shi Yan stared and gazed into the distance, spotting three black dots.

Wu Yunlian also stuck her head out, looking into the distance. She then whispered, "Everyone be careful. Misty Pavilion is an outsider to us. That woman can reach the Sky Realm, so let's just watch out."

Hearing that, everyone nodded.

Shi Yan, however, furrowed his brows slightly. He didn't know how Xia Xin Yan would react after seeing him.

On that day, before Xia Xin Yan fainted, she had clearly seen him.

Xia Xin Yan definitely knew now why she was at the Misty Rain House.

During this meeting, who knows if Xia Xin Yan would interrogate him or not.

But Shi Yan wasn't particularly worried. At the Misty Rain House, the only time he really violated Xia Xin Yan was when she was unconscious.

Xia Xin Yan should not know what he had done.

Xia Xin Yan never separated far from Shi Yan and the rest. Although she had nonchalantly tossed out the half-part of the map, inwardly she was still cautious of them. She was constantly on guard towards the Shi and Zuo families in order to prevent them from taking any covert action without her knowledge.

That day, when Shi Yan had commented on her, she had heard it clearly. She was naturally agitated from inside.

But when she saw Shi Yan, she recognised him as the one who had brought her to the brothel. This made her even angrier.

What happened that day was deeply imprinted into her memory.

Many times in the past several nights, whenever Xia Xin Yan woke, she would still feel herself lying in the Misty Rain House...

And whenever she thought about it, she would imagine herself lying unconscious on the ground while that guy enjoyed himself with the two prostitutes right in front of her.

She felt unreasonably angry.

Finally, Shi Yan was right in front of her.

Xia Xin Yan only glanced at Shi Yan once, then she pointed at him and said coldly, "You follow me, I have some things to ask you."

Wu Yunlian, Zuo Shi, and Han Feng were all shocked. They looked at Xia Xin Yan weirdly, not understanding why she would want to talk with Shi Yan alone, instead of asking for Chi Xiao's whereabouts.

Shi Yan had already expected her to do that, so he nodded and said calmly, "Okay."

Shi Yan's attitude made Wu Yunlian and the rest even more confused.

Han Feng was stupefied for a second, slightly worried, "Young Master..."

"It's alright." Shi Yan waved his hand, and left along with Xia Xin Yan.

Shortly, the two arrived under an old tree.

"That day, it was you, right?" Xia Xin Yan's bright eyes looked straight at him, and asked indifferently.

"Mmm hmm."

"That day at the brothel, while I was unconscious, you did... that with the two prostitutes?" Xia Xin Yan secretly clenched her teeth.

"Mmm hmm."

"You are the most perverted bastard!"

Shi Yan couldn't help but laugh. He nodded and said calmly, "I'm a man, this is my nature, there's nothing to be ashamed of. But, I don't suppose I did anything to you? In fact, I saved your life! That night, if you weren't at the brothel, the Beiming family might have found you. On that note, you should thank me."

Xia Xin Yan was a bit stunned. It seemed she didn't expect Shi Yan to honestly admit his lechery in front of her.

Xia Xin Yan was in a fix and her expression was changing continuously. It was as if she very much wanted to scold Shi Yan, but didn't know where to start.

To scold him that he's perverted? Well, he's already admitted that. He's already so shameless, what's the use in scolding him further?

Xia Xin Yan felt agitated for no apparent reason. After a long while she frustratingly shook her head and said, "You did save me, but I'm not grateful to you! What happened that night, I don't want anyone to know, do you understand?"

Xia Xin Yan's beautiful eyes were cold, her intention of a threat was clear.

"Don't worry, I'm not that stupid." Shi Yan's expression was indifferent.

"That, that night, did you... did you do anything else to me?" Xia Xin Yan's eyes suddenly showed a little panic.

"Anything else?" Shi Yan was stunned, his face full of confusion, "Like what?"

Listening to this, Xia Xin Yan was raged from inside, and she was continuously repeating the word 'Calm' inside her mind. She took some deep breaths and finally said in a cold tone, "I'm saying did you have any ill intentions of me?"

"Of course yeah!" Shi Yan whispered in his mind, but on the surface he looked serious and shook his head, "No, I'm not a reckless person."

"You are not a reckless person?!"

Xia Xin Yan was staring at Shi Yan. She suddenly realised that she was very easily getting angry when near this person. Clenching her teeth, she sneered and said again, "A perverted bastard who thought of seeking pleasure in a brothel while his family was in a death battle with their enemies. And you say you are not a reckless person? Isn't this really the funniest thing!"

"It's just a normal physiological need." Shi Yan said indifferently.

Xia Xin Yan started at him blankly, her eyes repeatedly showing feelings of disgust and anger.

Xia Xin Yan slightly waved her hand as if she wanted to say no more. Finally she said, “I wish you forget everything that happened that night! You saved my life once, and I will remember that. During this exploration of the Gate of Heaven, I will make sure to do whatever I can to keep you safe. After that, we’re even!”

Xia Xin Yan could not bear to stay any longer. She turned around and left straight back along the path she came. She was still filled with anger, but there was nowhere for her to release it.

“Then I will thank you in advance.” Shi Yan shouted loudly towards her retreating figure. A smile still lingered on his lips, as if he had no idea how annoyed Xia Xin Yan was.

In the mass of dark clouds on the sky.

A ten-meter long, Level 5 demon beast; a Wind Eagle, floated in the clouds. Beiming Shang, Beiming Ce, Yin Kui, Jiu Shan, Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan sat together on the Wind Eagle.

Beiming Shang sat on the head of the Wind Eagle; he reached his head out to look down at Shi Yan and the rest, who looked as small as ants. Then with a deep voice he said, “They should be going to the Dead Swamp.”

“Grandpa, when should we show up?”

“Wait until they arrive at their destination.” Beiming Shang furrowed his brows, and said, “Chi Xiao should be appearing soon. Chi Xiao is a true Sky Realm warrior and he might discover us. Let’s go, we should leave in advance.”

Mu Yu Die clenched her fist, her bright eyes filled with hope.

The Wind Eagle suddenly flew off, and quickly became a black dot as it swiftly flew towards the Dead Swamp, not leaving any

trace of its passing.

Chapter 84 - The Dead Swamp

Chi Xiao arrived two days later, and thus the team to explore the Gate of Heaven was complete.

The Dead Swamp was comprised of thousands of swamps of all different sizes.

These had existed for centuries. Whoever stepped into these would most likely be unable to escape and eventually drown.

It was hard to travel in the swamps, so the carriage and horses were left at the entrance, and the team started walking into the Dead Swamp.

Once they stepped into it, Shi Yan was on alert so as to avoid any dangers.

There were endless green swamps in the Dead Swamp. Of which, many of them were emitting a green colored air.

In some places, the air was so poisonous that people would rot to death as soon as they inhaled it.

Apart from the swamps and poisonous air, there were also demon beats.

The demon beasts had adapted to the environment. They would usually hide in the swamps and jump out to attack whenever people passed by.

Chi Xiao and Xia Xin Yan were taking the lead and avoiding all the small sized swamps.

Chi Xiao was a Sky Realm warrior, so he could avoid the swamp by flying in the air.

Though he didn't feel fear, the others did. Even Xia Xin Yan could only reach Sky Realm when she operated her Incarnation Martial Spirit. Only then could she fly.

However, every time Xia Xin Yan used her Incarnation Martial

Spirit, her vitality would be damaged.

Therefore, Xia Xin Yan rarely used it unless it was an emergency. She was quite cautious along the way, following Chi Xiao's lead.

Shi Yan's realm was the lowest among them, and so was his knowledge about this world.

Thus, after they entered the Dead Swamp, he kept mute, carefully observing the dangers in the swamp as well as Chi Xiao and other people's reactions.

"There is a three-mile long swamp in front of us which we can't avoid." Chi Xiao paused, standing on a wet area and frowned, "This swamp should be the safest one around this area. Be careful, we need to take the risk this time."

Wearing a rigid face, Shi Yan observed the swamp in front of him with furrowed brows.

The swamp was three miles long and filled with green mud. At the center of which there were pieces of dry land, enough for two or three people to stand on.

Some of those dry lands were dozens of meters away while some were only two or three meters apart. It would only be safe to pass this swamp by walking on the dry areas.

However, Chi Xiao's next statement crashed his plans.

"Don't even hope that the dry areas could hold people. It will sink even faster once you step on some of them. Many of those dry patches just float on the swamp and can't sustain any weight. Once you step on it, it will quickly sink."

Shi Yan turned serious in surprise, not saying anything.

"Don't worry, I will test every dry area so that you can walk on the solid ones." Chi Xiao saw through their worries and smiled, "You guys just need to follow me. It will be fine. But some of the dry areas are quite small, they may support my weight, but not

three or four people. So we still need to be careful.”

Everybody nodded with a rigid face. Even Zuo Shi, who was quite relaxed before, got a little nervous and observed the dry lands before her cautiously.

“Miss Xia, there may be a lot of danger. Could you help me with your Sky Realm energy?” Chi Xiao hesitated, and looked to Xia Xin Yan.

Xia Xin Yan’s crystal eyes showed hesitation behind her veil. After a thought, she said, “Mr. Chi Xiao, if you can handle it by yourself, please do so. I will be quite weak for a while after using my Sky Realm energy. I want to save my energy for the Nine-headed Sky Snake, but not these swamps.”

Hearing that, Zuo Shi and Wu Yun Lian secretly frowned.

They assumed she didn’t want to help and regard them as her friends. Therefore, they were a little disappointed, though they didn’t show it.

Chi Xiao didn’t mind though, as he nodded, “Well then, let me do it. But you have to be more careful since Miss Xia isn’t able to help. Don’t step anywhere randomly without my confirmation. It will be tough even for me to save you once you sink into the mud.”

The group nodded together seriously.

“Hmm, follow me.” Chi Xiao took a light breath and flew over and landed on a dry patch.

He placed one foot on it and it sank immediately into the mud.

Shi Yan’s expression changed slightly with solemnness crossing his eyes. He suddenly realized that this journey may not be as smooth as he had imagined, thus he had to be more focused.

Chi Xiao was calm. Seeing the earth sink, he remarked, “You see, this piece can’t even hold one person. If you jump onto it, you will sink with it.”

While talking, he flew up again and landed on another piece of dry land. That piece was quite solid, not sinking at all.

“This is ok. But still be careful. It may be dangerous if more people land on it.” Chi Xiao stamped as he reminded others.

The land under him shook and slowly sank again.

“This can support three persons. No more than three people can stand on it when you pass through.” Chi Xiao explained and flew out again. Using the same method, he tested more dry patches.

Waiting until Chi Xiao flew a hundred meters away, Xia Xin Yan said calmly, “Let’s go.”

Then, she moved her well-shaped body and lightly dropped on that dry area.

After a second, she moved again to the next safe area and advanced after Chi Xiao swiftly.

The two huge men who were following her didn’t hesitate either, as they stepped one after another onto the dry areas to keep up with her.

Zuo Shi, Wu Yun Lian and Chu Ping followed up, lining along the road where Xia Xian Yan had passed.

“Young Master, after you.” Han Feng bowed to Shi Yan, “Be careful.”

“Mmm.” Shi Yan nodded, skipped forward, and slowly moved after Zuo Shi.

There was a light acidic smell upon the swamp.

After they advanced in the swamp for a mile, Shi Yan found some green bubbles rising out from it, and green gas appeared as the bubbles exploded.

“Be careful, that green gas is poisonous. Don’t breathe in.” Chi Xiao’s voice came from ahead, “We are all at high realm so it wouldn’t be a problem for us to hold our breath for a while. I will

find the way as soon as possible, please follow up.”

Chi Xiao didn't stop advancing as he was talking. Hopping on and off the dry areas, he kept reporting, “This is ok. But be careful, it can only contain two people...”

Shi Yan focused his eyes on Chi Xiao and remembered his steps by heart.

At that time, he quite admired the warriors at Sky Realm, for they could fly over this swamp without suffering so much trouble.

His desire for more strength and to reach a higher realm became much stronger.

With Chi Xiao ahead of them, the group found it much easier to advance. Everybody, except Chi Xiao, was rather relaxed.

They were all safe in this dangerous swamp where numerous warriors had lost their lives.

However, just as they were about to exit this swamp, Chi Xiao's expression changed as he screamed, “Watch out! Something's in the mud!”

“Pop! Pop! Pop!”

Three demon beasts wrapped in mud suddenly rose up from the swamp, and jumped toward Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan.

This type of demon beasts looked like loaches, with needle-like teeth and sharp bones on their back.

Three demon beasts jumped out of the mud, as two of them dashed toward Xia Xin Yan and the other one towards Shi Yan.

Shi Yan looked calm. Just as the demon beast was about to touch him, he stretched out his right hand which petrified immediately and operated his [Finger Spear] toward that beast!

(TL note: [Finger Spear] was previously named [Finger Gun].)

“Chee!”

The demon beast bit Shi Yan's right arm but couldn't crush it. On the contrary, its head was pierced by Shi Yan's fingers, green blood oozed out of its head before collapsing into the swamp.

“Boom boom!”

Two huge booms came from Xia Xin Yan's side.

Shi Yan turned back to find that the two demon beasts had exploded before they could approach Xia Xin Yan and fell into the swamp.

A numb feeling came from his right palm which was covered by green blood. Shi Yan frowned and took out a soft rag from his bag to wipe the blood away.

One after another, odd demon beasts showed up from the green, bubble-covered swamp; their numbers reaching about one hundred by a rough count.

Those demon beasts gazed at them with hatred as if they were about to pick someone to eat.

“Shi Yan, did you get any green blood from the Green Loach on your skin?” Chi Xiao suddenly screamed from the front of the troop.

Shi Yan wiped the green blood away casually and turned his eyes to Chi Xiao, “What's wrong with it?”

“The Green Loach has too much poisonous gas in its body, so their blood is poisonous too and will rot your skin!” Chi Xiao was rather regretful, “I had meant to tell you after we passed this swamp, for the Green Loach rarely appears in this area.”

“Chi Xiao, what are you doing here again?”

A hairless ugly man covered in mud slowly stood up from the swamp. As half of his body appeared, he stared at Chi Xiao and scolded, “Last time you stole my Green Herb, now what do you want again!”

Translate by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 85 - A Co-Master

This hideous looking strange man could easily navigate through the mud and the dark green scales on his body made him more frightening.

As he shouted in anger, the poisonous miasma in the surroundings all began to gather at their location.

The dense miasma concentrated around the group and continued to condense into a dense fog.

“Hualala!”

Drops of green poisonous water clattered down all of a sudden.

A poisonous rain fell upon this swamp.

Chi Xiao's expression changed as he yelled, “Zhua Qi! Don't you dare make a fuss!”

At the same time, Chi Xiao took out a small curtain and expanded it at once, covering the whole group.

The poisonous rain fell on the silver curtain and trailed through the edges, immediately emitting poisonous fumes when falling in the swamp.

“Silver Curtain!”

Face twisted, the ugly man shouted, “You took out your Silver Curtain! Chi Xiao, you must want to have a good fight with me this time!”

“Stop it!” Seeing the ugly man, Zhua Qi, about to act, Chi Xiao hurried to stop him, “Zhua Qi, you are mistaken about me this time! I haven't come here to fight with you but the Nine-headed Sky Snake! And I only took out my Silver Curtain to block the snake's poison, not to trap you!”

“I don't buy it!” Zhua Qi laughed coldly, “You want to fight the Nine-headed Sky Snake alone? Who would even believe that?”

Humph! You have no grudge against the Nine-headed Sky Snake. You must have come for me!”

After a grunt, Zhua Qi immersed one hand into the swamp and soon, streams of odd green light shot into the mud.

One after another, mud dragons jumped out of the swamp. They were as thick as a human waist and were about ten meters tall, trying to bite their group.

Zhua Qi could not only control the miasma in the Dead Swamp, but could also control the mud.

Shi Yan’s expression changed slightly, as he didn’t expect themselves facing such a tough enemy right at the beginning of their journey. He was immediately vigilant, circulating his Profound Qi and prepared to attack those mud dragons.

Those mud dragons flew out from the swamps swiftly and moved towards the group from all directions. It was quite magnificent.

The dry land on which the group was currently standing on was continuously sinking into the swamp under Zhua Qi’s control.

Xia Xin Yan’s eyes turned icy as she decided to use her Incarnation Martial Spirit.

“Zhua Qi! Believe me! I haven’t come for you!” Chi Xiao yelled anxiously.

Chi Xiao was fully assured that he could beat Zhua Qi, but the consequence to their group would be dreadful. He firmly believed that once they entered into battle, only he and Xia Xin Yan could withstand Zhua Qi’s attacks.

“Shi Yan, come here. I will protect you.” Xia Xin Yan glanced over him and said without any emotion.

Han Feng and Ku Long were surprised, and looked at Xia Xin Yan in confusion.

So were Wu Yun Lian and Zuo Shi. It was unreasonable that Xia

Xin Yan would try to protect Shi Yan.

Shi Yan dared not take the risk, so he hopped through the dry lands to Xia Xin Yan's side.

“Zhua Qi!”

Chi Xiao was astounded, “The Gate of Heaven is in the Yin Valley! I came for the Nine-headed Sky Snake! Stop now!”

“What?” Zhua Qi was quite surprised as he screamed, “The Gate of Heaven?”

“Yes. We got a treasure map. And the Gate of Heaven turned out to be located in the Yin Valley!” Chi Xiao had to tell him the truth.

Zhua Qi was stunned, and then giggled cunningly.

As he was giggling, the green miasma in the air began to float away from the group.

As the green miasma dispersed, the poisonous rain stopped as well.

The flying mud dragons turned back to mud and fell into the center of the swamp.

Hundreds of green loaches which were rushing up also stopped as they saw the mud dragons disappear. Under Zhua Qi's order, they went back under the mud as well.

Zhua Qi then stopped.

Chi Xiao was relieved and stretched his hand up into the air and shrunk the curtain, finally falling into his palm.

The swamp went back to serenity. Even the green bubbles gradually disappeared. The dangerous swamp suddenly became quiet.

“I know you want to beat the Nine-headed Sky Snake too.” Chi Xiao grunted and reproached in a rage, “I bet you would have regretted it if you had stopped too late!”

As he was speaking, he looked at Xia Xin Yan.

Chi Xiao could compete with Zhua Qi alone, and with Xia Xin Yan at the Sky Realm, Zhua Qi would have been in great trouble.

Zhua Qi looked towards Xia Xin Yan as he noticed Chi Xiao's gaze, and frowned.

He could feel a stream of forceful power subsiding in her body.

Just from a glance, Zhua Qi noticed that this woman was unmanageable, and she was operating some tricks secretly.

Shi Yan stood by Xia Xin Yan with a gloomy face, still gazing at Zhua Qi vigilantly.

Without taking a look at Shi Yan, Xia Xin Yan said calmly, "Mr. Chi Xiao, can you introduce this swamp master to us?"

"He is just a co-master."

Chi Xiao shook his head with disdain, glancing at Zhua Qi who was rather unhappy with him and said, "Zhua Qi is active in the outer area of the Dead Swamp, where there are small swamps and miasma. However, at the center of the Dead Swamp, that is to say, the Yin Field, the Nine-headed Sky Snake takes control. There is no way he could take charge there."

"Chi Xiao! The Yin Field is mine!" Zhua Qi suddenly cried out, "My father practiced there! I will get it back sooner or later!"

"Till you get it back." Chi Xiao smirked, and nodded to Xia Xin Yan, "Miss Xia, walk to the bank now."

"Hmm." Xia Xin Yan nodded, glanced at Shi Yan with her brows furrowed, and said indifferently, "Leave now."

"Okay."

Shi Yan responded casually and hopped through the dry lands where Chi Xiao had tested, to a muddy area ahead, and soon he was ashore.

Zhua Qi grunted, moved his muddy body swiftly in the swamp, and also reached the shore. But half of his body was still in the swamp, for he was still a little suspicious of Chi Xiao.

“Shi Yan, how are you now? The blood of the green loach didn’t hurt you? Do you need Zhua Qi’s help you remove it?” Chi Xiao asked as he suddenly recalled the incident.

Standing there, Shi Yan looked down to his palm and shook his head, “I’m fine.”

His Immortal Martial Spirit had cleaned the poison before he knew it.

Hearing that, Chi Xiao and Zhua Qi looked at him in surprise.

Only these two knew that a Human Realm warrior would suffer fatigue for at least one day after touching the green loach’s blood.

Others didn’t know about the blood, so they didn’t care much and walked ahead.

Soon, Zuo Shi, Han Feng and others also got out of the swamp and landed ashore.

“Chi Xiao, you really came for the Snake?” Zhua Qi raised his head and asked, while half of his body was still in the mud.

“Behave yourself for the rest of our journey. Take the lead if you want to fight the Snake.” Chi Xiao nodded.

“Sure! Of course I will help if your goal is the Snake.” Zhua Qi was cooperative this time, “I will send you to the Yin Field nice and safe. But I will go there too, as my father once practiced there and I’m familiar with it. I can help.”

“Apart from the Snake, you also want to enter the Gate of Heaven.” Chi Xiao grunted.

Zhua Qi didn’t deny it, but giggled, “You know the Snake’s power well. You can hardly beat it. Let me help you and in turn you let me into the Gate of Heaven; it’s a win-win situation.”

“Miss Xia, what do you think?”

Chi Xiao didn't reply Zhua Qi, but looked to Xia Xin Yan, “Zhua Qi and the Nine-headed Sky Snake are old enemies. The outer area of the Dead Swamp is his sphere of influence. We won't come across any trouble if he takes the lead for us, and we are more likely to beat the Snake with his help.”

“Okay.” Xia Xin Yan thought for a moment and nodded.

“Well then, you are in.” Chi Xiao then replied to him.

“Hehe, you won't regret.” Zhua Qi smiled cunningly, then he was a little stunned, “Chi Xiao, is there anyone else?”

“Nope.” Chi Xiao was stunned, “Only us.”

“Then why did a Sky Realm warrior enter the Dead Swamp with several experts seven days ago?” Zhua Qi asked, “I killed some of his people, and fought with him so I know that he is at Sky Realm. I never left my Dead Swamp, so I don't know who he was. But he was really something. He must have reached the Yin Field by now.”

“A Sky Realm Expert!” Chi Xiao's expression changed and he thought for a moment, “The Fire Empire, the God-blessed Empire, and the Merchant Union all rarely see a Sky Realm warrior. Who could that man be? What did he look like?”

“Thin, tall, pale-faced, narrow eyes. He seemed to rarely expose himself to the sun, and trained in a gruesome Martial Skill.” Zhua Qi thought for a while and depicted.

“I don't know who that is either.” Chi Xian pondered for a while only to realise that he didn't know that man, so he shook his head, “Never mind, maybe he just happened to pass the Dead Swamp and has already left by now. Anyway, we have to be on alert.”

“Let's go. Let me show you to the Yin Field.”

Zhua Qi finally landed ashore. His legs were covered with green

scales. He seemed not used to walking, for he swayed like a duck.

However, they all had witnessed his ability, they didn't dare make fun of his hilarious walking posture.

As the master of this area, wherever he went, the poisonous miasma dissipated quickly.

There were many pieces of dry land ahead for them to advance smoothly.

They found it much easier to walk after Zhua Qi took the lead. They finished the one-month journey in only eight days.

Eight days later, the group finally entered the Yin Field.

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 86 - The Yin Field

The Yin Field was a place in the center of the Dead Swamp.

The Dead Swamp was surrounded by countless swamps; the muddy sludge could be seen everywhere. There was almost not a single dry spot.

However, the Yin Field at the middle of the Dead Swamp was an exception.

Here, there were no swamps, and no ooze. The ground was mostly flat, and although not especially dry, it was still not as humid as the outer area of the Dead Swamp.

The Yin field was an extraordinary place. The air above the field was covered with thick dark clouds all year around, such that not even the sun, moon, and the stars could be seen.

Perhaps that was the reason why the Yin Qi in the Yin Field was especially heavy. Anyone who enters would feel very uncomfortable.

The place didn't appear to be frigid, but the Yin energy all around made people chilled to their bones. One would feel as if they had entered a supernatural space, surrounded by evil spirits; it felt very creepy.

When Shi Yan just entered into the Yin field, he frowned slightly. He took a deep breath and felt discomfort seep into his bones. Although it wasn't very chilly here, it still made people uncomfortable all over.

Standing on the frigid earth, Shi Yan gazed around and found some strange exotic plants growing.

These plants were not very tall, the tallest being only five to six meters, but they all grew in the weirdest pattern. There were various plants with very pale flowers, absolutely lacking any variance in color.

Especially with some plants, their flowers looked like ghastly faces, giving off an extremely terrifying feeling.

Just standing in the middle of those bizarre plants made Shi Yan feel uncomfortable. When he looked at those plants, he always felt like they were going to leap towards him and bite him.

“The Yin Qi here is heavy, the plants that grew from it are very strange. Some plants could even suck in the Yin Qi and the corpse energies. While some others would attack as soon as they smell the breath of a human, and entangle onto that human until they die.”

Zhua Qi scowled as he looked at the different plants in the Yin Field and then continued, “Other than plants, you should also be careful of demon beasts. The demon beasts here especially hate strangers. If they see anyone coming, they will attack until you are dead. Usually when warriors go through the Dead Swamp, they would rather explore the outer perimeter than in here.”

“Slither, slither, slither!”

Silvery-white long snakes suddenly appeared from within the plants.

These snakes were about three meters in length. Their heads were cone shaped, and their tails kept making circular marks on the ground. Their soybean-sized eyes gave out a cold glare.

Several dozens of snakes slithered out from the plants. They actually understood how to split up, and came from all directions to surround Shi Yan and the rest.

“Level 2 demon beast, Corpse Worm Snake.” Zhua Qi sneered, and suddenly stomped on the ground.

Strange ripples spread from his foot! With him as the center, the ripples formed in ring shapes, and attacked towards all directions.

“Pop pop pop pop! Pop pop pop!”

Wherever the ripples went, those dozens of Level 2 Corpse Worm

Snakes exploded, sprinkling brown blood everywhere.

“I hate snakes the most!” Zhua Qi sneered, his face full of disgust. He turned back to Chi Xiao and said, “Before we come across the Nine-headed Sky Snake, I’ll take care of the obstacles on the way. I’ll let this be the bargain in return for participating in the Gate of Heaven.”

Chi Xiao nodded, and replied, “You know this place well, so you can take the lead.”

Zhua Qi didn’t refuse and walked straight to the front of the group. Traces of strange green poisonous fog quietly spread out into the air.

When the plants in the Yin Field sensed the poisonous fog from him, they all contracted, as if they were actually afraid.

Many of the plants were originally three meters tall, but after Zhua Qi walked past, they shrunk to only one meter, clearly a whole lot smaller.

Shi Yan was amazed; he watched with glinting eyes. Whenever he walked past those plants he would carefully observe them. He realized that wherever Zhua Qi went, the plants were very docile and submissive.

However, if he didn’t follow behind Zhua Qi and chose to walk a few meters in another direction, those same species of plants would actually open themselves up and try to entangle him, looking as if they wouldn’t give up till he was strangled to death.

“Kid, if you don’t want to die, you better follow me.” Zhua Qi suddenly turned his head and glared at Shi Yan. In his mouth he was quietly muttering, “I don’t understand all of you. You knew that you were gonna enter the Yin Field, but still brought two burdens along. Do they wanna sacrifice them later at a key moment...?”

The burdens Zhua Qi was muttering about were obviously Shi

Yan and Zuo Shi. They both were only at the Human Realm, the ones with the lowest strength.

Shi Yan looked indifferent, he was unmoved by Zhua Qi's whispers.

But Zuo Shi was not happy, she pouted and said, "What are you muttering about, big earthworm? Who are you calling burdens? Hmph! If you don't wanna come along with us, then you can leave right now. It's not like we can't live without you."

"Girl, who are you calling earthworm?" Zhua Qi's dark green scale-covered face slightly shook for a second, he murderously glared at Zuo Shi, "Say that again!"

"Alright." Chi Xiao furrowed his brows, and scolded Zuo Shi, "Zhua Qi is an elder, don't be so disrespectful. We wouldn't have been travelling so smoothly this whole way if it weren't for Zhua Qi."

Chi Xiao then looked at Zhua Qi and said, "Why can't you stop being so foul-mouthed? If it weren't for your stupid foul mouth back in the day, I wouldn't have tried to fight to the death with you. Why are you doing it again?"

Zhua Qi snorted and fiercely glared at Zuo Shi, the scales on his face shaking again, but he stopped mumbling.

Zuo Shi however, wanted to keep throwing a few more insults at him, but was stopped by Chi Xiao's glare. She pouted her lips and stopped talking.

Xia Xin Yan and the two giant men were on the left side of Chi Xiao and the rest of the group. She didn't talk, her expression was indifferent; she ignored Zhua Qi, but didn't have the intention to talk to Chi Xiao either.

However, occasionally her eyes would drift towards Shi Yan. The expression in her eyes was quite complicated, and no one could figure out what she was really thinking.

Since the day they came out from the swamp, she didn't speak a word to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was also sensible, he didn't make a move to get close to her either.

This atmosphere between her and Shi Yan made Chi Xiao, Zuo Shi, and the rest dumbfounded. But everyone pretended they didn't realise, and nobody went to annoy and ask the two about it.

"Just come on and follow me. If you wanna live, you all better know your place!" Zhua Qi snorted, and purposely looked towards Shi Yan.

Shi Yan looked calm, he didn't bother with Zhua Qi.

Just at this moment, Chi Xiao suddenly furrowed his brows, and a hint of confusion flashed in his eyes.

"What happened?" Xia Xin Yan's expression moved, she keenly sensed Chi Xiao's abnormality.

"Nothing." Chi Xiao shook his head, and said calmly, "I just suddenly sensed something strange, but it was gone in a flash. I wonder if I'm just being delusional."

After saying that, everyone got a little nervous. Zhua Chi said, "Could it be that Sky Realm master?"

"I don't know." Chi Xiao shook his head again."

Chi Xiao's reaction cast a dark shadow over everyone's minds, and made everyone more cautious.

In the Yin Field, where there was dense foliage filled with plants. A pale and tall middle-aged scholar silently stood there.

By his side were thirty five warriors with the same pale face and blank expression. One of the young men was only in his early twenties. With long hair to his waist, he appeared very handsome,

but had a kind of evil temperament.

“Master, what have you found?” The young man asked curiously.

“The objectives should have entered into the Yin Field, and I just used my soul power to probe a little. Another soul power immediately sensed me.” That pale middle-aged scholar said.

“Is it someone from the Beiming family?”

“No, Beiming Shang got here a long time ago.”

“Why hasn’t he come to find us yet?”

“The objective is already here, Beiming Shang would come very soon.”

One day later.

In the area where that group of people had gathered, Beiming Shang arrived there alone; cold energy writhing around his body.

“Lord of the Dark World?” After Beiming Shang arrived, he put together his fists for that middle-aged scholar, and said, “How may I address you?”

“Zou Zi He.” The Lord of the Dark World looked calm, “I’ve long heard the name of the Head of the Beiming family. Now that I’ve met you today, you seem to deserve your reputation.”

Beiming Shang stretched his lips, and said emotionlessly, “Brother Zou, you should be one with the most wide-spread reputation. The Dark World has been dominant in the Fire Empire, and from that we can see that Brother Zou is truly a great talent in the world. Working with Brother Zou this time, hopefully everyone will be satisfied in the end.”

“Where’s that girl from the Mu family?” The Lord of the Dark World furrowed his brows.

“After exploring the Gate of Heaven, I will bring her to you

myself.” Beiming Shang glanced at everyone from the Dark World and said, “Brother Zou, why have you brought so many? Aren’t you scared of being discovered?”

“We, the people from the Dark World, are good at hiding our trails, this you don’t have to worry about, Brother Beiming.”

“Alright then.” Beiming Shang nodded, then continued, “The other side has appeared, their target should be the Yin Valley in the Yin Field. If any mishaps really happen at that time, I wish Brother Zou would come out. But, I don’t want you to identify yourself too soon, or else Mu Yi Die’s resentment will grow.”

“She is merely a bereaved little girl, do you really need to care, Brother Beiming?”

“I don’t really care about Mu Yu Die, but there’s another girl by her side. The Martial Spirit that girl possesses could be of use to my Beiming family. I don’t want that girl to know that we gave Mu Yu Die to you, or else it would affect my plans in the future.”

“Sure, the reason I didn’t bring my mask this time, is to cooperate with you. I stand as the Lord of the Dark World, and I hardly show my true self to others. That Mu girl has never seen me, she will never know who I am. You can be reassured on this matter, Brother Beiming.”

“Good, then we will meet again at the Yin Valley. By that time I will use my soul power to send messages to you, I hope you won’t disappoint me, Brother Zou.”

Then Beiming Shang slowly retreated. His body faded into a wisp of cold energy, and dissipated into the air.

“Master, Beiming Shang is cunning in his schemes. This exploration of the Gate of Heaven, we should be careful of him, he’s definitely not the good kind.”

“Don’t worry, your mistress is here in the dark. If any great treasures really appear, they will surely belong to the Dark World!”

“Mistress is here too?” The demonic handsome young man exclaimed.

“Yes, she arrived at the Yin Valley a long time ago. With her attainments in concealment, no one in the Yin Field can ever detect her unless she shows herself!”

“Ha, then this exploration of the Gate of Heaven is in the bag.”

“Mmm hmm.”

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 87 - Black Formula

Following Zhua Qi and the others, Shi Yan headed for the Yin Valley without stopping.

Zhua Qi proved his value along the way by removing those odd plants and brutal demon beasts.

Zhua Qi turned out to be the co-master of the Dead Swamp, for he even knew this area, the Yin Field, far better than Chi Xiao.

All along the way, Zhua Qi removed all the obstacles easily. In doing so, Chi Xiao and Xia Xin Yan could save their energy for the fight with the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

The nearer they got to the Yin Valley, the more they could feel the Yin Qi.

Gradually, Shi Yan could feel his Profound Qi flowing slower and slower; his ribs and bones were experiencing immense pressure from the Yin Qi.

So did Zuo Shi.

The nearer they came to the Yin Valley, the more pale her face became. Apparently, she wasn't able to adapt to the atmosphere there either.

"Let's have a rest here, Zhua Qi, Miss Xia, we need to study the treasure map as well." Chi Xiao was being considerate of his students, so he stopped at one clean and flat area and took out the treasure map to study with Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan.

Zhua Qi didn't want to stop, but since Chi Xiao took out the map, he agreed with him instantly.

He walked up to Chi Xiao quickly and giggled, "I'm very familiar with the Yin Valley. Let me see the map and I can find the position of the Gate of Heaven."

Xia Xin Yan hesitated and she too walked up.

Chi Xiao had learnt the map by heart, so he handed the map to Xia Xin Yan and let her watch Zhua Qi, while he himself walked towards Zuo Shi and Shi Yan.

“How do you two feel? Can you endure it?” Chi Xiao looked to Zuo Shi.

Zuo Shi’s pretty face had turned pale, “Yes I can endure it, but it’s too uncomfortable. The Yin Qi has slowed my Profound Qi and seems to be consuming it as well. The nearer we get to the Yin valley, the faster it is consumed.”

“That’s natural.” Chi Xiao nodded and explained, “The heavy Yin Qi would affect your body, so your Profound Qi would try to adapt to it, thus it gets consumed. You two pay attention to it. It’s just the beginning. The Yin Qi will be denser in the valley, so if you two can’t bear it you will have to stop before you enter it.”

“Teacher, the [Basalt Scripture] seems to be able to remove some Yin Qi” Zuo Shi suddenly said.

Chi Xiao was surprised, finding it funny and annoying, “Then why didn’t you train it long ago?”

“I just realized it.” Zuo Shi protruded her tongue and grinned naughtily, “Fine fine, I will train with it diligently from now on. I found that once I operate the [Basalt Scripture], the Yin Qi can’t enter my body.”

“If you were hardworking long time ago, you might have finished training the [Basalt Scripture] already.” Chi Xiao shook his head with regret and resignation.

“Stop it! It’s not too late to start now.” Zuo Shi pouted with a grunt.

Chi Xiao sighed in his mind and turned to Shi Yan, “How do you feel?”

“I’m fine. I’m ok with it.” Shi Yan replied calmly.

“Well, do your best.” Chi Xiao nodded, “You should stop when you can’t bear it, then Han Feng will stay and protect you, while Ku Long will enter the Yin Valley with us. We only need to find out what’s inside the Gate of heaven this time, then your Shi family will send more experts here. So don’t worry too much if you can’t enter the Gate.”

Shi Yan nodded, not saying anything more.

Chi Xiao comforted him and requested Zuo Shi to work hard, then walked back to Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan.

“Young Master, the family head told us that it’s most important that you are safe. Don’t push yourself if you can’t bear it. The family head said that we just need to find out the exact position of the Gate and what’s inside it.” Ku Long said in a low voice beside him.

“I got it.” Shi Yan looked indifferent, but his brows were furrowed.

A short distance away, Zhua Qi, Xia Xin Yan and Chi Xiao were still studying the treasure map.

Although Zhua Qi regarded himself as a know-it-all when it came to the Yin Valley, he couldn’t figure out anything when he saw the map, as seen from his confused expression when whispering with Chi Xiao.

Shi Yan glanced over them and sat down where he was, when a thought came across in his mind.

He was curious about the Gate of Heaven, and he wanted to go inside of it too.

However, the Yin Qi here was really tough, as it was omnipresent. At the same time, it was becoming more dense, which was affecting his body a lot.

Before they got to the Yin Valley, he had to consume his Profound Qi to defend from its influence. He couldn’t imagine how

powerful the Yin Qi would be in the valley. By then, his Profound Qi would be totally consumed, and it would be very dangerous if anything came up.

“I must find a way to defend against the Yin Qi!”

After a short deliberation, Shi Yan’s expression was determined. He sat cross-legged and tried to search in his memories.

An idea flashed across his mind!

The [Black Formula]!

His face lit up. He picked up his bag and took out a book on the Mortal Level Martial Skill, [Black Formula].

It was only an elementary level Martial Skill, which needed to collect Yin Qi while training. It was best to train with it where there was dense Yin Qi.

Since he took the [Black Formula] from Karu he had given up training it as it was only a Mortal Level Martial Skill and required a Yin Qi-filled environment.

After he got to the Shi family and witnessed so many Martial Skills, he had forgotten about the [Black Formula].

Therefore, that book was buried in oblivion in that bag.

The Yin Field here was heavy with Yin Qi, it was the best place to train in the [Black Formula]!

Although the [Black Formula] was only a Mortal Level Martial Skill, since it required Yin Qi, once one was adapted to the environment, he could gather the Yin Qi and use it as a weapon.

Shi Yan didn’t care much about its power for as far as he was concerned, it was just a Mortal Level Martial Skill, which had limited power.

Nonetheless, the [Black Formula] could absorb Yin Qi and help him adapt to it, which solved his problem for now!

Therefore, he picked up that formula right away!

While Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan were busy figuring out the position of the Gate of Heaven, Shi Yan devoted himself to the [Black Formula] and its practice process.

Sitting on the ground, Shi Yan flipped open the book of the [Black Formula] with a solemn face.

Before long, he had read through the first volume, and secretly put the book into his bag with his brows furrowed.

Although the [Black Formula] was merely a Mortal Level Martial Skill, it appeared to be strange. To train with it, one must trigger the Yin Qi between the heaven and earth and form three Yin Swirls around the three meridians in one's chest: Tian Que, Shen Que and Yin Du.

As long as the swirls are formed, one can trigger the [Black Formula] and absorb the Yin Qi around them easily.

Once the three swirls absorbed enough Yin Qi, they would produce three Yin Pearls, which would go down the three meridians.

And after that, the Yin Swirls could continue absorbing Yin Qi endlessly.

As long as there was enough Yin Qi, the Yin Swirls would produce more Yin Pearls and submerge into the meridians.

The more Yin pearls in the meridians, the more powerful the [Black Formula] would be.

The one who trained with the [Black Formula] could collect Yin Qi by merely triggering the [Black Formula] and absorbing it into the three Yin Swirls.

Although the [Black Formula] was merely a Mortal Level Martial Skill, no one knew how much Yin Qi it could absorb.

It seemed that the three Yin Swirls would devour Yin Qi

ceaselessly once there was enough Yin Qi.

Shi Yan had seen many Martial Skills in the Martial Spirit Palace of the Shi family, but he had never seen anything as strange as this one.

There was an end goal to train to with every Martial Skill, but the [Black Formula] could be trained endlessly.

Sitting on the ground with a rigid face, Shi Yan sorted through the practice process he understood in order to train with the [Black Formula] and he found it literally extraordinary.

However, he didn't hesitate at all. To enter the center of the Yin Valley, he memorised the practice process several times and began to train with it, while Chi Xiao and Zhua Qi were still whispering.

Shi Yan connected his eyes, nose and heart, operated his will to Tian Que, Shen Que and Yin Du meridians and concentrated Yin Qi into them.

During that process, his body was still under pressure, as his hadn't adapted to the Yin Qi yet.

Gradually, the Yin Qi began to circle around the three meridians according to Shi Yan's will.

He found that his body was having a strange attraction to Yin Qi as he began to operate the [Black Formula].

While he was refining his Yin Swirls, the Yin Qi around him began to gather and poured into his pores. At last, it arrived at the three meridians and started to spin slowly.

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 88 - Strange Scene

Eight days later, outside the Yin Valley.

“We won’t enter the Yin Valley today. Everybody have a good rest. We will enter the Valley tomorrow morning.” Zhua Qi stopped at the entrance of the Yin Valley and said with a gloomy expression, “The Nine-headed Sky Snake will notice us once we enter the Yin Valley; a fierce battle is unavoidable.”

“Hmm.”

Chi Xiao took out the map again, and waved at Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan, “Let’s take this last night to study it again. It’s best if we could find out the accurate position of the Gate of Heaven.”

Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan walked up frowning, and looked down at the map.

As usual, Shi Yan found a quiet place far away from those three people, sat down, and began to train with the [Black Formula].

Every night during the past eight days, Chi Xiao would ask the group to stop and have a good rest, in order to provide Zuo Shi plenty of time to train with the [Basalt Scriptures].

Shi Yan wasn’t idle either. As soon as the group stopped, he would find a quiet place and train with the [Black Formula], under the protection of Han Feng and Ku Long.

After eight days’ practice, he had accumulated lots of Yin Qi in the three meridians in his chest. He operated the Yin Qi every day according to his will and divided it into several wisps to spin around the meridians.

As the Yin Qi accumulated, it spun faster and faster, and was about to form into real Yin Swirls.

After taking a deep breath and holding it, Shi Yan began to concentrate on controlling the Yin Qi.

Wisps of Yin Qi began to intertwine at the three meridians in his chest, and under his control, was quickly forming into circles.

Every time he reached this state, he would reach out to sense the Yin Qi in his surroundings; it was as if the Yin Qi was gathering around him under some magical force.

After eight days' training in the [Black Formula], Shi Yan started getting hang of controlling the Yin Qi. At the same time, after several days' of revolution in the front of his chest, the Yin Qi in his body seemed to have changed slightly.

The Yin Qi had become denser since they arrived at the entrance of the Yin Valley. However, Shi Yan found it quite comfortable thanks to the eight days' of training.

Moreover, the nearer he approached the Yin Valley, the easier he was able to train the [Black Formula]. It was even rather refreshing to breathe the Yin Qi.

Han Feng and Ku Long didn't exactly knew what Martial Skill Shi Yan was training in, but they were still protecting him diligently.

Time flew by.

All of a sudden, Zuo Shi, who was guarded by Wu Yun Lian and Chu Ping, jumped up joyfully with an odd light sparkling around her body. She shouted, "Ha! It's the Third Sky of the Human Realm!"

Chi Xiao, who was focusing on the treasure map, rushed over in ecstasy, and as he grabbed Zuo Shi's hand and began to test her, his old face showing satisfaction, "You little girl, you are..."

From the joyful reaction of Zuo Shi's Profound Qi, Chi Xiao could tell that she had reached the Third Sky of the Human Realm.

Zuo Shi hadn't fully understood the [Basalt Scriptures] after eight days' of training, but she turned out to have reached the Third Sky of the Human Realm. For such talent there were not enough words for Chi Xiao to say anything.

The only word he could come up with was: Genius.

During their journey from the Cloud Mountain to Tianyun City, apart from fooling around, Zuo Shi hadn't trained hard for even a single day. It was out of his expectation that she entered that level so fast.

"Mr. Chi Xiao, you've got a really great student!" Surprise also crossed Xia Xin Yan's eyes, as she too was shocked by Zuo Shi's talent.

"Hehe, this girl is really talented, though she is too lazy." Chi Xiao was delightful as he patted Zuo Shi's shoulder, "Work harder! Digest the [Basalt Scriptures] as soon as possible! You little girl, you could have reached a much higher realm had you focused on practice!"

Then he walked to Xia Xin Yan and Zhua Qi's side, and said with a smile, "Leave that girl alone. Let's study the map."

Another two hours passed.

As Shi Yan was sitting there silently, suddenly his body shook heavily and then kept quivering slightly.

More and more Yin Qi concentrated and combined in front of his chest as it spun faster and faster.

Looking inside, he found the Profound Qi around his three meridians becoming stronger and spinning faster.

The Profound Qi that he had absorbed rushed into the three meridians and then was refined and resolved into more gray strings.

More and more gray strings gathered in the swirls inside the meridians, making the swirls spin faster and faster...

Not knowing how much time had passed, a gloomy air was suddenly forced out from the swirls, which shocked Shi Yan.

More and more Yin Qi gathered from all directions and gushed into his pores heading for the centers of the three swirls, while they were spinning faster and faster.

Looking inside, Shi Yan was shocked to find that the three swirls had formed a shadow and that shadow was emitting a strong attraction force.

He had succeeded!

The strong attraction force meant that a Yin Swirl had officially formed!

Thus, the power of the Yin Swirl to devour Yin Qi was triggered!

All of a sudden, the Yin Qi inside the Yin Field seemed to find an exit and flooded towards Shi Yan.

Ten meters above Shi Yan's head, three odd swirls, as big as a human head, gradually appeared.

Those swirls were similar to the Yin Swirls inside Shi Yan, and were apparently influenced by the Yin Swirls in his chest. They spun in line with his Yin Swirls and were attracting more Yin Qi to his location.

Huge amounts of Yin Qi gushed into the three head-sized swirls above him which were expanding quickly!

In merely ten minutes, those swirls had swollen to the size of a wash basin, and kept devouring Yin Qi from all directions.

Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi, and Xia Xin Yan all stopped their discussion about the map and stood up, shocked by what they saw.

The three swirls were still expanding!

One hour later, the three swirls were like a tornado, extremely frightening.

The swirls kept spinning crazily as they tried to devour all the Yin Qi in the Yin Valley!

With a rigid face, Shi Yan sat there without moving, continuously operating the swirls inside him, seemingly not knowing about the phenomenon above his head.

He could clearly feel that the three swirls in his chest had accelerated several times; even his mind found it hard to catch up with the spinning!

Han Feng and Ku Long were taken aback as they watched this strange scene without any idea as to what was occurring.

The dense gray Yin Qi had hovered in the Yin Field for thousands of years, isolating it from the sky, blocking both sunlight and moonlight.

However today, the Yin Qi between the sky and the Yin Field all went crazy as it endlessly gushed into the swirls above Shi Yan.

Not knowing when, the three swirls above his head had turned as huge as three mountains, filled with odd light. They looked like three huge mouths, ready to swallow all the Yin Qin between heaven and earth.

“This, this is...” One huge man beside Xia Xin Yan cried suddenly, remembering something.

“What?” Xia Xin Yan’s eyes sparkled, and she turned to watch that huge man.

Under Xia Xin Yan’s gaze, that huge man hesitated, and then walked away quietly.

Zhua Qi and Chi Xiao’s expression changed as they watched the strange scene with incredible eyes. Noticing that the huge man had some new findings, they walked towards them.

Xia Xin Yan frowned, walked away with the huge man and let him explain, keeping a distance from Zhua Qi and Chi Xiao.

“You sure?” Xia Xin Yan’s voice was filled with uncertainty.

That huge man kept nodding his head, showing lots of anxiety,

then he looked at Shi Yan in fear, “I’m very sure, it must be...”

Xia Xin Yan’s face turned pale. She nodded and shouted to Chi Xiao and Zhua Qi, “Get ready for the fight! The Nine-headed Sky Snake will come out soon. It needs Yin Qi to train with, so it will chase us at all expense! We don’t need to enter the Yin Valley now.”

“Miss Xia, our Young Master...What the hell happened to him?” Ku Long was rather anxious.

“Ask him when he wakes up.” Xia Xin Yan frowned with bright light in her eyes, “But don’t worry. That strange phenomenon will not affect him. On the contrary, it is an opportunity. He will suck the Yin Qi in the Yin Field clean if not disturbed.”

“What!”

Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi, Wu Yun Lian and Zuo Shi all screamed in astonishment, with unbelievable faces.

“Yeah, this Martial Skill is this powerful. I don’t know how he gained it.” Xia Xin Yan’s expression was complex, “The Nine-headed Sky Snake will come soon, as it won’t allow anyone to devour the Yin Qi. Maybe we don’t even need to wait till tomorrow to fight it!”

“Howl! Howl! Howl!”

From the Yin Valley, crazy hollows came with extraordinary rage.

“Bang bang bang! Bang bang bang!”

Massive booms suddenly came from within the Yin Valley.

Everybody shook with the earth, and they could feel that a huge monster was approaching them quickly.

“There it is!” Zhua Qi screamed.

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 89 - Forming the Yin Pearls

Sponsored by A. Alsaidi, T. Lee and N. Markandeye

The three swirls were floating above Shi Yan's head like giant clouds.

Sparks flew inside the swirls and wisps of cold Yin Qi were repeatedly refined in the swirls, forming strange grey light spots.

The air above the Yin Field was filled with natural Yin Qi and had remained as such for a long time. But the huge attraction from the three swirls was showing a pattern of rapid consumption, swallowing it to the last.

Shi Yan's expression was serious, as if he had entered some enigmatic realm.

The swirls above his head suddenly emitted some grey light spots, all of which entered Shi Yan's body.

Because of that, Shi Yan's body started forming a vacuum which was felt by everyone present!

His body was now like a black hole, sucking in all the grey light spots that came down from above!

The grey light spots flickered and jumped and entered into Shi Yan's body.

Shi Yan was now covered in a grey glow and a chilling atmosphere spread out from him in all directions.

Whoever got near Shi Yan couldn't help but feel stiff. The circulation of their Profound Qi would slow down and they would have to use their Qi for defense or else they would be affected by the dense Yin Qi.

It was like Shi Yan had transformed into a giant Yin Qi-swallowing monster!

Shi Yan was sitting as still as a stone while the three swirls floating above his head were wildly swallowing and transforming the Yin Qi in the Yin Valley. He was continuously refining the Yin Qi, transforming it into purest form of Yin energy, which was in turn nurturing his cultivation.

In Shi Yan's chest, the three meridians of Tian Que, Shen Que, and Yin Du started rapidly gathering the grey light spots that had rushed into his body.

These grey light spots all represented the purest form of Profound Yin Qi. Huge amounts of light spots all entered the Yin Swirls and were refined to the purest degree. This refined energy then started gathering at the center of the Yin Swirls.

Unknowingly, in the center of the three Yin Swirls, there were three rice grain sized pearls slowly starting to form.

Once he detected the formation of the Yin Pearls, Shi Yan's expression shook.

He discreetly started to detect his surroundings. When he realized there was nothing abnormal, he went back and continued circulating the Yin Swirls, ready to keep absorbing more of the natural Yin Qi.

"You don't need to stop." Xia Xin Yan stood by Shi Yan's side, her beautiful eyes glinted, "I know what you're doing, and I know you can hear me too. The Nine-headed Sky Snake will get here really soon, but we'll take care of that. You can keep swallowing the natural Yin Qi here."

Indeed Shi Yan could hear Xia Xin Yan's voice, but he couldn't reply to her.

"Miss Xia, if Shi Yan doesn't stop here, the Nine-headed Sky Snake will attack him first." Ku Long said hurriedly.

Zhua Qi and Chi Xiao also looked at Xia Xin Yan with a bit of surprise, not knowing what she meant by her proposal.

“The Nine-headed Sky Snake has nine heads, three of which can breathe fire, three can spit poison, and the remaining three can control the Yin Qi in the Yin Field to attack differently.”

Xia Xin Yan’s pretty eyes glinted, and she explained in seriousness, “The three heads that can control the natural Yin Qi are very troublesome and they will be hard for us to take care of. But now we have an advantage. If Shi Yan keeps sucking in the natural Yin Qi like this, that means once the Nine-headed Sky Snake gets here, the Yin Qi attack will be swallowed by the swirls above Shi Yan’s head! This way, three of the nine heads will be greatly weakened!”

Upon hearing that, Zhua Qi and Chi Xiao’s eyes both glinted. Together they nodded and approved, “Not bad!”

“Once those three heads become powerless, the Nine-headed Sky Snake will be a lot easier to deal with. Zhua Qi is not scared of the venom, and you also brought the Silver Curtain. So now we only need to put our efforts into the three fire-breathing heads. Because of Shi Yan, this fight is going to be a lot easier for us.” Xia Xin Yan said calmly.

Zhua Qi and Chi Xiao nodded quietly, they both agreed upon Xia Xin Yan’s suggestion.

“Would my young master be okay?” Han Feng suddenly opened his eyes and coldly stared at Xia Xin Yan, “Although we are very interested in the Gate of Heaven, the young master’s life is more important!”

“He’s only bait, he can just keep up what he’s doing now.” Xia Xin Yan frowned and continued, “If he wants to wake up he could do so anytime. But he will need a whole lot more time to try to gather the Yin Qi like this another time.”

“Boom boom boom!”

The thundering roar was getting closer.

The earth was shaking and in the distance, a faint but frightening figure slowly started to appear.

“Get ready to fight!” Chi Xiao shouted.

At another entrance of the Yin Field.

Beiming Shang’s expression shook slightly. He looked far away into the distance at the smoke-like swirls that rose into the air. His cold eyes flashed with a trace of confusion.

“Grandpa, have they started fighting?” Beiming Ce asked.

Shaking his head, Beiming Shang said, “No, it’s just that the natural Yin Qi has become abnormal. It is all gathering towards where Chi Xiao and his group are at. The Nine-headed Sky Snake is out of the Yin Valley and is rushing towards them. I wonder what is going on over there.”

“When should we get there?”

“Let’s wait! Wait until the fighting is almost over.”

On another side, the people from the Dark World were gazing at the three floating swirls where Shi Yan was. They were also full of surprise, and didn’t know what was going on.

“Master? It’s like... like the natural Yin Qi has changed and is all gathering towards that one spot? Could it be that the Nine-headed Sky Snake has already started to attack?” The demonic young man guessed.

“The Nine-headed Sky Snake is able to use the natural Yin Qi to cultivate, but it shouldn’t be this overbearing. To make all of that natural Yin Qi flow towards one spot I think even the Nine-headed Sky Snake would be unable to make such a grand gesture. Besides, the change is from outside the Yin Valley, it’s obviously done By Chi Xiao’s group.” The Lord of the Dark World said with a deep

tone.

“Should we go and see it?”

“No, we will wait for Beiming Shang’s news. If Beiming Shang doesn’t give out the signal, we will stay put for now. Your mistress should already be there, so if the Gate of Heaven really appears, your mistress will send out a signal, we don’t need to be in such a hurry.”

“Understood.”

The three Yin Pearls were slowly forming. With more natural Yin Qi flowing in, the three Yin pearls grew brighter and brighter.

The Yin pearls were in the middle of the Yin Swirls outside of Shi Yan’s meridians. They were rolling in the air and whenever a wisp of grey Yin Qi came in, the Yin Pearls would immediately absorb the grey light spots.

Only when the Yin Pearls were truly formed would they finally sink into the three meridians by themselves.

Shi Yan knew this deep in his heart. So when he clearly heard Xia Xin Yan’s words, and knew that Han Feng and Ku Long were very worried about him, he still didn’t stop the movement of the Yin Swirls.

He had a hunch that the Yin Pearls were at their crucial moment, and perhaps they will soon be truly formed successfully and then enter into his meridians.

When the three swirls showed up above his head, he was shocked too.

When the three swirls started insanely swallowing the natural Yin Qi, Shi Yan was finally sure that the [Black Formula] that was only ranked as a Mortal Level Martial Skill, was not something ordinary!

What kind of Mortal Level Martial Skill could cause such a big disturbance?

He really couldn't think of any.

“Roar! Roar! Roar!”

Terrifying roaring sounds thundered from the distance and filled the whole Yin Field.

The Nine-headed Sky Snake was a demon beast which was at the pinnacle of Level 7. Legend has it that it was an ancient mutant, a hybrid born from a dragon and a python. It has the ability to keep evolving, so when the Nine-headed Sky Snake has swallowed enough Yin Qi, poisonous air, and fire, it could evolve again and become a Level 8 or Level 9 demon beast.

The reason why this Nine-headed Sky Snake decided to take over the Yin Field was because it had seen that this place was rich in Yin Qi, and the outer perimeter of the Dead Swamp was covered by poisonous fog. It wanted to occupy this place so that it could use the poisonous air and the Yin Qi present for cultivation.

Soon a mountain-like figure, the Sky Snake with nine giant heads, finally came out of the Yin Valley.

The Nine-headed Sky Snake had a body like a mountain, covered with silver scales and sharp spines. All nine of its heads were about twenty-something meters long. Each head was like a giant python and had creepy white fangs, each head was breathing out either poisonous fog, Yin Qi, or flames.

“Attack!”

Once Zhua Qi saw it, his face hardened and he charged ahead of others.

Earth Dragons abruptly broke out of the ground. Zhua Qi's body flickered and he possessed one of the Earth Dragon's bodies.

When Zhua Qi possessed the Earth Dragon, its body covered itself

in hard earth armor. The dragon head faintly looked like Zhua Qi's face and its body grew twice the size.

“Zhua Qi was born from a Level 8 Mud Dragon and a human female warrior. The Mud Dragon was originally the true master of the Dead Swamp and was able to transform into human shape. It was also once the strongest demon beast in this area. Legend has it that back then, the Mud Dragon was the king of the demon beasts here and not a single warrior could offend his prestige! The Mud Dragon was a Level 8 demon beast, comparable to a Spirit Realm warrior. But a thousand years ago it suddenly died in the Dead Swamp, it was a baffling death. Many years after its death, the Nine-headed Snake finally appeared in the Dead Swamp, and drove Zhua Qi to the outer perimeter of the Dead Swamp. It forcibly occupied the Yin Valley to cultivate, which is why Zhua Qi has so much hatred for it.”

When Zhua Qi possessed the Earth Dragon and charged at the Nine-headed Sky Snake, Chi Xiao quietly told about the grudge between Zhua Qi and the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

“Level 8 demon beast!” Xia Xin Yan's expression also shifted slightly, “No wonder Zhua Qi can control the poisonous mist and also freely travel through the mud. So he's a hybrid between a Mud Dragon and a human.”

“If he didn't know how to control the poisonous mist and the mud, he would've been killed by the Nine-headed Snake a long time ago. At the outer perimeter of the Dead Swamp, as long as Zhua Qi could hide in the swamps, nobody can do anything to him. That's the reason why it's so tough to handle Zhua Qi.”

“You two! Can you start fighting now?!”

On the other side, Zhua Qi was in the form of an Earth Dragon, and he yelled from inside the flames that were breathed out by the Nine-headed Snake, he sounded a little urgent.

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 90 - The Sky Changes

Outside the Yin Valley, thunderous roars rang out endlessly and huge amounts of power was surging and propagating across the sky like lightning.

Chi Xiao, Xia Xin Yan and Zhua Qi all leapt into the air; they were all facing the Nine-headed Sky Snake with all their strength.

Chi Xiao had turned into a giant and was wielding the Silver Curtain to guard against the venom while he held a giant sword in one hand. He was single-handedly facing the three fire-breathing heads of the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

Zhua Qi had possessed an Earth Dragon and was veering around the three venomous heads of the Nine-headed Sky Snake. The Sky Snake seemed to know that its venom was ineffective against Zhua Qi, so it opened its enormous mouth and bit down on Zhua Qi's possessed Earth Dragon.

Xia Xin Yan was faring the best of the three. She floated in the air like a goddess, forming strange seals with her hands. Huge claws would momentarily appear in the air, which would ruthlessly attack the rest of the heads of the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

These three heads of the Sky Snake could control the natural Yin Qi, but whenever it breathed out the Yin Qi, they would be immediately absorbed by the three hovering swirls above Shi Yan's head.

After a few futile attempts, the Sky Snake became furious. It moved toward Shi Yan and repeatedly tried to clash with him. It was determined to kill Shi Yan first.

Han Feng and Ku Long were observing everything gravely. Though being uneasy, they stood beside Shi Yan and were constantly on guard.

Zuo Shi, Wu Yun Lian and Chu Ping soon arrived at that stop.

Now all the members from the Shi family and Zuo family had gathered together, and other than Shi Yan, all were watching the fight between the Nine-headed Sky Snake and the three masters.

Shi Yan was sitting still as a stone, his eyes closed and expression indifferent. However, he could clearly feel the striking waves of devastating power.

The fight among the Sky Realm masters destroyed all the vegetation around the Yin Valley. In one place, a deep crack had formed on the ground during the battle. Even Shi Yan, who was sitting with eyes closed, could feel the terrifying impacts.

However, he still didn't stop the Yin Swirls from taking in the natural Yin Qi.

In his chest, the Yin Swirls finally turned into Yin Pearls. They emitted a dark glow and contained overwhelming Yin Qi. These pearls slowly sunk into the three meridians of Shen Que, Tian Que, and Yin Du.

Once the three Yin Pearls sunk into his meridians, Shi Yan's body trembled.

Checking inside his body, Shi Yan realized that when the Yin Pearls entered in the meridians, the negative energies already present in the meridians all rushed towards the Yin Pearls, as if it was assimilating into the Yin Pearls.

Shi Yan was startled. He hurriedly concentrated his all in observing his three meridians.

He suddenly remembered that all his meridians had some amount of negative energy. He really didn't expect that these negative energies would conflict with the emerging Yin Pearls.

Inside the three meridians.

Wisps of negative energy formed into ribbon-like shapes and slowly gathered together.

Once the three Yin Pearls entered his meridians, the negative energies immediately intertwined with them, as if they were actually trying to break down the Yin Pearls.

However, the Yin Pearls had condensed massive amounts of natural Yin Qi and had formed after continuous and repeated refinement! Although the negative energies in his meridians were domineeringly wicked, they still lacked in quantity.

Over the course of these days, Shi Yan had indeed absorbed a lot of negative energy, but the negative energies were spread throughout the meridians in his body.

There were seven hundred and twenty meridians in total in his body, and of course the negative energy distributed to these three meridians was limited.

However, it was as if the Yin Pearls knew the lethality of the negative energy, and were determined to defend against it. It was like the Yin Pearls were going all out till the end.

Soon the negative energy and the Yin Pearls in his body stopped blindly battling each other.

With more and more Yin Qi pouring into the Yin Swirls, three more new Yin Pearls started forming in the center of the Yin Swirls...

This way, the previous three Yin Pearls that had already sunk into his meridians gained strong support. The Yin Pearls slowly gained dominance within Shi Yan's meridians.

On the contrary, it was those domineering negative energies that had to shrink back into the corner of his meridians and stop causing trouble; they couldn't gain support.

Over Shi Yan's head, the three mountainous Yin Swirls continued to rapidly absorb the natural Yin Qi.

The Yin Field that never sees the light all year round, was suddenly struck with its first beam of sunlight!

Under the crazy suction of the three mountainous swirls above Shi Yan's head, the Yin Qi that had gathered for thousands of years and covered the air in the Yin Field, was on the verge of being totally dried up!

The cold and gloomy Yin Field slowly became warmer because of the influx of sunlight.

More sunlight shone from above, and the beams of sunlight shot onto the plants and demon beasts in the Yin Field.

The strange bizarre plants soon became limp and shrivelled up under the blazing sun.

Many demon beasts were roaring in madness. They sprinted out of the Yin Field, and unwittingly rushed towards the outer perimeter of the Dead Swamp.

"Hey!" Zuo Shi exclaimed, "These plants and demon beasts are scared of sunlight?"

"The plants in the Yin Field grow from the natural Yin Qi, they've already adapted to the environment here. But now that the natural Yin Qi is gone, these plants that have never been in contact with sunlight can't tolerate it. They are all going to wither and die." Wu Yun Lian explained.

"What about the demon beasts?"

"They're the same. The demon beasts that live here cultivate by absorbing the Yin Qi. There is a heavy amount of Yin Qi in their bodies, they naturally like the cool shade. So once they realized that sunlight has appeared, they could only sprint away to escape into the swamps in the outer areas. At least there are poisonous fogs and the shade of old trees to cover them. It's better than being completely exposed to the sun like this."

"Does that mean the Nine-headed Sky Snake is affected too?"

"Indeed." Wu Yun Lian was dazed for a second, and she gazed at the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

Sure enough.

Under the blazing sun, the three heads of the Nine-headed Sky Snake that breathed Yin Qi seemed to be getting weaker.

Under Xia Xin Yan's attacks with the giant hands, those three heads could only dodge, possessing no power to fight back.

The two tall buff men who were worriedly watching Xia Xin Yan, at this moment, finally breathed out in relief.

One of them looked back and gazed afar at Shi Yan, he frowned and quietly said, "Thanks to that guy, if it weren't for him absorbing all that natural Yin Qi like this and exposing sunlight in the Yin Field, the Nine-headed Sky Snake would really be hard to handle."

"Mmmhmm, it surprised me that the [Black Formula] would spread to here, I wonder where he got such a thing..."

"Boom boom boom! Boom boom boom!" The Nine-headed Snake stumbled along the way, and suddenly sprinted towards the Yin Valley.

The sun had appeared and the Nine-headed Sky Snake's body was heavily damaged. It actually started thinking about running for its life.

"Chase it!"

Zhua Qi cried out, he ran ahead first, staring at the Nine-headed Sky Snake, and pursued it vigorously.

Chi Xiao and Xia Xin Yan exchanged eye contact, they both knew that the Gate of Heaven was in the Yin Valley. If they gave the Nine-headed Sky Snake enough time to rest it would become more troublesome later on.

Instead, they might as well destroy it as soon as possible!

So, Chi Xiao and Xia Xin Yan also followed.

Thundering roars kept coming from inside the Yin Valley. Chi

Xiao and the rest should still be battling the Nine-headed Sky Snake in the Valley.

Outside the Valley, the three giant swirls above Shi Yan's head slowly disappeared.

All the natural Yin Qi that filled the enormous Yin Field had been emptied.

In Shi Yan's chest, three new Yin Pears were successfully formed, and together they sank into his meridians.

Feeling that the Yin Swirls had stopped whirling, and not a single trace of Yin Qi was flowing into his body, he finally woke up.

Shi Yan opened his eyes and stood up. He looked around at the surprised Han Feng, Wu Yun Lian, and the rest, then said, "Let's go look in the Yin Valley, it sounds like the Nine-headed Sky Snake is almost finished."

As expected, when everyone listened, they realized that the stirring in the Yin Valley had started to die out.

"Young Master, how are you doing?" Ku Long couldn't help but ask.

"I'm alright, I was cultivating a new skill. I just didn't expect this skill to be so strange." Shi Yan furrowed his brows, he suddenly thought of something, and tried to circulate the three Yin Swirls at his chest.

Wisps of strange Yin power suddenly flowed out from the three meridians of Shen Que, Tian Que, and Yin Du. The Yin power poured into the Yin Swirls, and the Yin Swirls began to quickly whirl, releasing traces of pure Yin power.

Yin power was different than Profound Qi, but it went along his arm and flowed out...

In his palm, a chilling glow shone, and a dark green light ball slowly covered his whole hand.

As his Yin power stirred, the light ball became bigger and bigger, and eventually it became a head-sized green light ball.

Lightly taking a breath in, Shi Yan's reversed the action. That green light ball started shrinking again, and all the Yin power returned through its original course and returned to the Yin Swirls and was again absorbed by the six Yin Pearls in his meridians.

The Yin Pearls were the source of power of the [Black Formula]. They released power through the Yin Swirls and then flew out of his meridians to attack.

Secretly feeling around for a moment, Shi Yan soon realized the way to use the [Black Formula]. It's not the same as swallowing in Yin Qi, but the other way around.

“Beiming Shang! What are you doing here?!”

Right at this moment, from the Yin Valley there suddenly came Chi Xiao's surprised shout.

Everyone outside the valley suddenly felt something amiss.

“Quickly let's go and see!” Wu Yun Lian notified the rest, and hurriedly rushed towards the direction of the Yin Valley.

Shi Yan, Han Feng, and Ku Long couldn't treat this lightly either, so together they quickly sprinted out and ran towards the Yin Valley with great speed.

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 91 - Dividing the Plunder

In the Yin Valley.

As Shi Yan had absorbed all the Yin Qi between the heaven and earth, there was no Yin Qi left in the Yin Valley.

The dazzling sunlight fell in the valley.

The massive body of the Nine-headed Sky Snake fell at the center of the Yin Valley with blood dripping from wounds all over its body.

Under the attacks of Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan, and without any Yin Qi, the Nine-headed Sky Snake finally died under the sun.

However, apart from Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan, there were other people who had also entered the Yin Valley.

The group including Shi Yan and Zuo Shi had also arrived in the valley by then. As soon as Shi Yan saw the scene in the valley, his face turned gloomy.

Beiming Ce and Beiming Shang were standing there.

Yin Kui and Jiu Shan were naturally standing by Beiming Ce. Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan were excited to see the Nine-headed Sky Snake lying in its own in blood.

Beside the experts of the Beiming Family, stood Zou Zi He and a strange young man.

All the people in the valley were focusing their eyes on the Nine-headed Sky Snake in the center.

Chi Xiao and Zhua Qi appeared tired, with sweat all over their bodies.

Xia Xin Yan looked pale. Although she had taken a Sky Pill, her energy had not fully recovered.

The three had tried everything and used up all their energy in killing the Nine-headed Sky Snake, only to find that Beiming Shang and another Sky Realm expert had appeared in the Yin Valley secretly.

It was easy to understand their frustration.

After Shi Yan entered the valley, he stood beside Han Feng and Ku Long, calmly gazing at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan, who were quite excited.

“Everyone can have the treasure from the Nine-headed Sky Snake carcass. This Sky Snake has nine demon crystals; how about we divide it among ourselves?” Beiming Shang frowned and said calmly, “You three really suffered a lot, so I won’t ask for much. I only need two demon crystals out of nine. One of the fire element, and the other of Yin Qi.”

“Why on earth should you have a share?” Zhua Qi’s face was twisted as he demanded with a hideous expression, “All the demon crystals of the Nine-headed Sky Snake belong to us! We brought out our all to kill this Snake, and now you want us to share the booty with you? Why should we?!”

“Why?” Beiming Shang said coldly, “Because we are here!”

“I want a cut also.” The Dark Master of the Dark World said peacefully as he pointed to one of the snake heads which could emit Yin Qi, “The demon crystal in that head is mine. The rest are all yours.”

“Hehe!” Zhua Qi showed a grim smile, “You have to first make sure you are capable of getting it!”

“Capable or not, you must know it better than me.” The Dark Master looked at Zhua Qi and said peacefully, “We tested each other at the perimeter of the Dead Swamp and you killed several of my people. However, that was in the outer area where you could use the swamp and poisonous air as your shield. What about

here?”

“Brother Zou.” Beiming Shang looked to the Dark Master and grinned, “There seemed to be three Sky Realm warriors, but that’s not the exact situation.”

“Really?”

“Miss Xia’s Martial Spirit is marvellous, but she is a mere Disaster Realm Third Sky warrior.” Beiming Shang pointed to Xia Xin Yan, “She won’t recover in a short time since she has used her Martial Spirit. We don’t need to worry about her.”

Xia Xin Yan’s face turned pale after she heard that.

Zhua Qi’s expression was also changed, and he couldn’t help but looked to her, “Is that so?”

As far as he was concerned, although he and Chi Xiao had consumed much energy, they could still make them give up the demon crystals as long as they received Xia Xin Yan’s help.

However, if Xia Xin Yan was only at the Third Sky of the Disaster Realm, then they would definitely lose.

Under Zhua Qi’s gaze, Xia Xin Yan nodded in resignation.

“Beiming Shang, why on earth are you here?” Chi Xia had some other concerns. He thought for a while and asked.

“What do you think?” Beiming Shang asked with a grin.

“I got it.” Chi Xiao sighed and nodded, “You have come for the Gate of Heaven, haven’t you? It seems you never let go of the treasure map.”

“Our sources in the Tianyun City are far greater than you can imagine. Nothing would go unnoticed if I care to know.” Beiming Shang walked over slowly to one of the snake heads, and continued calmly, “Let’s divide the demon crystals first, then we will have a discussion about the Gate of Heaven.”

Under the watchful eyes of the people present, Beiming Shang

took out a demon crystal and said, “I want this one.”

The Dark Master from the Dark World didn't move, and he demanded casually, “Mu Hui, get the demon crystals.”

That exotic young man nodded with a smile and walked to the two snake heads, without minding Chi Xiao and the rest, knowing they dare not fight.

Zhua Qi was in a rage, with his face as red as a tomato, but he stood there and clenched his teeth, “I will remember you two!”

Beiming Shang and Dark Master didn't respond.

“Zhua Qi, gouge the remaining five demon crystals.” Chi Xiao sighed with resignation.

Zhua Qi also went up to the snake body.

While searching for the demon crystal in the snake heads, Zhua Qi seemed to try to release his indignation by acting in a rough manner, as blood and flesh flew out from those snake heads.

Shi Yan was observing them coldly.

Beiming Shang and Zou Zi He apparently had planned all this and were waiting for the best opportunity.

Beiming Shang showed up while Chi Xiao and his friends were about to kill the snake and took advantage of Xia Xin Yan using her Reincarnation Martial Spirit to ask for a share of the plunder.

That was really malicious.

He conserved his energy by not doing anything, and by forcing Chi Xiao and the other two to consume their energy, he shared the plunder.

Once the Gate of Heaven was opened, he would get more chances to gain treasures than them with his energy at its peak.

Shi Yan took a deep breath and calmed himself down. He didn't say anything but observed the new groups while they were

dividing the plunder.

Before long, the plunder was divided.

Of the nine demon crystals, the Beiming family got a fire crystal, and a Yin Qi one, while Zou Zi He got the other two Yin Qi demon crystals.

Of the remaining five, Zhua Qi got two poisonous ones and Chi Xiao got another poisonous crystal and a fire elementary one.

Xia Xin Yan also received a fire elementary one.

The nine demon crystals were thus divided among the experts present.

Later, the tusks, skin and saliva from the Snake was also harvested by the group.

Since there were several Sky Realm warriors, those rare materials like tusks were soon collected and divided.

This time, the Shi family got five poisonous tusks, a piece of skin from the back of the snake, and three bottles of poison.

“This demon crystal of fire element is beneficial to your Martial Spirit.” Beiming Shang threw his hand casually and a demon crystal flew slowly to Di Yalan.

Di Yalan was rather surprised as she looked at Beiming Shang with uncertainty, and asked excitedly, “Bei... Beiming Family Head, you mean, you mean this demon crystal is for me?”

The fire element demon crystal was indeed beneficial to Di Yalan’s Blue Magic Flame, and it was from a Level 7 demon beast, which was very rare to her.

Beiming Shang nodded with a beaming smile, “Come, train hard with the help of this demon crystal. I won’t treat you unfairly as long as you are in my family.”

Di Yalan was hesitant as she thought that the demon crystal was too precious. She was too shy to take the crystal, which was

floating before her eyes.

“Here you are, Sister Lan. Put it away.” Just then, Mu Yu Die grabbed the demon crystal and handed it to Di Yalan.

“Thank you, Beiming Family Head.” As soon as she touched the crystal, she could feel the strong flame power emitting from it. Di Yalan didn’t hesitate anymore, and paid her gratitude to Beiming Shang quickly.

“We are family. You don’t need to say that.” Beiming Shang said indifferently.

Di Yalan was a little panicked as she understood the overtone of Beiming Shang. But still, she lowered her head and pretended she didn’t get what he meant, holding the demon crystal tight.

She couldn’t resist the temptation of the demon crystal.

Shi Yan saw the whole thing, but he kept silent with a rigid face.

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 92 - The Gate of Heaven Appears

“Can we talk about the treasure map now?”

After the various masters divided all the valuable items on the Nine-headed Sky Snake, the Lord of the Dark World, Zou Zi He suddenly spoke.

The sky was slowly getting dark, and soon night fell.

In the Valley, everyone was frowning, not a single person seemed relaxed.

Beiming Shang and Zou Zi He both looked at Chi Xiao.

“Mr. Chi Xiao, you wouldn’t refuse to allow us to participate, right?” Beiming Shang said casually.

Chi Xiao’s expression changed. He was standing there and thinking deeply. He glanced first at Xia Xin Yan, then at Zhua Qi, and felt a bit hesitant.

Xia Xin Yan was slowly recovering after taking a Nutrition Pill. But she was still far away from being completely recovered.

At this moment, the opposite side had two Sky Realm warriors. However, with Chi Xiao and Zhua Qi at only at eighty percent strength, it was predetermined that they would be at a disadvantage.

“Let’s take it out and have a look together, we haven’t been able to find the Gate of Heaven anyway.” Xia Xin Yan said in an indifferent and relaxed manner.

“Miss Xia Xin Yan knows about onset and retreat, truly you are someone who can achieve great things.” Beiming Shang nodded, and then told Xia Xin Yan with a straight face, “Miss Zia, the Beiming family has only come for the treasure map, we don’t want to make enemies with the Misty Pavilion. After this, no matter what the outcome, the Beiming family will never bother the Misty

Pavilion even a bit.”

Xia Xin Yan was from the Endless Sea, and with just being at the Third Sky of the Disaster Realm, she could utilise her martial spirit to immediately reach the Sky Realm! This little girl was already this powerful, how powerful would her background would be?

Beiming Shang held a lot of fear towards warriors from the Endless Sea. If not as a last resort, he didn't want to have a hostile relationship with Xia Xin Yan.

“I also came for the treasure map.” Not a single trace of emotion could be seen on Xia Xin Yan's eyes as she spoke, “After the business with the treasure map is finished, we will return to the Endless Sea. As long as the Misty Pavilion is not provoked, we from the Endless Sea wouldn't bother to come to such a remote area.”

“That would be for the best.” Beiming Shang said.

“I'll warn you beforehand though, even if there may be incredible treasure in the Gate of Heaven, it will also be infested with unimaginable dangers!” Xia Xin Yan hesitated for a moment, then said, “There hasn't been an appearance of the Gate of Heaven in your area, so your understanding of the Gate is only limited to rumors, you may be aware of only one side of the coin, and not the other.”

“Any further details would be appreciated.”

Whether it be Beiming Shang or Zou Zi He from the Dark World, they both zoned out for a second, then looked at Xia Xin Yan with serious expressions.

Indeed, in the God Blessed Empire, the Fire Empire, and the Merchant Union, the legend of the Gate of Heaven had spread. However, there had never been an appearance of the Gate of Heaven in these three nations, which is why when this treasure map appeared, it attracted the attention of so many forces.

Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi, and Han Feng also expectantly looked at Xia

Xin Yan. They were also full of curiosity about the secrets to the Gate of Heaven.

“In the Endless Sea, not only does the Gate of Heaven exist, but there’s more than one! But, every Gate of Heaven bears the greatest dangers!”

Xia Xin Yan took a deep breath; there was a rare seriousness in her expression. She said with a deep voice, “The Gate of Heaven leads to the God Domain. The God Domain contains unimaginable mysteries, but every God Domain is also extremely frightening! Usually when a warrior enters, there’s a very low chance of coming back alive! Whether it be the Fourth Demon Area, the Sevenfold Underworld, or the Abyss Battlefield, none of them could be entered by ordinary people!”

“Fourth Demon Area!”

“Sevenfold Underworld!”

“Abyss Battlefield!”

Coming from Xia Xin Yan’s mouth, the names related to the Gate of Heaven and the God Domain of the Endless Sea made everyone present in the Valley astonished; they secretly felt stunned.

“I came this time only to see what mysterious God Domain this Gate of Heaven leads to. Unknown domains could lead to terrifying and mysterious places that may devour everything. You better get prepared beforehand!” Xia Xin Yan looked around and said coldly, “Inside the God Domains that have appeared in the Endless Sea, there were powerful beings that were as powerful as the Spirit Realm. And there were more than one of them! If there are such beings in this God Domain too, and you all want to rashly break in, hmph! Don’t expect to come out alive!”

Xia Xin Yan’s words raised a storm of shock in everyone’s minds.

Whether it be Beiming Shang, Zou Zi He, Chi Xiao, or Zhua Qi, they were all suddenly stunned, their expressions aghast.

Spirit Realm beings? And more than one!

What kind of concept was this?

If the God Domain accessed from this Gate of Heaven also has a being of this level, who in this whole valley can say that they will get out alive?

The entire valley was silent.

“What, are you all afraid?” Xia Xin Yan sneered.

“No matter what, I still have to go in and take a look.” Zou Zi He’s lips were a bit dry, but after a long silence, he then said, “Or else, how would we know what’s inside? Miss Xia is only at the Third Sky of the Disaster Realm and still dares to come, what are we afraid of?”

When Zou Zi He put it that way, everyone finally realized.

Xia Xin Yan came this time obviously because she wanted to enter the God Domain too. She knew the dangers of the God Domain, but still dared to come, was it that she really came to die?

Thinking this way, everyone all felt that Xia Xin Yan was only scaring them. Maybe the God Domain wasn’t even that dangerous.

“I have said what needed to be said, you guys can figure it out yourselves.” Xia Xin Yan nodded at Chi Xiao, “You can take out the treasure map now.”

Chi Xiao knew that it would be hard to avoid Beiming Shang and Zou Zi He, so with frustration, he could only take the treasure map out from his chest pocket.

Beiming Shang and Zou Zi He hurriedly moved closer, and gathered around the treasure map to examine it.

“The treasure map only marked one point in the Yin Valley, which is pointing to this place here, but there’s nothing there.” Zhua Qi scowled, and said coldly, “I’ve gone around many times in the valley before and even used my soul perception to scan the

movements underground. But there's nothing at all, is this treasure map fake?"

"Can't be fake." Xia Xin Yan said with certainty, but she did not explain.

Everyone knew that she came from the Endless Sea and her understanding of the Gate of Heaven and the God Domain was above their own. Upon hearing her say that, everyone immediately stopped worrying, and they all stared intensely at that treasure map. Each one was in deep thoughts, and paced around in the Yin Valley, as if trying to figure out the location of the Gate of Heaven.

Shi Yan was standing with Han Feng and Ku Long; he didn't get mixed into the business. He just coldly observed these people's reactions, and occasionally glanced at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan.

Mu Yu Die and Beiming Ce stood together. Sometimes they would both chat and laugh quietly about something, and sometimes Mu Yu Die would simply press her lips and smile.

Di Yalan was still drowning in happiness, her hands tightly gripping the fire demon crystal and her face full of excitement. The look on her face was clearly showing her impatience to start absorbing the energy in the demon crystal then and there, so that she could nourish her Martial Spirit right away.

Time passed quickly.

All the Sky Realm masters in the valley looked worried. They frowned and pondered about the secrets of the treasure map, but no one could figure out the location of the Gate of Heaven.

Soon, the day passed and it was night time.

Twinkling bright stars appeared in the darkness.

Slowly, more stars appeared in the night sky...

And finally, an array of stars filled the entire night sky.

Suddenly, the treasure map clutched in Zhua Qi's hand started to

light up!

Everyone's faces changed, and their eyes immediately went to the treasure map.

The treasure map escaped Zhua Qi's hold. It slowly rose in the sky, higher and higher, and very soon it was floating in the sky above the Yin Valley.

A mass of strange power suddenly rippled from inside the treasure map!

The light of the stars seem to have been drawn in by the power of the map. Like raindrops, the bright starlight suddenly poured down from the sky and onto the treasure map.

“Boom!”

The treasure map suddenly blew to pieces and a fist-sized clear demon crystal abruptly appeared out of thin air!

A strange power filled the whole Yin Valley, and the demon crystal gleamed with light, clear and bright as a quartz.

Inside the demon crystal was a sluggish-looking little person, his body glowed with light, and his expression extremely miserable.

“Father!”

Zhua Qi suddenly screamed. He unbelievably looked at the little person inside the demon crystal, and roared, “Father! I am Zhua Qi! Father!”

“The demon crystal of the Level 8 Mud Dragon!”

Chi Xiao also exclaimed, his expression in awe.

In the valley, one by one the warriors raised their heads to look up at the sky. They all looked appalled, not knowing what happened.

The little person inside the demon crystal didn't seem to hear Zhua Qi's voice, it stayed in the demon crystal looking dazed.

The Level 8 demon crystal became brighter and brighter, and a strange mass of power suddenly rippled out from it.

“Ah!”

Di Yalan exclaimed, and sweetly shouted, “My demon crystal!”

The Nine-headed Sky Snake demon crystal that was tightly clenched in her hand suddenly flew up, and rose to the sky.

At the same time, the eight newly acquired demon crystals held by Beiming Shang, Zou Zi He, Chi Xiao, Zhua Qi, and Xia Xin Yan, all escaped from their grasp. One by one they soared into the sky, revolving around the Level 8 demon crystal that contained the spirit of the Mud Dragon.

Colorful strange lights shone from the ten demon crystals in the sky, and brightened the whole Yin Valley.

In the valley, the snake blood that bled from the Nine-headed Sky Snake moved as if it was alive, forming into a river of blood that flowed inside the valley.

The bloody river was like a mysterious paint brush.

With its metallic odor, the blood separated into different flows, and like a blood snake, it swiftly moved across the ground of the valley.

Soon, with the blood of the Nine-headed Sky Snake as the catalyst, a strange pattern drawn by blood magically appeared on the ground.

“Boom boom boom! Boom boom boom! Boom boom boom! Boom!”

The ten demon crystals in the sky exploded together, forming into ten beams of light, and suddenly drew into the strange pattern on the ground.

The galaxy-like strange pattern abruptly flashed strange lights. The starlight from the night sky came down from the sky, and also

infused into the pattern.

In the middle of the great galaxy-like pattern, strange lights quickly gathered together, thousands of light spots condensed together, and slowly formed into a blindingly bright door of light.

The Gate of Heaven had appeared!

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 93 - The God Search Skill

Tianyun City.

That night, black spots appeared in the sky above the city. Those black spots, as seen under the moonlight, gathered together and flew in the direction of the Misty Pavilion.

Many skilled warriors looked up, only to find that these black dots were in actual some strange demon beasts.

Fifty-odd black spots gradually flew toward the Misty Pavilion like a dark shadow.

As soon as these black spots landed, many sharp eyed warriors found them to be fifty black bats which were about seven to eight meters long with a completely dark body and long tusks; they looked as if they were creatures from hell.

Each bat was emitting a black aura which felt gloomy and frightening.

Seated on each of those huge bats was a warrior, his face rigid, stance like a reaper, emitting a bloody aura; as if one's life was totally in his control.

At the front of the group was a huge bat, on which was sitting a scar-faced, middle-aged man. His scars were very hideous.

The scars on his face looked were like earthworms extending from his face down his neck; looking as if there was a veil on his actual face.

He was emitting a deep and bloody aura. Whoever approached him would want to throw up from the suffocating smell.

Fifty one Green-blooded Magical Bats landed before the Misty Pavilion.

The master of the Misty Pavilion, Ku Luo, had waited for a long time with his people. As soon as he saw the guests, he kneeled

down on one knee and greeted them respectfully, “Lord Xiao, this is Ku Luo from the Misty Pavilion.”

Xiao Han Yi, who got down from the huge bat at the front, walked over at a leisurely pace.

The people from the Misty Pavilion all turned pale and averted their eyes as he approached and could barely control their desire to vomit.

One after another, these Shura escorts from the Yang family of the Endless Sea dismounted from their rides and followed after Xiao Han Yi to enter the Misty Pavilion.

All the bats remained in the square outside the Misty Pavilion, watching the many kneeling warriors expectantly with their cold green eyes, treating them as if they were fresh meat.

Being stared at in such a manner by the bats, the warriors of the Misty Pavilion were completely horrified and panicked a lot.

Xiao Han Yi sat on the Head’s seat casually and glanced at Ku Luo, “What’s the situation?”

“Miss... Miss Xia went to the Dead Swamp, since the Gate of Heaven was found there. The treasure map was completed.” Ku Luo was anxious.

“I’m not asking about that!” Xiao Han Yi’s face turned cold.

An invisible power exploded outwards within the pavilion suddenly!

That power constricted Ku Luo as if there was big hand on his neck, and lifted him to drop him in front of Xiao Han Yi.

“Father!”

“Lord!”

Ku Luo’s family members all were horrified and looked at Xiao Han Yi in anger, ready to fight for their lives.

Some of the Shura escorts coldly glanced at them indifferently, when one of them asked, “Lord, do you need to finish Ku Luo’s family?”

“Lord Xiao!” Ku Luo struggled, coughed, and begged in fear, “Lord Xiao, we’ve tried our best! Give me some more time, we will find Yang Hai!”

“Keep your eyes open.” Xiao Han Yi stared at Ku Luo, and grunted.

“Bang!”

Ku Luo fell from mid-air and dropped to his knees on the ground. He nodded in fear and explained, “We took every man named Yang Hai to the Tianyun City but none of them was the one we want. We are searching out of town now and will get news soon.”

“Give me the Blood Spirit Crystal” Xiao Han Yi thought for a while and stretched out his hand.

The Blood Spirit Crystal left by Xia Xin Yan on Ku Luo suddenly flew out from him and landed in Xiao Han Yi’s hand.

“Everybody except Ku Luo, get out!” After getting the Blood Spirit Crystal, Xiao Han Yi ordered calmly.

“All dismissed!” Ku Luo signalled to his people.

Soon, there were only Xiao Han Yi’s people left in the room.

“I don’t have so much time.” Xiao Han Yi grunted and said indifferently, “It turns out that the Xia Family is really slow. So much time for a single person.”

Then, Xiao Han Yi caressed the Blood Spirit Crystal and closed his eyes.

Centered on Xiao Han Yi, a strong will pervaded throughout Tianyun City in all directions.

Inside that Blood Spirit Crystal, a red light suddenly manifested and numerous faces, filled with all sorts of expressions, appeared

on the surface of the crystal. Their faces flashed like ghosts inside the Blood Spirit Crystal, and none of them stayed for more than three seconds.

“The God Search Skill!” Ku Luo was shocked.

The God Search Skill was a mysterious tracing skill. Once one had the target’s blood, flesh, bone or even a hair, he could find the target with this skill. The better one can use his will, the larger the search area it could search.

Xiao Han Yi closed his eyes, and his huge will power covered the entirety of Tianyun City.

In Tianyun City, all the Nirvana warriors who had formed a Will Sea could feel clearly a horrifying Will Sea lingering above Tianyun City.

Many experts in Tianyun City were astounded.

This Will was more than two levels higher than Beiming Shang’s, covering the entire Tianyun City, and kept moving further.

At that time, all the experts in the five big families felt threatened. At this crucial point, every minister of the five families exchanged messages and started guessing what the Misty pavilion was going to do.

The God Search Skill was continuing...

The horrifying Will Sea shook the whole Tianyun City like tornado, where every creature was tested.

All of a sudden.

Blood exploded in the Blood Spirit Crystal and odd light spots gathered, showing a fat face in it.

The picture in the Blood Spirit Crystal turned clear.

That guy was sitting in a carriage in the west of Tianyun City, heading for the city.

Xiao Han Yi suddenly opened his eyes.

“Who is he?”

“Shi Jian’s adopted son, Yang Hai!” Ku Luo’s face changed in astonishment.

“It is him!”

Xiao Han Yi quickly stood up and vanished.

The next moment, the sound of Green Blood Magical Bats filling the sky came from the Misty Pavilion.

One hour later, Xiao Han Yi brought Yang Hai back, who had a blank expression on his face.

“Who are you? Humph! Has the Mo family invited you here?” Yang Hai was kind of calm, but when he saw Ku Luo, he shouted in anger, “Ku Luo! Has your Misty pavilion cooperated with the Mo family? What’s going on? We three families worked together to search for the treasure. What the hell do you want to do?”

Ku Luo smiled bitterly and made an apologising bow, saying in embarrassment, “Different things. Different.”

“It’s good to see you, Young Master Hai, I’m the leading Shura escort from the Yang Family, Xiao Han Yi.” Xiao Han Yi bowed, “I will explain everything to you.”

Xiao Han Yi explained the story to Yang Hai politely, “Young Master Hai, our family head is battling in the Fourth Demon Area now, so I came to take you back. Since the family head threw you out of the Fourth Demon Area, he has been worried about you. But he was badly injured and had to recover first...”

“The Endless Sea? The Yang Family?” Yang Hai was shocked, confused and unable to think straight.

Standing there, his expression continuously changed as different ideas popped up to his mind.

Just then, he remembered that test Shi Yan did on him in the

Gravity Room. His arm was cut but quickly recovered in presence of Han Feng, which showed it was an amazing Martial Spirit.

Hearing Xiao Han Yi say such, he was sure that he meant it.

However, he was used to living in the Merchant Union and Shi Jian was good to him, besides, his son Shi Yan was here, and he was not a warrior himself...

With all sorts of matters behind him, Yang Hai was so pressured that he didn't want to start a new life in the Endless Sea.

After a long time, Yang Hai shook his head, "I'm not going to the Endless Sea. I never trained in Martial Arts. It's too late to begin training at this age. I'm used to the life here, and don't want to live in the Endless Sea. I'm afraid you have to leave without me. Just think I'm dead."

"Young Master Hai!" Xiao Han Yi yelled, "As a descendant of the Yang family, you have to fight for the family!"

After a pause, Xiao Han Yi added, "Although Young Master Hai is not young anymore, don't worry, the family head had expected it. He had long prepared an Immortal Pill, and this Royal Level pill will change you entirely! It will be easy for you to enter the Disaster Realm in ten years!"

"Immortal Pill!" Ku Luo cried out loud and tried to persuade Yang Hai, "Young Master Hai, the Immortal Pill is one of the seven magical medicines in the Endless Sea. One Immortal Pill can really change everything! Even your talent will change with it! Young Master Hai, seize this opportunity!"

Royal Level Pills!

Though the three Medicine Kings in the Medicine Valley were Soul Level Alchemists, they couldn't ever refine Royal Level pills.

Till now, Royal Level pills had never appeared in the Fire Empire, God-blessed Empire or the Merchant Union!

It was said that one Royal Level pill could change everything!

Xiao Han Yi and Ku Luo's speech made Yang Hai rethink. His expressions changed in front of the temptation of the pill.

"I never trained Martial Arts since I was a kid, so I can't adapt even if I became a warrior right now."

After a long silence, Yang Hai looked at Xiao Han Yi and said, "My heart has died since my wife's death. I have no dream anymore. However, my son is in his prime age and possesses both the Immortal Martial Spirit and the Shi family's Petrification Martial Spirit. Although he hadn't trained in the first seventeen years of his life, he advanced to the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm. Maybe you could give the Immortal Pill to him."

"Shi Yan!"

Ku Luo cried out and said to Xiao Han Yi, "Lord Xiao, Shi Yan is awesome! Young, with potential, ambitious and strong-minded!"

"Seventeen, twin Martial Spirits, in the Third Sky of Nascent Realm." Xiao Han Yi mumbled to himself while his eyes lit up, "Where is he?"

"In the Yin Valley of the Dead Swamp." Ku Luo ingratiated.

"Young Master Hai, I will go see Shi Yan first. Excuse me." Xiao Han Yi bowed to Yang Hai, and disappeared in an instant, with his voice ringing outside the Misty Pavilion, "Let's go to the Dead Swamp!"

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 94 - I'll Go!

Inside the Yin Valley.

An enormous galaxy pattern emerged from the blood of the sky snake.

In the middle of that galaxy pattern, thousands of lights gathered, forming into the blindingly bright Gate of Heaven.

All the warriors gathered in the valley were looking at the Gate of Heaven, but none of them dared to enter first.

On the other hand, Shi Yan was quite calmly standing beside Han Feng and Ku Long. He was secretly observing the Gate of Heaven, feeling joyful inside.

He didn't get any of the nine demon crystals that came from the carcass of the Nine-headed Sky Snake. But seeing all those crystals getting destroyed made him immensely happy.

But as he thought of the frightening power which could snatch away the demon crystals from the hands of Sky Realm warriors like Chi Xiao and Beiming Shang, he was very startled, and thought of prudence.

Zhua Qi looked up into the sky, his expression was painful, and he kept murmuring under his breath, "Father, father..."

One of the demon crystals that exploded came from a Level 8 Mud Dragon. A Level 8 demon crystal could sustain a piece of the demon beast's soul. So even if the body is destroyed, there is still a chance for resurrection because of the soul inside the demon crystal.

However, the spirit inside the Level 8 demon crystal was clearly lifeless and dull. Very obviously, it must have been refined by some mysterious technique, making it just a power source with no ability to think of its own.

That Level 8 demon crystal of the Mud Dragon had become a very important part in opening the Gate of Heaven.

Although Zhua Qi was vicious, he still had a deep love and admiration for the Mud Dragon. One can only imagine the despair he must have felt when seeing the last hope of resurrecting his father getting destroyed.

Beiming Shang, Chi Xiao, and Zou Zi He all quietly walked towards the Gate of Heaven. As they approached the Gate of Heaven, the more cautious were their steps.

“Mistress...” The two giant men next to Xia Xin Yan looked at the mysterious pattern in the valley and hesitated.

These two seemed to know some secrets about the mysterious pattern.

Xia Xin Yan shook her head. She silently gazed at everything in a strange light, and looked at the far standing Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was also secretly watching everyone, and once he saw Xia Xin Yan’s looking towards him, he was dazed for a second, then lightly nodded to Xia Xin Yan.

A complex feeling flickered through Xia Xin Yan’s eyes. She also slowly nodded towards him, but no one knew what thoughts were going through her mind.

“The Gate of Heaven has now opened, if you all are really not scared of death, then you may enter now.” Xia Xin Yan didn’t move from her place but saw Chi Xiao and Beiming Shang standing motionless before the Gate. She couldn’t resist the temptation to mock them.

“I’ll go!”

Unexpectedly, Zhua Qi, who was immersed in grief, suddenly roared, “I’d like to see what exactly is inside!”

Then, Zhua Qi’s body moved as fast as lightning, storming into

the Gate of Heaven like a moth to a flame, and disappeared into the bright white light.

Zhua Qi's shadow quickly disappeared into the Gate of Heaven. The Gate only warped for second, and did not show any other change. It still maintained its bright shine, as if waiting for the entrance of another person.

“Brother Zou...” Beiming Shang looked at Zou Zi He, and pondered for a second, then said, “What do you think?”

Zou Zi He shook his head and said, “We’re already at this point. If I return empty handed, I will regret it for the rest of my life. If you want the riches, you have to take the risks.”

“Alright.” Beiming Shang nodded in agreement, he hesitated for a second, then turned to Beiming Ce and said, “Ce, you stay outside. Yin Kui, Jiu Shan, you guys take care of Ce.”

Pausing, Beiming Shang then looked at Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan, and furrowed his brows, “What do you guys think?”

“I want to go look inside.” Mu Yu Die knew that the Gate of Heaven would contain great danger, but she still didn’t want to miss this chance of a lifetime.

“Okay, you may go in.” Beiming Shang nodded, “Follow me.” Beiming Shang then followed after Zhua Qi and entered the Gate of Heaven.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan exchanged a look. They both looked determined, and followed Beiming Shang into the Gate of Heaven.

“Mister Chi Xiao, how about you?” Xia Xin Yan said casually.

“Of course I will enter too.” Chi Xiao smiled, he looked back at Zuo Shi and Shi Yan, and said, “Xiao Shi, you stay outside, I will go look inside alone.”

“Master, I wanna go inside it too.” Zuo Shi pouted, and said reluctantly.

“As a teacher, I’ll go take a look at the situation first. If there are no problems, next time I will definitely take you along.” Chi Xiao scolded her with a straight face, then said to Shi Yan and the rest, “What about the Shi family? Would you send someone to go and take a look too?”

“Young Master, I’ll go.” Ku Long stood up, and said to Shi Yan.

“I’ll go!” Shi Yan’s expression was cold, he shouted with a deep voice, as if he didn’t care the dangers in the Gate of Heaven.

Deep down he always had a daredevil factor and he liked to challenge unknown mysteries. The very reason why he came to this world was because of his exploration of the blue holes.

Of course, he wouldn’t want to sit out on the exploration of the Gate of Heaven.

“Young Master, let Ku Long go.” Han Feng said anxiously.

“Don’t worry, I’ll go.” Shi Yan shook his head, and insisted, “I’m very curious as to what really is in the Gate of Heaven. If I don’t go, I will regret it forever!”

Then, before Han Feng and Ku Long could try to persuade him again, he immediately sprinted towards the Gate of Heaven.

“Young Master!”

Ku Long and Han Feng both screamed in fear, and they also ran towards the Gate of Heaven. By the time when they arrived at the Gate, Shi Yan’s body just so happened to disappear into the Gate.

The two exchanged glances, and without further hesitation, leaped into the Gate of Heaven.

“You guys look after Xiao Shi.” Chi Xiao told Wu Yun Lian and Chu Ping, then he also flew out and disappeared into the Gate of Heaven.

In the matter of a few minutes, all the masters in the valley leaped into the Gate one after another. Truly, like the saying,

people die in pursuit for money like birds die for food.

In the Yin Valley, the only ones left were Beiming Ce, Yin Kui and Jiu Shan on one side, plus Zuo Shi, Chu Ping, and Wu Yun Lian on the other. Then there were also Xia Xin Yan and the two towering giant men.

“Mistress, this is a False Gate of Heaven!” One of the giant men whispered.

“Mmm hmm.” Xia Xin Yan’s eyes flickered, she stared at the Gate with the same expression.

Right now the Sky Realm masters were all in the Gate of Heaven, plus Xia Xin Yan and the two were at a distance from the other two sides, so no one could hear their quiet conversation.

“The False Gate won’t have the real God Domain, this is only a small space created by a God Realm master. It won’t contain any unimaginable treasures, but it should contain the relics of the God Realm master. Miss, why don’t you go in? Maybe, maybe there’s even the Martial Spirit inheritance of that person!” One of the towering men said impatiently.

“Don’t you all think that somewhere, there’s an invisible hand that’s manipulating this all?” Xia Xin Yan snorted, “He already arranged everything on the chess board, and we’re all just chess pieces in his game plan. We are all together but still could not escape from his control. That old guy’s been dead for thousands of years and still won’t rest in peace!”

“Mistress, you’re saying?”

“The Shi family’s half of the fragmented map was probably obtained by Shi Yan. That half of the map was definitely together with the [Black Formula]! The [Black Formula] is only a Mortal level Martial Skill and only warriors with low capabilities would actually go and cultivate it. That guy purposely set the place in the Yin Valley, forcing the one who has the [Black Formula] to

cultivate it to defend against the natural Yin Qi. Once the [Black Formula] is cultivated, it would naturally swallow the Yin Qi here to form the Yin Pearls. Once the Yin Pearls form, the objective is clear. If the Gate of Heaven really had the Martial Spirit Imprint, then only the one with the Yin Pearls could obtain it. Now is there even a need for us to go in?” Xia Xin Yan said resentfully, “... That old guy, he already planned everything completely, he simply won’t let anyone sabotage his plans. This time we came for nothing.”

“If Shi Yan obtains the Martial Spirit Imprint of that guy, then he will definitely become one of the God Children of the Three Gods Sect. If he could go to the Endless Sea, the Three Gods Sect would treat him like a treasure! Miss, the Three Gods Sect is very powerful in the Endless Sea, and they’re in opposition with us. If he really does obtain that person’s Martial Spirit Imprint, then he will definitely become the Star God of the Three Gods Sect in the future. We better... take him out now!”

“I know what to do.” Xia Xin Yan said coldly.

The two towering men nodded, and became silent again.

In a place with pitch black darkness, there came a woman’s cold voice, “All of you go to the Gate of Heaven! Catch Mu Yu Die and assist the Lord to explore the mysteries of the Gate.”

“Yes, Mistress!”

A group of pale-faced warriors from the Dark World knelt down on one knee, with blank expressions.

“Go.”

The voice in the dark came again.

Dozens of warriors of the Dark World moved one by one, and soon entered the Yin Valley. Without even looking at the people in the valley, they walked straight into the Gate of Heaven.

“The people from the Dark World!” Beiming Ce shouted with a low voice, his expression slightly changed, “The Dark World should’ve been guarding on the outside, why would they suddenly enter into the Gate of Heaven?”

As Yin Kui and Jiu Shan watched the flow of warriors from the Dark World coming in, the look in their eyes became grim.

“It can’t be! We have to go in too, or else grandpa won’t be able to handle it on his own.” Beiming Ce pondered, and disregarding Yin Kui and Jiu Shan’s opposition, he also rushed into the Gate.

When Yin Kui and Jiu Shan saw that he went in, they could only follow along without hesitation.

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 95 - Desperate Fight

The first of two sponsored chapters from B. Cronkite.

Many thanks for your support.

There was a huge star river in the sky, which was exactly like the pattern formed in the Yin Valley by the Sky Snake's blood.

In that star river, every star was as big as a mountain, and the distance between the stars was like heaven and earth, hundreds of thousands of meters away.

Under the star river were various numerous clouds, floating freely, and which were either formed of fire, Yin Qi or poisonous air.

Gray sky and gray earth.

On the ground lay a huge statue with its back on the ground. The statue was of a muscular, handsome figure, and sculpted to be clothed with only a stone shorts.

The heart area of the stone statue was shining with starry light.

The starry light was attracting the power in the star river, and similarly to the light from the starry river was becoming concentrated in the heart of the stone statue.

The statue was carved very expertly, such that even the hair and veins were shown in exquisite delicacy. If one looked carefully, one could even see thousands of black spots moving through the veins.

On the right palm of the stone statue, a little ant was staring up at the sky with a surprised look.

That was Shi Yan!

After he arrived here, he was standing on the right palm of the statue, with oddly swaying plants all around him.

Those plants, which swayed with the wind, were ten meters high, and as thick as a human waist, looking like the statue's hair.

Although he didn't know that the plants looked like hair from up in the air.

In his eyes, the right palm of that statue was ten times larger than the God Stone Square in Tianyun City.

Standing on that palm, Shi Yan looked at the mysterious star river above him and was filled with amazement.

He wasn't aware that he was on the palm of statue, nor did he know how huge the statue was. He had lost his sense of direction and was of the assumption that he was on a small hill.

“Tuuu! Tuuu!”

The Yin Pearls in the Tian Que, Shen Que and Yin Du meridians suddenly started spinning, while a mysterious attraction force came from the heart of that stone statue.

Shi Yan's body shook suddenly.

The heart area which attracted the star light was calling for the Yin Pearls inside Shi Yan, and the Yin Pearls spun, as if urging him to go to the heart area.

Standing on the palm of the stone statue, Shi Yan looked quite serious, and after a little hesitance, he dashed to the heart area of the statue directly.

Meanwhile, the small black men on the stone statue observed for a while, and realized the heart area was the most powerful place.

Therefore, after being still for a while, those people gathered at the chest of the stone statue.

Those people included the warriors from the Dark World, Mu Hui, Mu Yu Die, Di Yalan, and Beiming Ce. All warriors under the Earth Realm were moving towards the heart area.

Under the heels of the stone statue, Beiming Shang, Chi Xiao,

Zhua Qi, the Dark Master, Yin Kui and Jiu Shan were suppressed by a huge power.

Warriors above Earth Realm were all suppressed under its heels, unable to move even a bit.

At that time, the group including Beiming Shang and Chi Xiao were trying to defend against the power which restrained them.

But, however hard they tried, they couldn't get rid of that pressure or move an inch.

“Tuuu! Tuuu!”

The Yin Pearls inside Shi Yan kept spinning, while Shi Yan held his breath and dashed toward the stone statue with a rigid face.

Beside Shi Yan, the hairs of the stone statue were swaying like tall trees and blocking his sight. He felt like he was in a jungle instead of the palm of the statue.

Not knowing how much time had passed, Shi Yan finally flew from the mountain-like palm to its right leg.

Shi Yan's rushing body suddenly stopped as he looked ahead on alert.

From a deep hole in front of him, one after another flaming stone men suddenly jumped out!

These stone men were three meters tall and were wreathed in fire, giving off the smell of the Nine-headed Sky Snake.

If one looked down at it from upon the statue, he would find that that deep hole was actually the Yang Chi Meridian on its right arm!

The twelve flaming stone men seemed to be disgusted by the smell of life. Once Shi Yan approached the hole, they appeared and jumped on him.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan kept calm to operate his Petrification Martial Spirit and his skin turned dark brown in a short time.

After he operated his Petrification Martial Spirit, Shi Yan triggered the [Dark Light Shield] by moving his Profound Qi all over his body.

As the [Dark Light Shield] was formed, Shi Yan dashed out like a missile.

“Dang dang dang!”

Among the flaming stone men, Shi Yan turned his fingers into spears and struck the stone men.

The [Finger Spear], which could pierce through an Elementary Realm warrior, emitted the sound of metal clashing while striking the stone bodies.

The power of the fire went into Shi Yan’s fingers when he touched the stone men, and felt pain in his fingers.

No!

His face changed, Shi Yan soon realized that the [Finger Spear] was inefficient when facing the stone men who were not made of flesh.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Six stone men made flaming fists and punched Shi Yan together.

His [Dark Light Shield] couldn’t bear the attacks and fell apart.

Under those fists, Shi Yan was driven back in pain, his clothes were on fire.

Thanks to his Petrification Martial Spirit, his body was not hurt except for some pain.

With a gloomy face, Shi Yan could figure out that every one of the six stone man was tougher than a Human Realm warrior.

The [Finger Spear] was not working. He had to take another shot.

As his will changed, Shi Yan’s left hand gave out wisps of white smoke. Negative energy was triggered and combined with his

Profound Qi. They flew out together and formed a huge [Gravitational Field].

With his will, the [Gravitational Field] moved swiftly and suddenly fell in the center of the stone men.

A strong power of attraction gushed out of the Field making all the stone men to struggle painfully.

It worked!

Delighted, Shi Yan enhanced the power in the Field and focused to twist it.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

As the Field span, one stone man was shattered into pieces and was thrown out of the Field.

Shi Yan was a little relieved before his face changed again.

However, after leaving the Field, the scattered parts of the stone man began to reform together. In merely three seconds, it had recombined and jumped at Shi Yan again.

It was not killed!

Realizing that, Shi Yan's face turned gloomier, and he triggered the Field again to change its position.

That stone man was wrapped again and shredded to pieces another time.

This time, Shi Yan didn't try to kill them, but crossed the Field in an instant and continued to dash forward after all the stone men were entangled.

Half an hour later, from the deep hole of the stone statue's Zhigou Meridian, one after another Yin Sha danced out.

Yin Sha was produced by warriors' spirits which absorbed Yin Qi. It was a dead thing, but could use part of the warrior's Martial Spirit. It was aggressive and in thirst of more spirits.

Those Yin Sha waved their claws and flew toward Shi Yan from the deep hole.

After a glance at the Yin Sha, Shi Yan's face turned cold.

Inside the Yin pearl, wisps of Yin power pervaded and triggered the three Yin Swirls to spin, and a strong power of attraction broke out!

Those Yin Sha suddenly showed fear and escaped to the deep hole.

"You think you can escape?"

Shi Yan smiled coldly, and the Yin Swirls spun even faster!

The Yin Sha struggled hard while being pulled by Shi Yan's Yin Swirls, but still forced towards Shi Yan little by little.

The more they approached Shi Yan, the more they were they influenced by the Yin Swirl.

All of a sudden, one Yin Sha stopped struggling and turned into Yin Qi and went inside Shi Yan's chest.

The Yin Sha dissolved in the Yin Swirls and turned into pure energy which was attached to the center of the Yin Swirls.

The rest of the Yin Sha struggled in fear but couldn't get escape the Yin Swirls. They were pulled in and turned into Yin Qi inside of it.

Quickly, all the Yin Sha were absorbed and Shi Yan continued advancing.

At the same time, the same thing was happening at every corner of the stone statue.

Beiming Ce, Mu Yu Die, Di Yalan, Mu Hui and warriors from the Dark World also met danger when they headed for the heart. They were all trapped by the flaming stone men, Yin Sha, poisonous demons and mud dragons which came from the meridians of the stone statue.

Shi Yan continued to rush forward.

On his way, he came across more flaming stone men and Yin Sha, which were taken care of by the same means, and then he came to the right elbow slowly.

Shi Yan stopped again.

Ahead of him were five warriors from the Dark World, who all were around the First or Second Sky of the Human Realm. They had been separated from the others by the Gate of Heaven when they entering. And now, all of them were heading for the heart but smelled like scorched flesh.

The five warriors from the Dark World also spotted Shi Yan.

They turned back, glanced at Shi Yan, and came to an agreement silently. With cold eyes, they walked towards Shi Yan slowly.

“Warriors from the Dark World?”

Shi Yan’s eyes were like torches as he spotted the sign of the Dark World on the bare shoulder of one warrior.

“Kill!”

That guy yelled when the rest separated to encircle Shi Yan in an arc.

“You are seeking for death!”

With a cold face, Shi Yan’s eyes showed a bloodthirst. After a shout, he dashed out like a sharp sword.

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 96 - Kill All the Way!

Second sponsored chapter from B. Cronkite. Thanks again for your support.

With white smoke engulfing him, Shi Yan's thoughts were all about bloodthirst, brutality, insanity and terror while under the effect of the negative energy. There was only a single desire and that was to kill them all.

Standing amid the five warriors from the Dark World, Shi Yan had a rigid face. One after another magic snakes made of negative energy tried to intertwine those warriors crazily.

“Bang!”

One Dark World warrior's [Dark World Ghost Claw] scratched Shi Yan's chest.

“Hehe!” Shi Yan chuckled cunningly as he kicked that warrior bluntly. His ten fingers were like spears and left ten bloody holes on the warrior's chest in an instant.

With that guy's miserable screams, Shi Yan stepped back and blocked another attack from another warrior's green light to his head.

Three [Gravitational Fields] formed quietly on his two sides and his back.

Standing amid the three [Gravitational Fields], Shi Yan looked at the five Dark World warriors coldly, “Want to kill me? Hehe. I want to kill you too!”

“Kill!”

Those Dark World warriors yelled and rushed forward together.

The warrior who got five blood holes in his chest suddenly sat down cross-legged. Green thorns were triggered by him and shot

from his palms.

“Profound Level Martial Skill, [Dark World Thorn]!”

Dozens of icy, needle-like thorns flashed through the air toward Shi Yan like lightning.

“Dang dang dang dang dang!”

The crisp sound of metal on metal came from all over Shi Yan’s body as the [Dark World Thorns] couldn’t break Shi Yan’s Petrification Martial Spirit.

The badly injured man’s pale face changed as he ordered, “Strike together!”

The other four warriors went to the four corners while Shi Yan was at the center point.

Four blue curtains appeared from above their heads like clouds and formed together before they thrust toward Shi Yan.

The blue curtains had so strong power that they bound Shi Yan in an instant.

The four warriors were delighted as they jumped up and took out weapons to stab Shi Yan.

“Field! Trigger!”

Shi Yan shouted.

The four warriors were inside the invisible [Gravitational Field] and were wrapped by them all of a sudden!

Being greatly distorted, the four warriors turned stiff and couldn’t even operate their Profound Qi. Deeply horrified, they didn’t know what exactly had happened.

“Howl!”

Shi Yan shouted into the sky, his muscles trembling. At the same time, the white smoke became denser and all sorts of negative energies were triggered.

In an instant, a vicious power broke out inside Shi Yan's body and flashed through his body like an electric current.

In the howls, Shi Yan managed to break through the blue curtain!

“Boom!”

A huge roar came, and the big blue curtain made from the four smaller ones exploded into blue light spots.

Shi Yan smiled cunningly and coldly, and rushed into one [Gravitational Field] and thrust his [Finger Spear] into the warrior contained within!

“Puh!”

Shi Yan's [Finger Spear] was thrust into the eyes of the warrior entangled in the Field. His eyes turned into two blood holes and even his brain could be seen. He died instantly.

Shi Yan moved swiftly, crossing into the other two Fields.

“Puh!”

“Puh!”

“Puh!”

The other three warriors were also bleeding from their eyes and died in the same way, in a very short time.

The [Gravitational Field] suddenly contracted.

The last Dark World warrior sitting on the ground was terrified and hurriedly tried to escape.

“Do you really think you can run away?”

Shi Yan laughed coldly, while he flashed to the warrior and stabbed him in the back. His arm went right through the man's heart.

Right now, all the five Dark World warriors were killed.

Covered in blood, Shi Yan stood beside the five corpses, looking content. He was enjoying the negative energy flowing out from them.

Soon, the five bodied dried up, while Shi Yan's meridians were filled with Profound Qi and his desire for blood surged!

Without any attempt to suppress the effects, Shi Yan kept [Rampage] activated while his desire to kill was strengthened. He walked to the heart area.

Half an hour later, another two warriors of the Second Sky of the Nascent Realm encountered him.

Without uttering any word, Shi Yan dashed over with a hideous face. Under the bloodthirsty effects of [Rampage], he killed the two warriors easily and continued his journey.

Twelve Yin Sha suddenly flew up from a deep hole ahead when they saw Shi Yan.

“Hehe!”

Shi Yan chuckled coldly but in a happy mood. He shifted his Yin Swirls and a huge attraction force came into being.

The twelve Yin Sha were eventually swallowed by Shi Yan's Yin Swirls and turned into Yin Qi.

All sorts of negative energy was purifying and gushing out of Shi Yan's meridians.

Ignoring the abnormal state of his body, Shi Yan kept advancing.

All along the way, Shi Yan became a god of slaughter as he killed instantly as long as he saw a Dark World warrior.

The Dark World warriors in this area were mostly at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm or the First or Second Sky of the Human Realm. They couldn't compete with Shi Yan and were all killed by him.

All along the way, Shi Yan killed twenty one Dark World

warriors, absorbed sixty five Yin Sha and finally reached the right shoulder of the stone statue.

Mu Hui's figure suddenly popped out from a deep hole ahead.

Beside him stood three Dark World warriors of the Third Sky of the Human Realm.

Inside the deep hole, three destroyed Mud Dragons were wriggling, trying to reconstruct their bodies.

Mu Hui frowned and a slight resignation flashed across his odd face, "These thing are too tough and can't be killed. There are hundreds of them in every deep hole which keeps consuming my Profound Qi."

"Young Master, someone's there." A Dark World warrior pointed to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was surrounded by white smoke and a murderous air boiled around him. The blood on him turned into blood cocoons while he smiled a bloody smile.

"It's you?" Mu Hui was surprised and recognized he was Shi Yan who always stood beside Han Feng and Ku Long.

While Mu Hui was in the Yin Valley, he had observed but didn't pay much attention to Shi Yan. Rather, he was more focused on the experts like Zhua Qi and Xia Xin Yan.

Since Shi Yan was only at the First Sky of the Human Realm, Mu Hui never took him seriously.

Seeing Shi Yan approaching with a murderous air, Mu Hui was perplexed, not knowing what happened to Shi Yan.

"Young Master, we have to kill whoever we meet." That warrior wore a plain expression, "The earlier we kill one, the earlier we have less adversaries! The Mistress of the Dark World has ordered that we even have to kill Beiming Ce if we met him!"

"Hmm. One of you stay and take care of him. The rest follow

me.” Mu Hui nodded and ordered, then turned to walk ahead.

Two warriors followed Mu Hui quietly and left at once.

That talkative guy stayed there, looking at Shi Yan coldly, “You have bad luck.”

“Bad luck?” Shi Yan laughed wildly, “Actually I have rather good luck! Really good! You Dark World warriors fed me well! Hehe, I have killed twenty one Dark World warriors! And you will be my twenty second!”

Just then, Shi Yan rushed towards him.

Two minutes later, that talkative warrior turned into a dry dead body, his head and body separated.

Shi Yan sucked up his negative energy and continued to run up.

Ten minutes later, Shi Yan saw Mu Hui and the other two warriors again.

“What? Li Tuo was killed by you?” Mu Hui then took Shi Yan seriously and his face turned dignified, “A First Sky of the Human Realm killed Li Tuo who was at the Third Sky. It seems you are something.”

Shi Yan didn’t answer, but smiled coldly. His desire for blood was increasing rapidly as he walked towards Mu Hui step by step.

Mu Hui was at the Third Sky of the Human Realm, but since he had a Martial Spirit and trained in high-class Martial Skills, he was more capable than the average warrior of his level.

Shi Yan approached him step by step, but although he looked vicious and insane, he was actually cool-minded.

After five steps, he acutely perceived that Mu Hui was a formidable adversary.

“You are already dead.”

Mu Hui stared at him and yelled.

“You are already dead!”

The four words struck into Shi Yan’s mind like some mysterious incantation.

An astounding power suddenly exploded in Shi Yan’s mind.

The four words conquered his perception and stopped all his thoughts!

“Kill him. So bored.” Mu Hui ordered indifferently, and shook his head, before he walked forward quickly.

The two warriors walked towards Shi Yan with dull expressions and stabbed Shi Yan with the swords in their hands.

“Dang! Dang!”

The sound of metal clashing came from Shi Yan’s chest again.

“Mm?”

The two warriors’ faces changed and they started to trigger more Profound Qi in their swords, then raised them to stab Shi Yan’s eyes.

The strong strikes on his chest suddenly woke him up from his confused state.

In his eyes, two tips of sharp swords were expanding slowly.

Surprised, Shi Yan shifted his head and the swords slipped past his temple; he could feel the coldness on the swords clearly.

“Bang! Bang!”

A boiling negative energy exploded from Shi Yan’s shoulders. Two bunches of pale light delved into the two warriors’ bodies in an instant.

Struck by the negative energy, the two warriors felt like they were being dragged into an endless blood sea and were being eaten by thousands of ghosts. They were dumbstruck.

“Puhhh!”

“Puhhh!”

Five bloody holes appeared on their necks and blood came gushing out.

Shi Yan looked on coldly as he tossed the blood on his fingers, absorbed the Profound Qi in them. He coldly glanced at Mu Hui who was moving, and dashed forward!

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 97 - Grind!

Sponsored by: E. Espinoza. Many thanks for your support.

Shi Yan appeared again!

This time, Mu Hui's expression became serious and his seductive eyes flickered with some coldness. He bitterly watched Shi Yan who was walking towards him step by step.

Three Human Realm warriors were individually killed by Shi Yan. Especially the last two, who died after he used his Soul Martial Spirit on Shi Yan!

"You're not bad." Mu Hui slowly took a deep breath, "The result is still going to be the same though. You will still die in my hands!"

Shi Yan's expression was slightly ferocious. The negative energies in all of his meridians were churning like waves and wisps of pale white fog covered his whole body.

The different negative emotions were rampaging throughout his body. These violent and murderous thoughts formed a dominating will around his body. The will was like an evil spirit that could destroy everything in its path.

However, his mentality was clear and calm as ever.

Under the conditions of [Rampage], Shi Yan became very sensitive. He could feel the most minuscule details of the different essences in this bizarre world. He could even feel the circulation path of the Profound Qi in Mu Hui's body!

The Soul Martial Spirit!

This was the most mysterious kind of martial spirit. Warriors with the Soul Martial Spirit had the most formidable senses, with the power to delude people's minds with their speech. Their insight into the natural energies was also a lot broader than

ordinary warriors.

What Mu Hui had, was precisely the Soul Martial Spirit!

Once he breaks into the Nirvana Realm and forms a Sea of Knowledge inside his mind, the Soul Martial Spirit would become even stronger! One sentence would have the power to drive people to madness and put them into a situation beyond redemption.

Previously, with one sentence from Mu Hui, Shi Yan was put into a suspended dream, in which his body became cold and stiff. If it weren't for the negligence of those two Dark World warriors, he could've already ended up dead back there.

And because of that, this time when Shi Yan sprinted forward, the first thing he did was to securely guard his mind, as he didn't dare give another chance for Mu Hui to use the Soul Martial Spirit to paralyze his mind again.

"The Shi family's Petrification Martial Spirit sure is something. It looks like those two weren't able to kill you in one shot and that's what woke you up." Mu Hui looked at the sword gash on the clothes on Shi Yan's chest. His long, thin eyes slightly squinted, and a seductive light suddenly shone from his eyes.

That beam of seductive light became brighter and brighter. Then slowly, Mu Hui's eyes became like bright and dazzling gems under the sun.

A flow of deluding mental power was released from those eyes. This mental power was like an invisible storm that suddenly covered the whole area!

"Lock!"

Mu Hui shouted.

Shi Yan's whole body stiffened and his eyes became dazed again. The Profound Qi in his body behaved as if it was frozen and became hard to circulate.

“[Dark Spirit Knife]!”

Mu Hui raised his right arm and green electric light shot from his five fingers which quickly condensed under his control. Soon, a long knife formed in his hand, shining with a strange green light.

The long knife looked like it was real and gave off a dazzling and chilling bright light.

Holding the [Dark Spirit Knife], there was a confident smile on Mu Hui's lips. He slowly walked towards Shi Yan as if taking a casual stroll.

“Lub-dub! Lub-dub!”

At Shi Yan's chest, the Yin Pearls continuously pulsed. Summoned by the strange light spots at the stone statue's heart, the Yin Pearls in his meridians became more and more restless.

The traumatized Shi Yan suddenly felt a strange movement in the Yin Pearls.

His soul felt as if it was in an endless dark abyss. It was sinking quickly, like it was going to be swallowed by the abyss and could never have its own individual thought again.

Suddenly!

The negative energies fiercely burst from the meridians in his head! Feelings of bloodlust, madness and hate quickly flowed into the abyss, and entered the mind of Shi Yan as it was falling into the dark abyss.

“Boom!”

His head suddenly shook, and Shi Yan's degrading mind was forcibly cleared by the negative energies.

“What?!”

Mu Hui immediately noticed the change. He exclaimed, and the [Dark Spirit Knife] in his hand swung down without hesitation!

“Bzz bzz bzz!”

The air exploded wherever the [Dark Spirit Knife] went. And in its glowing green light, the [Dark Spirit Knife] became thinner and thinner, almost as thin as an onion skin.

After Shi Yan was wide awake, he saw the [Dark Spirit Knife] coming straight at him. His heart shook and without hesitation he dodged to the left.

“Pu!”

A beam of electric light flashed, and a deep bloody gash appeared on Shi Yan’s right arm. What sort of power was affixed to the knife that it was able to break his Petrification Martial Spirit?!

Shi Yan’s expression suddenly changed!

Mu Hui’s eyes were also full of surprise, his expression became more serious, and said, “Not bad, this slash only left a gash and didn’t chop your whole arm off. The Petrification Martial Spirit from the Shi family indeed has astonishing defensive powers.”

Usually when Mu Hui pulled out the [Dark Spirit Knife], even Disaster Realm warriors would avoid it. Not many would go into close combat with Mu Hui when he’s holding the [Dark Spirit Knife].

From Mu Hui’s perspective, even though the Shi family’s Martial Spirit was extraordinary, it was still flesh and blood in nature, and shouldn’t be able to withstand the energy of the dead spirits in the [Dark Spirit Knife].

However, one slash didn’t sever Shi Yan’s arm and only left a mere bloody gash.

He was even more surprised than Shi Yan was!

Backing away quickly, Shi Yan took in a deep breath and secretly released three [Gravitational Fields] and tried to incite the [Black Formula] at the same time.

This was the first time he had used the [Black Formula] in combat!

The six Yin Pearls combined their forces, releasing a surge of Yin power that followed along Shi Yan's arm and rushed straight towards the palm of his right hand.

A head-sized green light ball quickly formed in his palm. Electric snakes intertwined inside the green light ball, and wisps of chilling evil powers flowed out from inside the ball. It was filled with a dark, cold ambience.

Yin power continued to vigorously flow into the light ball!

The green light ball became bigger and bigger. In just in a few seconds, the light ball was already the size of a basin, shooting out green light like a green sun.

Mu Hui's expression shook for the first time.

"Friend, stop struggling." Mu Hui said, the Soul Martial Spirit was like a shockwave, and it struck at Shi Yan's soul again.

"Blast!"

Before the Soul Martial Spirit could unleash its effect, Shi Yan suddenly roared. The green light ball in his hand abruptly flew out, and smashed at Mu Hui like lightning.

"Boom!"

All of a sudden, the green light ball burst out and wisps of pure Yin power, along with traces of Shi Yan's will, fell towards Mu Hui like raindrops.

At the sound of the explosion, Shi Yan's restricted soul was finally pulled out from the dark abyss by the negative energies.

Clarity returned to his eyes.

On the other side, Mu Hui was doused by the rain-like shower of Yin power. His body suddenly became stiff, and the circulation speed of his Profound Qi slowed down.

The shining [Dark Spirit Knife] clenched in his hand was also flickering. It was also affected by the Yin power formed after the explosion of the green light ball.

Move!

The three [Gravitational Fields] suddenly drifted away from Shi Yan's side, and silently moved towards Mu Hui.

Before Mu Hui could react, Shi Yan flew out like a missile, his thin body swiftly fell into one of the [Gravitational Fields], and stormed at Mu Hui with his fist.

"You're dead meat!" A bloody cold glare flickered across Mu Hui's eyes.

"[Handprint of the Dark God]!"

Mu Hui raised his left hand, and the veins in his hand popped up. His left hand instantly became twice as big and turned a frightening dark green color.

An ambience of dead souls came from his hand. Mu Hui raised his hand to strike, and as if it could block the space, smashing towards Shi Yan's iron fist head-on.

"Boom!"

In the thundering rumble, Shi Yan's body was as solid as stone and balanced on the ground. But Mu Hui was completely in shock, his body was forcibly thrown back.

The earthshaking terrifying power that projected from Shi Yan's fist exploded onto Mu Hui's [Handprint of the Dark God] and forcefully knocked Mu Hui away!

Shi Yan, who was at the First Sky of the Human Realm, with his one punch, managed to make Mu Hui, who was at the Third Sky of the Human Realm, to lose ground!

Under the effect of [Rampage], this punch, which was accompanied by the different negative energies, skyrocketed in

power. It was definitely not something that a warrior of the same realm could handle!

This was just the beginning of Mu Hui's suffering.

Just when he finally managed to steady himself, he suddenly felt like he had sunk into a swamp, and his body rotated uncontrollably.

He was directly sucked into a [Gravitational Field] set up by Shi Yan!

Mu Hui's face suddenly changed!

"Hehe!" Shi Yan grinned, but his eyes were as cold as ice. He fiercely flew out.

"Crush!"

Mu Hui roared inside the [Gravitational Field] and an enormous flow of spiritual energy suddenly poured into Shi Yan's mind.

Shi Yan's flying body stopped midway and fell to the ground.

Mu Hui's expression was grim, the [Dark Spirit Knife] in his hand drew a strange arc and wisps of dark, cold energy flowed from the [Dark Spirit Knife] and churned inside the Gravitational Field.

The Soul Martial Spirit was triggered again! Mu Hui kept secretly reminding himself to be calm. He put in all his concentration to feel the power change in the Field, trying to figure out a way to escape from it.

But, the [Gravitational Field] was a Spirit Level Martial Skill after all. Plus it was also formed with both the negative energies and Profound Qi. Despite having the Soul Martial Spirit, Mu Hui still couldn't figure out any pattern in a short period of time.

The high speed whirling of the [Gravitational Field] not only slowed down the flow of his Profound Qi, it seemed to also weaken the sensitivity of his Soul Martial Spirit!

There were already traces of sweat on Mu Hui's forehead, his

body kept rotating, but he couldn't figure out the pattern of the [Gravitational Field].

On the other hand, Shi Yan only lay on the ground for a moment before the outburst of negative energies dragged him out of the dark abyss again.

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly became clear again and he sneered. He stared coldly at the whirling Mu Hui in the [Gravitational Field]. With just a change of his thoughts, he stirred up the Yin power in his body, and poured it into the [Gravitational Field] once again.

In the [Gravitational Field], with more power added, the gravitational force became stronger!

Just by circulating the negative energies and Profound Qi, the [Gravitational Field] could already forcibly stop a warrior of the same realm. Now that he added Yin power to the Field, the power of the [Gravitational Field] surged once again!

A flow of chaotic power suddenly burst from the [Gravitational Field]. The circulation speed of the Field doubled!

“Pu!”

Mu Hui spurted out a mouthful of blood and he felt as if his Soul Martial Spirit was in a meat grinder. A stabbing pain was assaulting his head and all the Profound Qi in his body was ground into a mess. His defense became significantly lower too.

Shi Yan held in his breath to concentrate and his expression was cold and stern. He used all his will to manipulate the [Gravitational Field].

The chaos of the [Gravitational Field] was full-blown!

The frantic grinding power violently tore Mu Hui's body. In the Field, Mu Hui's whole body was splattered with blood, his flesh torn and exposed. The seductive light in his eyes also slowly dimmed.

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Chapter 98 - Fattened Up

In the [Gravitational Field], Mu Hui was shivering, and the flesh on his body was slowly falling off.

At this point, his Soul Martial Spirit was completely useless, he couldn't even let out a roar anymore.

And at this moment, Shi Yan entered into the [Gravitational Field], his fingers were like a spear, stabbing straight towards Mu Hui's neck.

“Puchi!”

Blood sprayed out of Mu Hui's neck like a fountain. His spine broke and he died tragically in the Field.

All the Profound Qi in Mu Hui's body flowed into the seven hundred and twenty meridians in Shi Yan's body.

Mu Hui was at the Third Sky of the Human Realm, but his Profound Qi was much richer than other warriors of the same realm.

The time it took Shi Yan to absorb all the power in his body was also a few dozen seconds more than with other people.

Soon, Mu Hui turned into a dry corpse and fell to the ground lifelessly.

Shi Yan's expression was calm, he closed his eyes to feel the Profound Qi that came from Mu Hui's body. Feeling the changes in his meridians, he slowly sat down on the ground.

There was a swelling pain coming from his meridians. The continuous intake of Profound Qi from many warriors made his meridians sting slightly. The different negative energies kept pounding in his body, agitating his soul.

However, this time the backlash in his body was not that fierce and crazy and he didn't know why.

As he calmed down and removed himself from the effects of [Rampage], Shi Yan realized his whole body was sore. But the overflowing negative energies did not overpower his mentality, nor made him fall into a state of slaughter and chaos.

Closing his eyes and calming himself down, he felt the purification of negative energies in his meridians. Shi Yan quietly tried to find the source.

A change in his soul!

After quite a while, Shi Yan's mind flickered and there was an answer in his mind.

During the fight with Mu Hui, his Soul Martial Spirit occasionally unleashed strange effects and repeatedly tried to pull Shi Yan's soul into an abyss of darkness, to become a captive under the power of his mind.

Whenever that happened, the negative energies in Shi Yan's body would suddenly burst out.

Those negative energies rushed to the depth of his soul like lightning and forcibly dragged his consciousness out of the dark abyss, letting him escape the shackles of Mu Hui's Soul Martial Spirit instantly.

Because of Mu Hui's Soul Martial Spirit, the negative energies broke out again and again, using the dark, evil, negative powers to attack Mu Hui's Soul Martial Spirit. During the clash, the negative energies that should have crumbled Shi Yan's soul were mostly used up fighting against Mu Hui's soul attacks.

The violent negative energies should have caused Shi Yan to fall into a state beyond redemption. Yet because of the existence of Mu Hui's Soul Martial Spirit, those negative energies became an aid to defeat Mu Hui's soul attacks.

That means, the Soul Martial Spirit used by Mu Hui counteracted the negative energies that could have destroyed Shi Yan's mind

and helped him recover himself.

These string of thoughts rapidly flashed through Shi Yan's mind, and he was correctly able to determine that the reason he didn't face the tremendous backlash from the negative energies was due to it acting as a constraint against Mu Hui's attacks from his Soul Martial Spirit.

Deep in his heart, there were hints of violent and murderous thoughts growing, but these thoughts were no longer that intense. Using his strong will, Shi Yan didn't fall into a state of frantic killing.

Thinking through these things, he relaxedly sat on the ground and silently started to circulate his Profound Qi.

After some time, the stinging in the meridians of his body suddenly started becoming intense!

Under the tearing pain, wisps of pure strange power slowly flowed out of his meridians, forming streams of warm currents in his body.

After transforming the Profound Qi of the many Human Realm warriors, the extraordinary power that resulted was quite impressive. Most of the power spread throughout Shi Yan's whole body and disappeared into his flesh, bones, meridians, and organs. Only a minority of the extraordinary power gathered in the Profound Qi in his dantain, making his Profound Qi much stronger and purer.

Shi Yan's heart was calm, he didn't first go and explore the change in his Profound Qi, but instead he sank his mind into the flesh, bones and meridians of his body.

He could clearly feel that the wisps of mysterious power formed into what was like a magical nutrient. And in a way he couldn't understand, it was slowly nourishing his whole body...

During this process, Shi Yan felt like he was bathing in a hot

spring. Every pore on his body relaxed and were all taking in that miraculous nutrient. His body was slowly silently changing...

Those mysterious powers moved around in his meridians, disappearing into his flesh and bones, taking root in his organs, and resting in his skull...

He digested the information deeply.

It was not the Petrification Martial Spirit!

Shi Yan's mind was crystal clear, he immediately realized the mysterious power that was nourishing his body was definitely not the Petrification Martial Spirit.

It was the Immortal Martial Spirit!

A realization popped into his mind and Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes. He quickly looked at his right arm.

The right arm that was slashed by the [Dark Spirit Knife] had a deep wound. But now, the flesh in the wound was slowly wiggling and healing at a visible speed!

The flesh and the meridians seemed as if they had a life of their own!

Under the watchful eyes of Shi Yan, the wound that was two centimeters deep gradually healed bit by bit, the flesh wreathed together and the cells reformed. The wound slowly closed up, forming into a scar, then finally disappeared altogether.

Ten minutes!

In a mere ten minutes, the two centimeter deep wound had been completely healed and not even a single trace was left.

The place at which his right arm was harmed was now as smooth as glass. There was not even a single line, nor a trace of blood! It was as if he was never hurt!

Shi Yan moved his arm and realized there wasn't even a single bit of pain. His right arm had no abnormalities whatsoever and felt

same as the left arm.

Shi Yan's eyes were bright, his face was irrepressibly ecstatic.

In a span of ten minutes, such a deep wound was healed to its original state! There was no pain and no discomfort, when did his Immortal Martial Spirit become so impressive?

Shi Yan clearly remembered that his recovery speed back then was definitely not this fast!

Back then, even if his wound had been healed, he would still feel some discomfort and some pain. He would need more than half a day for a wound that size to be completely healed.

This time, it was only ten minutes!

The Immortal Martial Spirit has reached a new stage! After a short while, Shi Yan quickly and keenly grasped the key point.

The magical upgrade of the Petrification Martial Spirit reminded him, and made him realize that after consuming so much Profound Qi, those extraordinary powers activated the Immortal Martial Spirit just like how it did with the Petrification Martial Spirit. And now the Immortal Martial Spirit had entered a new stage.

No wonder all those extraordinary powers mostly flowed into his flesh, meridians, bones and organs. Turns out this time it was the nourishing his Immortal Martial Spirit.

Now everything was clear.

Shi Yan's expression was full of joy. He seriously felt the changes in his body, then after a while he finally calmed down, and continued to sit there and circulate his Profound Qi.

The Profound Qi in his dantain had also absorbed a part of that extraordinary power. Now, under the shifting of his thoughts, the purer Profound Qi slowly flowed along all the meridians in his body.

Every time after completing a full cycle, the cluster of the most

pristine Profound Qi in his dantain became more refined.

Slowly, the refined body of Profound Qi turned into what was like a bright light ball. With every circulation cycle, the size of the light ball became smaller, but the power it contained grew even more!

Shi Yan was delighted again.

The change in the Profound Qi light ball was exactly a special sign of the breakthrough from the First Sky of the Human Realm to the Second or Third Sky!

Starting from the First Sky of the Human Realm, every time you reached a new Sky, the size of the Profound Qi light ball in the dantain would become smaller. But the Profound Qi within would grow stronger in power!

This was the process of refinement.

Only when you refined over and over again, would the impurities in the Profound Qi light ball be completely cleared. And only then would the Profound Qi become more and more pure, followed by the strengthening of the power it contains.

Realizing that this was the golden opportunity to break from the First Sky to the Second Sky of the Human Realm, Shi Yan didn't dare to hesitate. He concentrated with all of his will to circulate his Profound Qi.

He repeatedly circulated and refined his Profound Qi. The impurities in the Profound Qi lessened, making the Profound Qi become more and more pure...

In that strange space, there was no concept of time.

After who knows how long, the Profound Qi light ball shrunk from the size of a fist to the size of a walnut.

However, the concentration of the Profound Qi was thirty percent stronger than before!

Not only that, the purer Profound Qi was circulating in his body at a speed twice as fast as before!

Under his will, a wisp of Profound Qi flowed out of his fingertip. It was shining in dazzling white light, and there was a faint glistening tint in it, like some mysterious crystal.

Shi Yan had a joyous look on his face. He looked at the wisp of glistening Profound Qi, and the smile on his lips slowly widened...

Human Realm, Second Sky!

This time the warriors from the Dark World really fattened him up. Not only did his Immortal Martial Spirit enter into a new stage, he also reached a step further in his martial art realm, and straight up entered the Second Sky of the Human Realm.

“Lub-dub! Lub-dub, lub-dub!”

The Yin Pearls from the three meridians of Shen Que, Tian Que, and Yin Du suddenly started pulsing violently! The pulse rate of the Yin Pearls this time was much faster than usual! The summoning power from the heart of the stone statue also grew stronger!

Shi Yan's mind flicked, he couldn't help but gaze towards the place where the starlight gathered. He suddenly realized that the light from the starry sky seemed to become disordered. They wandered at that one area like fireflies, but didn't flow into the mysterious place anymore.

There was a change!

Shi Yan's brows furrowed. From the strange movements of the Yin Pearls in his chest and the unusual phenomenon with the stars, he could sense something bad was happening.

“Lub-dub! Lub-dub! Lub Dub, lub-dub!”

The pulsing of the Yin Pearls were becoming even more lively. As if they were urging him to quickly hurry to that area. There

seemed to be something anxiously waiting for him.

“Boom! Boom!”

A loud thundering sound, even when it was a thousand li away, still reached here resiliently from that place.

The three meridians of Shen Que, Tian Que, and Yin Du suddenly stung in pain. He felt as if someone was attacking his meridians, his body was indescribably weird.

Without hesitation, Shi Yan took in a deep breath, sprinted, and rushed to that place with his fastest speed.

Translated by: Amy

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

chapter from: <http://www.xianxiaworld.net/God-of-Slaughter/>

Chapter 99 - But, I Want to Kill You!

At the heart of the stone statue.

In a huge deep hole, star light was shining like fire worms.

The deep hole was not made of stone, but it contained a red crystal with a black spot moving on its surface like a star.

The heart-shaped red crystal was floating in the center of the hole and light from the edges of the hole was shooting into the crystal.

The red crystal was so clear and beautiful and had a mysterious power buried inside it. It was like staring at the starry sky when one looked at that crystal.

The heart-shaped crystal was as large as a fist, as if it was a big light spot in the hole, although it was sending out dazzling lights and overwhelming energy.

On the wall of the hole, dense bunches of dazzling lights flashed into the red crystal and covered the glittering crystal like a natural shield.

Off to the side of the deep hole, Beiming Ce looked indifferent, and the three warriors were staring at the crystal in surprise.

Up in the sky, the massive star river pattern projected its light onto the crystal and drifted by slowly.

Every warrior could feel the mysterious energy from that crystal, as if it had the ability to concentrate all the power from the stars, it was attracting every warrior.

No matter if it was Beiming Ce or the three Dark World warriors, they all stared at the crystal greedily.

“Why hasn’t the Young Master arrived? This mysterious crystal will be taken by Beiming Ce!” A Dark World warrior at the First Sky of the Disaster Realm said coldly, his face looked weird in the

light of the crystal.

The other two warriors of the Third Sky of the Human Realm were standing separately by his side, keeping watch for Mu Hui who could show up any second.

Beiming Ce stretched out his left hand again and blue flames flew out. The blue flames flew up into the sky and turned into a huge blue hand projecting onto the crystal.

“Boom!”

The light shield on the crystal produced a huge deafening sound and blocked Beiming Ce’s huge hand made from his Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit.

The huge blue hand shattered as soon as it touched the light shield.

Bunches of blue flames turned into small flames and shot above the light shield. Gradually, it turned back into a huge blue hand again.

Beiming Ce didn’t give up, as he triggered his Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit again.

“Boom!”

The light shield defended again, shattering Beiming Ce’s Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit and turning it back to blue flames.

Under Beiming Ce’s consistent attacks, the light shield was twisted and squeezed like a balloon, causing it to withdraw into the crystal a bit.

Beiming Ce’s Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit had an icy air which could freeze everything. Every time the huge hand touched the light shield the icy air would permeate into it.

After several times, the defensive power of the light shield became weaker.

A secret delight flashed in Beiming Ce’s eyes.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Under the three warriors’ eyes, Beiming Ce operated his Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit again and again to seize that crystal, permeating the icy air into the light shield to decrease its defensive power.

“This is bad!”

The Disaster Realm warrior changed his expression, as he said in a low voice, “Beiming Ce will get the crystal soon if he is not disturbed. Our Young Master will be too late! The Lord and Mistress of the Dark World would be angry if Beiming Ce got this crystal.”

“What should we do now?”

“Stop Beiming Ce!”

That guy ordered and operated his [Dark World Claw] right away.

Just as Beiming Ce’s blue hand tried to catch the crystal, that [Dark World Claw] showed up and was thrust into the blue hand.

“Chee chee chee!”

As soon as it touched the blue hand, the Claw slowed down and sent out dim blue light; it was suppressed by the polar ice flame.

Seeing the situation deteriorate, the other two warriors took action as well. [Dark World Thorns] flew toward Beiming Ce.

Beiming Ce’s face turned icy as he said coldly, “You finally can’t wait.”

Immediately, Beiming Ce vanished into the air.

The next moment, Beiming Ce appeared right beside them, and the polar ice flame turned into small bunches of flames and tried to wrap up the three warriors.

The three were terrified and soon worked together to fight

against Beiming Ce.

“[Teleport]!”

Beiming Ce yelled and vanished again.

“Bang!”

A warrior of the Third Sky of the Human Realm fell to the ground on his back.

Then, Beiming Ce showed a cold smile, “You guys want to compete with me?”

Bunches of blue flames crossed by the frozen man who died quickly.

“[Teleport]!”

Beiming Ce yelled again and appeared behind another warrior and patted his head.

“Paaa!”

That guy’s head exploded and he died instantly.

The last Disaster Realm warrior sat down in terror and tried to trigger more [Dark World Thorns].

Green needle-like thorns came out from his body and shot in all directions.

“You are a Disaster Realm warrior, but you are not favored by god for you don’t have a Martial Spirit.” Beiming Ce smirked.

An ice wall coagulated from polar ice flames appeared in front of him and the thorns were blocked.

The Disaster Realm warrior shifted his face. Without hesitation, he continued to trigger his thorns which shot in all directions.

He knew that Beiming Ce has the Teleport Martial Spirit, so he couldn’t shoot his thorns in only one direction, although it consumed much of his Profound Qi.

He wanted to buy more time for Mu Hui to arrive.

Unfortunately, he didn't know that Mu Hui had already been killed by Shi Yan.

Standing behind the ice wall, Beiming Ce was not in a hurry. He watched that warrior like a cat watching a mouse, "I would like to see how long you can last."

He couldn't endure for long.

Three minutes later, his thorns became less and less.

To trigger the [Dark World Thorns] cost a lot of Profound Qi.

Although the thorns were powerful, it consumed much Profound Qi.

Therefore, he realized that his Profound Qi was about to run out.

Why hadn't the Young Master arrived!

That man looked around quickly and became more and more panicked.

"You won't meet him." Knowing he was waiting for Mu Hui, Beiming Ce said indifferently, "Because you are going to die!"

Then Beiming Ce teleported again.

This time, his body turned into hard ice and approached the warrior through the thorns.

Under that guy's horrified eyes, the ice surrounding Beiming Ce's body expanded and he was covered by the polar ice flame.

"Kak kak!"

His body froze quickly and became an ice corpse. His terrified expression was also frozen on his face.

Beiming Ce raised his leg and kicked the man with a disappointed face.

"Paa!"

The frozen warrior was smashed into several pieces blocks of ice. His body was shattered.

Beiming Ce walked at a leisure pace towards the deep hole, and frowned as he looked at the floating crystal, "It's finally quiet."

"Taa taa!"

Just then, light steps came from afar.

Beiming Ce frowned with an annoyed face, "Too annoying! These people from the Dark World! It's like they won't even disappear."

Turning his head back, Beiming Ce looked to the direction where the footsteps came from.

"Hmm?"

Beiming Ce wondered, and a smirk climbed up his mouth, "Well, how surprising that this boy is still alive. The Dark World warriors are all crap."

Shi Yan stopped his steps and stared at Beiming Ce who looked gloomy.

"Shi Yan, it's really lucky for you to live till now." Beiming Ce beamed, "We are both from the Merchant Union, the five big families, so we could be friends in the future. Therefore, I don't want to kill you. Leave now, and I can pretend that I've never seen you here."

"You don't want to kill me?" Shi Yan beamed.

"No. Leave! Before I change my mind." Beiming Ce nodded.

"But, I want to kill you!" With a smile in his corner of his mouth, Shi Yan's eyes still showed coldness as he replied, "I have waited for too long."

Beiming was surprised at first. Then he pulled himself together and said, "So audacious. Never mind, it won't take much time to kill you. And the Shi family will lose hope if I kill you. My grandpa

will like it.”

As he was talking, Beiming walked slowly toward him without using his teleport.

“Tata! Tata!”

Just then, steps came from afar again.

Before long, Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan ran in this direction in worry.

As they arrived, they didn’t even look at Shi Yan, instead focusing on Beiming Ce. Mu Yu Die asked happily, “Young Master Beiming, you’ve arrived?”

Beiming Ce bowed a little and nodded to them with a smile, “Yeah, I’ve been here for quite a while. Also I have cleaned some trash from the Dark World to avoid troubles later.”

“Well, you haven’t cleaned up this trouble.” Shi Yan stated indifferently, appearing somewhat bored.

“You? Hehe, you are far from able to cause me trouble.” Beiming Ce scorned, “It’s no harder to kill you than it is to kill an ant.”

“I’m waiting!”

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto, Chancs and Vick

Translated by XianXiaWorld

Chapter 100 - Endure!

The big Chapter 100! And as a big thank you to our readers, look out for 5 bonus chapters coming soon.

After Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan arrived, they said hello to Beiming Ce first and then were attracted by the floating crystal in the deep hole.

They looked excited at the sight of the shining crystal and could clearly sense the mysterious energy from it.

Every warrior was able to tell that this crystal was extraordinary!

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan had suffered a lot to get here. They fought against the Dark World warriors, flaming stone men, Yin Sha and mud dragons for the big chance here.

As for Shi Yan, they just glanced at him once and turned away.

In arrogance, Beiming Ce walked over to Shi Yan step by step without using his Teleport Martial Spirit.

Shi Yan stood still, seemingly waiting for Beiming Ce to take action.

He secretly activated his Petrification Martial Spirit and his body turned dark brown.

Silently, Shi Yan blended his Yin power and Profound Qi, producing three [Gravitational Fields]. Controlled by his will, the three fields gradually separated.

He had seen Beiming Ce's Teleport Martial Spirit and he knew it was a fierce Martial Spirit through Han Zhong. The three [Gravitational Fields] were prepared as a counter for the Teleport Martial Spirit.

“Don't blame me since you seek your death yourself.” Beiming Ce raised his left hand as he got within ten meters of Shi Yan.

Blue Polar Ice Flame appeared in his palm.

As he threw out his arm, the blue flame became an Ice Bird which flew in the sky and left a graceful blue trail.

That Ice Bird was so vivid that even the feathers on its head could be clearly seen. It was breathing blue flames from its mouth on its ice cold face.

Beiming Ce looked on coldly with contempt in his eyes. For him, it wasn't too much effort to kill Shi Yan.

Just as the Ice Bird flew near him, a cold light flashed across Shi Yan's eyes.

A huge green light ball filled with dense Yin Qi suddenly shot out from his chest and it was intertwined with electricity and Yin Power.

“Boom!”

The green light ball struck the Ice Bird and gave off thunder.

Dazzling blue and green light exploded like fireworks while the green light ball and the Ice Bird cracked at the same time, turning into blue and green light spots.

“Hmm?”

Beiming Ce frowned in surprise and nodded slowly while gazing at Shi Yan, “Good. You really are something to kill Mo Zhan.”

After saying that, Beiming Ce's face turned rigid.

More and more Polar Ice Flame was produced by him; he looked like a bunch of Ice Flames, with blue flames gushing out of his body towards Shi Yan from all directions.

A biting cold came from those ice thorns as they approached.

Standing there, Shi Yan felt as if the space surrounding him was frozen solid.

In the cold air, his Profound Qi circulated slower. When the cold

air came into contact with his skin, his bones and veins were nearly frozen.

At that moment!

A warm stream suddenly flew out from his blood and bones; his body was defending against the cold automatically.

The Immortal Martial Spirit!

Shi Yan's eyes lit up as he was secretly delighted.

The warm stream went through his whole body like lightning. The next moment, he had gotten rid of the coldness.

That happened in just a minute and the thousands of ice thorns were merely an inch away from him.

“Yin Wall!”

A green shield appeared beside him which was made of Yin Power, dazzling and horrifying.

The Yin Wall was like a huge upside down bowl which protected him. The Yin Wall was so thin and transparent that Shi Yan could see things ten meters away clearly.

Although the [Black Formula] was a mere Mortal Level Martial Skill, it could absorb Yin Qi and turn it into Yin Swirls and Yin Pearls.

The [Black Formula] was a Martial Skill which utilized Yin Qi. With the help of the Yin Swirls and Yin Pearls, Shi Yan could make Yin Qi into all sorts of defensive weapons. Once the Yin Pearls were alive, he would have endless Yin Qi.

The Yin Wall was refined from Yin Qi. Just as triggering the [Dark Light Shield], once getting hang of the [Black Formula], Shi Yan found it could produce all sorts of defensive methods.

The [Black Formula] seemed to bring him endless surprises.

“Booo! Boooo!”

The thorns thrust towards him and landed on the dazzling green Yin Wall and their power was absorbed in an instant.

Beiming Ce's Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit couldn't freeze the Yin Wall, let alone damage Shi Yan who was under it!

Shi Yan hadn't even triggered his negative energy.

The Yin Wall triggered by Yin Pearls seemed to control the Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit. Nonetheless, he still felt that the Yin Qi light spots were decreasing quickly.

The power of the [Black Formula] could only be strengthened by Yin Qi.

The Yin Power used for his Yin Wall could be consumed and not produced. Without Yin Qi, the Yin Power from the Yin Pearls wouldn't increase.

But this time, Shi Yan had absorbed all the Yin Qi in the Yin Field and formed six Yin Pearls inside himself, which would let him play with Beiming Ce for a long time!

Icy thorns thrust on the green wall and the cold air permeated into it, but this was soon digested by the Yin Power within.

Thus their battle was a deadlock from the very beginning.

Beiming Ce couldn't believe that Shi Yan's green wall could bear the coldness from his Polar Ice Flame. To him, Shi Yan could only endure for a few seconds.

He didn't know that Shi Yan had advanced to the Second Sky of the Human Realm.

Thus, he kept producing more polar ice, forming ice thorns and shooting them towards Shi Yan's green shield.

Shi Yan had absorbed so much Yin Qi which had formed six powerful Yin Pearls. He was not afraid of Beiming Ce at all, even though he was at the Disaster Realm.

Furthermore, Shi Yan hadn't used his negative energy yet!

Therefore, he was very willing to continue the battle with Beiming Ce.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan watched the two curiously.

The two girls knew how capable Beiming Ce was.

Disaster Realm! Twin Martial Spirit! Training in the most precious Martial Skill of the Beiming family; Beiming Ce was at the top of the world!

Though at the First Sky of the Disaster Realm, Beiming Ce could even win against someone of the Second Sky! He would even have a shot against a Third Sky warrior!

However, while battling with this boy from the Shi family, Beiming Ce's Polar Ice Flame Martial Spirit couldn't even break his barrier!

That confused Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan.

Though Shi Yan had made great impression on the two girls in the Martial Competition in the God Stone Square, he was merely a warrior at the Third Sky of the Nascent Realm.

It had only been two months after the Martial Competition, Shi Yan could reach the First Sky of the Human Realm if he was talented.

How could a Human Realm, First Sky warrior survive against Beiming Ce?

Seeing Shi Yan unmoved under Beiming Ce's attacks, the two girls were quite surprised and looked at Shi Yan with confusion in their eyes.

Five minutes! Ten minutes! Half an hour!

After half an hour, the Yin Wall which encircled Shi Yan still could not be broken.

Shi Yan looked indifferent but patient, happy to continue the fight.

Beiming Ce couldn't stand it anymore.

After pondering for a while, Beiming Ce withdrew his Polar Ice Flame and stopped his attack. He said coldly, "I can't be bothered wasting any more time with you."

A strange, red and blue sword was slowly taken out by Beiming Ce.

"Sky Cracking Sword!"

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan took a deep breath at the same time and looked at Shi Yan in pity, assuming that Shi Yan was about to die for sure.

The Sky Cracking Sword was a Spirit Level weapon which previously belonged to Beiming Shang. Beiming Shang entered the earth's core where there were thousands of fire hills and refined it with earth fire and polar ice for three years.

The Sky Cracking Sword had two colors on it. One half was red and the other half blue.

With the help of the Sky Cracking Sword, Beiming Ce made his name in Tianyun City and never had an adversary. The Sky Cracking Sword was sharp, unbreakable and had the power of earth fire and polar ice.

Warriors who were touched by the Sky Cracking Sword would first freeze then burn.

Mu Yu Die and Di Yalan knew how vicious this Sky Cracking Sword was.

Therefore, once the Sky Cracking Sword was taken out, the two girls assumed Shi Yan was going to die for sure.

[Teleport]!

Beiming Ce yelled and appeared in front of Shi Yan with the Sky Cracking Sword. He thrust it in the air and it gave out red and blue light.

“Chee!”

The Yin Wall was cut into two pieces by the Sky Cracking Sword.

Shi Yan was shocked! He immediately triggered his power and shuttled behind the [Gravitational Field].

Meanwhile, the other two [Gravitational Fields] flew over suddenly, combining with the first one.

The space Shi Yan around was twisted a little, seeming to be squeezed and about to collapse.

Standing in the invisible house-like [Gravitational Field], Shi Yan calmed down, though his eyes grew more vicious while staring at Beiming Ce.

Shi Yan was waiting for Beiming Ce to trigger his Teleport Martial Spirit again, for him to enter the [Gravitational Field]!

Beiming Ce turned out to not disappoint him, as he triggered his Teleport Martial Spirit another time!

Translated by: Qian

Edited by: Moto and Vick

chapter from: <http://www.xianxiaworld.net/God-of-Slaughter/>

Table of Contents

[God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1 - Reborn In Another World](#)

[Chapter 2 - The Body Remodelled](#)

[Chapter 3 - First encounter](#)

[Chapter 4 - Guinea Pig](#)

[Chapter 5 - Lightning Martial Spirit](#)

[Chapter 6 - Immortal Martial Spirit](#)

[Chapter 7 - The Second Sky](#)

[Chapter 8 - The Jade Blade Spider](#)

[Chapter 9 - The Escape](#)

[Chapter 10 - Drag Her Down](#)

[Chapter 11 - Strike Back](#)

[Chapter 12 - The Mysterious Martial Skill in the Blood Vein Ring](#)

[Chapter 13 - Surprise Kill](#)

[Chapter 14 - Music from the Heaven](#)

[Chapter 15 - Promoting to Nascent-Level Warrior](#)

[Chapter 16 - Treasure](#)

[Chapter 17 - Ten Times of Gravity](#)

[Chapter 18 - Being pursued](#)

[Chapter 19 - The Martial Spirit of Petrification](#)

[Chapter 20 - Steel Himself](#)

[Chapter 21 - Pervert](#)

[Chapter 22 - Shi Family](#)

[Chapter 23 - The Tush Mercenary Union](#)

[Chapter 24 - Trouble](#)

[Chapter 25 - Ghost](#)

[Chapter 26 - The Wager](#)

[Chapter 27 - Three Parties Meeted](#)

[Chapter 28 - The Blast](#)

[Chapter 29 - Eating Human Flesh](#)

[Chapter 30 - Inside the Tree](#)

[Chapter 31 - Blue Magic Flames](#)

[Chapter 32 - The Silver Thunder Wolf](#)

[Chapter 33 - Martial Spirit of Music](#)
[Chapter 34 - Mysterious Martial Spirit](#)
[Chapter 35 - Block the Cave](#)
[Chapter 36 - Bang!](#)
[Chapter 37 - The Killing](#)
[Chapter 38 - Spirit Level Martial Skills](#)
[Chapter 39 - Three types of Flames](#)
[Chapter 40 - Sharing the Treasure](#)
[Chapter 41 - The Third Sky of Nascent Level](#)
[Chapter 42 - Departure](#)
[Chapter 43 - Beiming Family](#)
[Chapter 44 - Silent Town](#)
[Chapter 45 - The Change](#)
[Chapter 46 - A Glance](#)
[Chapter 47 - Tianyun City](#)
[Chapter 48 - The Test](#)
[Chapter 49 - The Sky Gate and the God Area](#)
[Chapter 50 - A Cut](#)
[Chapter 51 - The Martial Spirit Palace](#)
[Chapter 52 - The Mysterious Area](#)
[Chapter 53 - Visitors from the Zuo Family](#)
[Chapter 54 - Zuo Shi](#)
[Chapter 55 - The Weirdo](#)
[Chapter 56 - Basalt Scriptures and the Dragon Turtle Armor](#)
[Chapter 57 - In My Hands!](#)
[Chapter 58 - The Plot](#)
[Chapter 59 - The Situation Surges](#)
[Chapter 60 - The Endless Sea](#)
[Chapter 61 - Leaders of the Third Generation](#)
[Chapter 62 - Unrecognized](#)
[Chapter 63 - The Martial Competition](#)
[Chapter 64 - The Medicine King, Mu Xun](#)
[Chapter 65 - Undercurrent](#)
[Chapter 66 - Fearless](#)
[Chapter 67 - The Battle Among the Families](#)
[Chapter 68 - A Thorough Defeat](#)
[Chapter 69 - Believe in Me!](#)
[Chapter 70 - The Focus of Attention](#)
[Chapter 71 - Take Advantage of Their Weakness!!](#)

[Chapter 72 - Each With Their Own Schemes](#)
[Chapter 73 - The Change in the Fallen God Stone](#)
[Chapter 74 - Taken Care Of!](#)
[Chapter 75 - A Kiss](#)
[Chapter 76 - Exquisite Figure](#)
[Chapter 77 - Pounding Energy](#)
[Chapter 78 - Inheritance of the War Devil](#)
[Chapter 79 - The Seal of Life and Death](#)
[Chapter 80 - Shadowing](#)
[Chapter 81 - Obsession](#)
[Chapter 82 - A Step Further](#)
[Chapter 83 - Meeting Face to Face](#)
[Chapter 84 - The Dead Swamp](#)
[Chapter 85 - A Co-Master](#)
[Chapter 86 - The Yin Field](#)
[Chapter 87 - Black Formula](#)
[Chapter 88 - Strange Scene](#)
[Chapter 89 - Forming the Yin Pearls](#)
[Chapter 90 - The Sky Changes](#)
[Chapter 91 - Dividing the Plunder](#)
[Chapter 92 - The Gate of Heaven Appears](#)
[Chapter 93 - The God Search Skill](#)
[Chapter 94 - I'll Go!](#)
[Chapter 95 - Desperate Fight](#)
[Chapter 96 - Kill All the Way!](#)
[Chapter 97 - Grind!](#)
[Chapter 98 - Fattened Up](#)
[Chapter 99 - But, I Want to Kill You!](#)
[Chapter 100 - Endure!](#)